

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08173194 9



SET 13  
General  
Index

10  
p. 545-7.

IAE







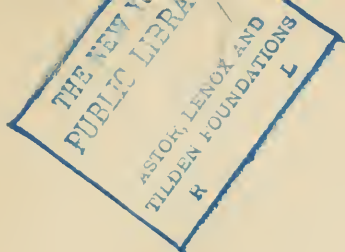


Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2008 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation

GENERAL INDEX  
TO  
BANCROFT'S HISTORY  
OF THE  
UNITED STATES.

(0-2)3





## GENERAL INDEX.

### A.

Abenaki chief pretends to prophetic inspiration, v. 112.

Abenakis of Maine desire missionaries, i. 27, iii. 135; labors of Druillettes among them, 136; of other Jesuits, 178; their inroads upon the English settlements, 181; cruelties practised by them, 187, 212; locality where found, 238; resist the encroachments of the English on their lands, 333; attack the settlements in Maine, 335; Rakes, their missionary, slain, 335; iv. 194, 210, 260.

Abercrombie, General James, sails for New York, iv. 235; arrives at Albany, 236; refuses promotion to provincial officers, 236; quarters his soldiers in private houses, and neglects his duties, 236; his dilatory proceedings, 236; made commander-in-chief, 294; his shameful incapacity at Ticonderoga, 300-304; his defeat, 303; is recalled, 306.

Abercrombie, James, lieutenant-colonel, mortally wounded on Bunker Hill, viii. 26.

Abingdon, Earl of, stigmatizes the war with America, ix. 324.

Aborigines of Virginia, their numbers, i. 180; are taught the use of fire-arms, 181; their treachery, 182; massacre the whites, 182.

— of America, absurd tales respecting, iii. 236; their general character similar, 237; their languages, 237, *et seq.*; estimated population, 253; aboriginal languages (see *Languages*); manners and customs, 266; political institutions, 275; religion, 285; natural endowments, 300; origin, 306.

— of Massachusetts, labors of Eliot among them, ii. 95.

Acadia, or Nova Scotia, its first settlement, i. 26; by charter includes all New England, 26; granted to Sir William Alexander, 332; restored to France, 335; conquered by Cromwell, 445; restored to France, ii. 70; conquered by English, iii. 184; surrenders to the French arms, 186; final conquest of Acadia, 218; secured to England by treaty, 234; what were its limits, 234; its boundaries, iv. 30; part of it claimed by the French, 43; French colonies in, 44; removal of its inhabitants

proposed, 44; emigrants from England, 45; French neutrals there, 46; violent proceedings of a French officer, 67, *et seq.*; England and France contend for it, 182, *et seq.*; brief history of Acadia, 193; social condition of its people, 194; the French neutrals virtuous and contented, 195; their numbers, 195; haughtiness of the British officers, 196; oppression of the people, 196, 197; disaffection to British rule, 196; disarming of the people. 197; their removal determined upon, 199; and effected, 202, *et seq.*; extreme cruelty of the proceeding, 203; sufferings of the people, 203-206; Belcher, chief justice, approves it, 201; Winslow, of Boston, assists in the affair, 202.

Acadians in Louisiana, v. 242.

Accomac Indians, iii. 239.

Aceland's speech in the house of commons, viii. 161.

Aekland, Major, in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 415; is wounded, 416.

"Acteon," British frigate, in the attack on Charleston, viii. 406; runs aground, 410; is burned, 411.

Acton, in Massachusetts, news of the approach of a British force reaches it, vii. 290; the minute men answer the call to arms, 290, 298, 299; they take part in the battle of Concord, 302, 303; and in the pursuit of the enemy, 302, 303.

Adair, James, his speech in the House of Commons against the war with America, viii. 162.

Adame, Abigail, wife of John Adams, her patriotic anticipation, vii. 137; her afflicted condition, viii. 135; her brave letter to her husband on reading the king's savage proclamation, 135, 136.

Adams, Hannah, of Cambridge, her sufferings from British soldiers, vii. 308.

Adams, John, teacher of the town school at Worcester, his musings at twenty, iv. 215; wishes to break off all connection with Great Britain, 269; his reasonings against the stamp act, and against oppressive government, v. 323-326, 376; leads the town of Braintree in its utterance against courts of admiralty, 329; scorns the service of the king, vi. 266; is counsel for

Captain Preston and the soldiers, 350, 373; retires from the service of the people, 403; is active in the cause of liberty, 453, 461; negatived by Gage as a councillor, vii. 48; chosen a delegate to the congress of 1774, 64; enters public life in earnest, 65; chosen moderator of a meeting in Faneuil Hall, 64, 65; a member of the first continental congress, 127; he persuades this body to accept the British colonial system, 149; is anxious to see New England prepared for resistance, 151; his *Novanglus*, 232-239; a member of the second continental congress, 353; nominates Washington as commander-in-chief, 390; measures advised by him in congress in July, 1775, viii. 37; his indignation at apathy of congress, 56; Dickinson treats him with incivility, 109; advocates the beginning of an American navy, 114; favors independence and a form of government directly derived from the people, 141; advises General Lee to go to New York, 277; his great confidence in Lee, 281; resumes his seat in congress, 308; his character, 308; the Martin Luther of the American revolution, 311; the ablest debater in congress, 312; in favor of enlisting men for the war, 317; moves that the people institute governments, 367; reports a preamble to this resolution, 367; his views on government, 370; supports the veto power, 370; points out the difference between ancient and modern republics, 371; necessity of two branches in the legislature, 371; the education of the people of vital importance, 372; seconds the resolution for independence, 389; one of the committee to prepare a declaration of independence, 392; one of the committee on treaties with foreign powers, 393; one of the board of war, 393; invokes the blessing of heaven upon the new-born republic, 448; his great speech in favor of a declaration of independence, 451; reply of Dickinson, 452, *et seq.*; congress declares the united colonies free and independent states, 459; his state of mind at the close of the day, 459; his triumphant joy, 460; ix. 40, 51; his speech on representation, 53, 54; his imperfect knowledge of war, 78; his relations with Lee and Gates, 78; his distrust of Washington, 78; his contempt for Sullivan, 110; is chosen one of a committee to meet Lord Howe, 112; the interview, 116; member of the committee on spies, 135; goes home when most wanted in congress, 173, 174; objects to power conferred on Washington, 255; argues for two branches in the legislature, 265, 266; his incautious language concerning Washington, 391; unreasonably blames Washington, 402; his jealousy of Washington, 431; votes for limiting his powers, 433; appointed commissioner to France, 467; minister to negotiate a peace, x. 221, 261, 262; his views on the armed neutrality, 281; arrives in Paris, 442; offends Vergennes by his republican sentiments,

443; Vergennes complains of him, 452; sees the spirit of liberty spreading in Europe, 453; Adams in Holland, 527; solicits the United Provinces, separately, to acknowledge the independence of the revolted British colonies and succeeds, 527; comes to Paris to assist Franklin, 584; secures to the United States their northern boundary, 585; obtains further concessions, 585; his firm conduct respecting the fisheries, 590.

Adams, Samuel, of Massachusetts, his early history, v. 194; his religious character, 194, 195; his political creed, 195; his poverty and public spirit, 195, 196; instructions of Boston to its representatives written by him, 197; these gave the keynote to the revolution, 198; disapproves violent proceedings, 313; guides the utterances of Boston, 329; elected its representative, 331; author of the reply of the legislature to Governor Bernard, 349; his opposition to the speeches of Governor Bernard, vi. 11; his advice to De Berdt, the province agent in England, 42; his letter to Gadsden, of South Carolina, condemning the billeting act, 42; his ruling passion — the preservation of the distinctive character of New England, 118; author of a petition from the province to the king, 123; author of a circular letter addressed by the province to the other colonies, 125; advises the repeal of the revenue acts, 151; his enthusiasm, 165; he aims at independence, 192, 253; Hutchinson wishes him "taken off," 193; his unsullied purity admitted by his enemies, 193; elected to a convention of the province, 198; unawed by threats of being "taken off" and sent to England for trial, continues his efforts in the cause of liberty, 247, 253; Hutchinson collects evidence against him, 251; Adams exhibits the weakness of England and the strength of America, 267; representative in the general court, 284; he writes Boston's "Appeal to the World," 312; his memorable conduct in the proceedings which followed the Boston massacre, 341, *et seq.*; overawes Governor Hutchinson, 344, 345; meditates on the last appeal, 407; again elected representative of Boston, 419; proposes committees of correspondence, 425, *et seq.*; the plan formed by him and by none other, 428, *note*; the end aimed at, 429; prepares a statement of the rights of the colonies, 431; is consulted by Rhode Island, 441; his earnest reply, 441, 443; his prophetic declaration, 443; his masterly argument against the supremacy of parliament, 448; urges a plan of union between the colonies, 466; his letter to Hawley, 467, 468; his strong will sways the feebler politicians and the entire province, 469; Franklin concurs with him, 469; his share in the affair of the Boston tea party, 473, *et seq.*; head of Boston committee, 482; ultimatum of America as expressed by him, 508, 509;

- the British ministry select him for sacrifice as the chief of revolution, 523; highly esteemed in America and in England, 524; presides at a meeting at Faneuil Hall, vii. 35, 37; makes a touching appeal to the other colonies, 37; proscribed by the British ministry, 38; inculcates patience, 39; suppresses the people's murmurs, 47; contrasted with George III., 59; his patriotic utterances, 59, 60; proposes immediate assembling of a continental Congress, 64; chosen a delegate to this Congress, 64; Hutchinson's representation of him to the king, 72; a member of the first continental Congress, 127; nominates Jacob Duché for chaplain, 131; character as given by the traitor Galloway, 134; his great influence in Congress, 134; urges his friends to study the art of war and to persist in the struggle for liberty, 151; his piety, 251, 252; Gage sends a force to seize him at Lexington, 288; he escapes to Woburn, 292; his exultation at the progress of the strife, 296; a member of the second continental Congress, 353; he seconds the nomination of Washington as commander-in-chief, 390; is proscribed by Gage, 391; delegate in Congress from Massachusetts, viii. 233; denounces George III. as a tyrant, 242; his zealous efforts for independence, 242, 243; speaks on the subject of short enlistments, 316; supports John Adams in the struggle for entire separation from Britain, 368, 369; one of the committee for drawing up articles of confederation, 392; is unwilling to guarantee the eventual payment of the continental currency, ix. 173; one of a committee on terms of peace, 213; his decision of character, 40, 41; signs the declaration of independence, 59; his indomitable resolution, 214, 237; wishes to place Gates in command of the northern army, 336; his impatience, 255, 343, 353; votes for limiting Washington's powers, 433.
- Addison in Vermont, occupied by the French, iii. 370.
- Administration, English, (see *Ministry*).
- Administration of Henry Pelham, iv. 3-126; of the Duke of Newcastle, 127-250; England without a ministry, 251-271; first administration of William Pitt, 248-250; his second administration, 272-410; administration of the Earl of Egremont, 412-438; of the Earl of Bute, 438-462, v. 3-96; the triumvirate ministry, v. 97-142; ministry of George Grenville, 146-300; of the Marquis of Rockingham, v. 301-vi. 16; third administration of Pitt, 17-61.
- Admiralty, Courts of, for America, v. 161.
- court in Boston, hateful to Americans, and why, iv. 420.
- courts established in the colonies, vi. 167, 450; complained of as a grievance, 433.
- Admiralty, court instituted by Massachusetts, viii. 136.
- African slave-trade (see *Slaves and Slavery*), how conducted, iii. 402; sources of supply, 403.
- Agnew, General, in the marauding expedition to Danbury, ix. 346; at Brandywine, 399.
- Aguesseau, chancellor of France, iii. 357.
- Aiguillon, Duchess d', endows a hospital at Quebec, iii. 126.
- Aix la Chapelle, congress of, unsatisfactory results, iii. 466.
- Alabama traversed by De Soto, i. 48; occupied by the French, iii. 205, 348, 352, 365.
- Alatamaha, an English fort on its banks, iii. 331.
- Albania, East New Jer-sey so called, ii. 317.
- Albany first visited by white men, ii. 269; fort Nassau built in 1615, 276; fort Orange in 1623, 279, 281; surrendered to the English, 315; whence the name, 315; Milborne takes possession of it, iii. 53.
- Congress at, iv. 28, 29; congress of commissioners there in 1754, iv. 121; its purpose, 121, 145; a plan of union of all the colonies proposed, 123; its details, 124; the plan not ratified by the colonies, 125; not accepted by England, 126.
- Albemarle, Duke of (see *Monk, George*).
- Albemarle, part of Carolina, ii. 152, 156, 158.
- Albemarle county in Virginia, the residence of Thomas Jefferson, vii. 107, 385; its people deny the power of parliament to make laws for America, 107.
- "Alcide" and "Lys" captured by an English fleet, iv. 183.
- Alexander, James, of New York, favors a tax on the colonies, iv. 116, 179.
- Alexander, Sir William, obtains a patent of Acadia or Nova Scotia, i. 332; a new patent, 333.
- Alexander, William Earl of Stirling (see *Stirling, Earl of*).
- Algonquins, a party of, massacred by the Dutch, ii. 289, 290; their revenge, 290, 383; Jesuit missions among them, iii. 127, 128, 129, 132, 145, 146, 155; at peace with the French, 135, 153, 177; their language and race widely diffused, 237; found in Carolina, 239; and in Texas, 238; on Lake Superior, 242; estimated population, 253.
- Alleghanies, effects of the conflicts at Lexington and Concord beyond them, vii. 312.
- Alleghany Mountains, all the territory beyond claimed by Spain, x. 191, 210; the claim disconcerted, 203.
- Allegiance, question of, whether due to the United States or to a particular state, ix. 253, 254.
- Allen, Andrew, had been a member of congress, submits to the king, ix. 199.
- Allen, Ethan, of Bennington, Vermont, engages the support of the Green Mountain Boys in the cause of liberty, vii. 271 *a*; he leads the successful expedition against Ticonderoga, 339, 340; his scheme to capture St. John's in Canada, 364; raises a corps of Canadians, viii. 183; his rashness 183; attempts to surprise Montreal, 183; is attacked by a superior force and obliged



- to surrender, 184; receives severe treatment, and is sent to England, 184. \*
- Allen, James, pastor of first church in Boston, deficient in patriotism, ii. 432.
- Allen, Rev. Moses, an American chaplain, drowned, ix. 286
- Allen, Samuel, purchases Mason's claim on New Hampshire, iii. 82.
- Allen, William, of Philadelphia, resigns his commission in the army, ix. 171.
- Alliance with France, 117; brings the American question into Europe, x. 35.
- "Alliance" frigate, 271.
- Alliances, new, in Europe, iv. 278.
- Allerton, Isaac, obtains a patent for the Plymouth Pilgrims, i. 320.
- Alloué, Claude, his mission to the Indians on Lake Superior, iii. 149, 150; his discoveries in the regions adjacent, 151; visits the Kickapoos and Miamis, 155, 156; missionary in the region of Illinois, 195.
- Amedas, Philip, his voyage for Raleigh to North Carolina, i. 92.
- America, British dominion in, v. 59; extent of this dominion in 1763, after the peace of Paris, 78; America to be brought more fully under British rule, 79, *et seq.*; taxation by parliament proposed, 87, 88; loyalty of America, 90, 223; inquiries of Lord Egremont as to the best mode of taxing America, 107, 108, *note*; British possessions beyond the Alleghanies, 110; taxation of America eagerly pursued by the treasury board, 136; stamp tax proposed, 137 (see *Taxation and Stamp Act*); feudal system proposed, 162; all the territory beyond the Alleghanies shut by proclamation against the emigrant, 163; but in vain, 165; Grenville's affected tenderness towards America, 183; the French ministry foresee the independence of America, 193; alarm of the colonies at the proposed stamp act, 194, *et seq.*; views of Otis, 201-205; of Hutchinson, 206-209; the ministry continue their oppressive measures, 211, 214; protest of New York, 215; of Rhode Island and Pennsylvania, 217-220; Franklin sent to England to remonstrate, 220; American loyalists urge the ministry to further oppressions, 224, *et seq.*; the ministry confident of their power over America, 229; the stamp act introduced into parliament, 236; speeches for and against it, 236-246; the stamp act passed, 247; America at the feet of England, 265; danger to the liberties of mankind, 269; America slow to anger, 270; voice of New York, of Massachusetts, and other colonies, 270, *et seq.*; patriotic resolutions of Virginia, 275, 276; an American congress proposed, 279; opinions of the American people, 285, *et seq.*; a wide-spread dissatisfaction, 287-290; domestic manufactures encouraged, 288; associated action against the stamp act, 291; the people resolve not to submit to it, 309, *et seq.*, 323, *et seq.*; towns and legislatures publish declarations of rights, 328; plan of a congress accepted in several colonies, 328, 329; the first American congress meets, 334; its proceedings, 335, 342-346; America annuls the stamp act, 347, *et seq.*, 352-361; union of the colonies, 346; no stamp officer remains, 351; the people adhere to the action of congress, 358; plan for a permanent union, 360; America is sustained by the spirit of liberty in England, 364-366; progress of resistance, 374, *et seq.*; union resolved on, 377, 378; America defended in parliament by the Great Commoner, 383-395; parliament affirm their right to tax America, 417; nothing but the repeal of the stamp act will satisfy America, 427; Franklin's examination before the House of Commons, 428, *et seq.*; the act repealed, 436; its joy transient, vi. 3, 5; approach to a wholesale denial of the power of the British parliament over it, 6; its great resources reported to Choiseul, 26; false representations made in England, 31; discontent and dissatisfaction, 31; troubles in North Carolina, 34, *et seq.*; kind spirit of Lord Shelburne towards the colonies, 39, 43; his conciliatory policy, 53-55; the king determined to enforce obedience, 56; time from which Hutchinson dates the revolt of the colonies, 41; America loses friends in England, 64; enumeration of the points in dispute between England and her colonies, 69-72; Americans desire only the rights of Englishmen, 73; conciliation still possible in 1767, 69-73; rash and fatal measures proposed and carried by Charles Townshend, 76, *et seq.*; independence predicted, 95; the ministry intend to annul the colony charters, 111, 116; America resists, but passively, 121, *et seq.*, 129; prosperity of America, 132; love to the mother country, 133; gross misrepresentations of American affairs, 134; importunities of Bernard and others for troops, 135, 136, 143; England cannot conquer America, 140; increased oppression, 144; the French statesmen watch with interest the progress of the controversy, 169; disturbances at Boston, 155, *et seq.*; European philosophy and French policy assist American emancipation, 170; prime minister of France seeks information on American affairs, 180; Spain hopes that England will subdue America, 182; England is determined to tread America under foot, 207, 211, 216; the republic of New Orleans, 219; its overthrow, 233, *et seq.*; every American assembly denies the right of parliament to tax them, 234; American petitions rejected by the king, 234, 236; firmness of the patriots, 266; a tendency to conciliation, 317; the issue with England confined to the single question of a duty on tea, 318; the Boston massacre (see *Boston*); proposals for sending American patriots to England for trial and punishment, 246, 250, 258; French statesmen foresee the independence of America, 96, 244, 255; the claims of Eng-

land denied everywhere, 247, 272; even in the English parliament, 257; the revenue acts repealed, except the duty on tea, 276; Virginia accords with Massachusetts, 280; the spirit of republicanism spreads in the East and in the West, 283, *et seq.*; non-importation of British goods (see *Non-importation*), the country placed under military power, 367, *et seq.*; England will not abolish the slave-trade, 413; committees of correspondence, 428, *et seq.*; rights claimed by America, 432; grievances endured from England, 432, 433; America joins issue with king and parliament, 433; discovery of the secret letters written by Hutchinson and Oliver, 435; they are sent to Massachusetts and published, 436, 461; traitors unmasked, 461, 462; the consequences, 463; the people unite against the oppressive measures of Great Britain, 437, *et seq.*, 446, *et seq.*; the Boston tea-party, 472-487; the ultimatum of America, 508, 509; stringent measures adopted by parliament for curbing the spirit of liberty in America, 511-527; in 1774 instinct with the spirit of freedom, vii. 22; determination of the king and people to coerce it, 24; the colonies prepare for resistance, 42, 55; a general congress resolved on, and delegates chosen by Massachusetts, 64; by Rh-de Island, 65; by Maryland, 66; by New York, 78, 83; by South Carolina, 81; by Pennsylvania, 82, 83; by New Jersey, 83; by New Hampshire, 83; by Virginia, 84, 85; the question between America and Great Britain changed by the regulating act, 97; the savages to be let loose upon the Americans, 117, 118; the first American general congress, 127; population of English America, 128; congress will vote by colonies, 130; Franklin, in England, states what terms will satisfy America, 180; Lord Chatham thinks the terms reasonable and proper, 191, 192; but they are rejected by the British cabinet, 193; all commerce with America interdicted, 193; Chatham's eulogy on the American people, 197, 198; firm union of the continent, 205; the ministry think to subdue America by fear, 222; they give orders to Gage to call out the savages, and to excite a servile insurrection, 222; Americans to be excluded from the Newfoundland fisheries, 240; additional forces to be sent to America, 244; scurrilous language of Dr. Johnson towards the Americans, 259; Sandwich accuses the Americans of cowardice, 262; Burke's noble eulogium on them, 266, 267; city of London ineffectually intercedes for America, 282; conflicts at Lexington and Concord, 291, *et seq.*; the alarm spreads over the country, 311, 312; meeting of the second continental congress, 353; difficulties in its way, 354; too early to declare independence, 354; American law the growth of necessity, 354; a heterogeneous population, 355; differences of opinion, 355; a deeply seated love of the mother country, 356;

the revolution emanated from the people, 361-373; the "continental army," 391; the "twelve united colonies," 391; appointment of Washington as commander-in-chief, 393; Bunker Hill battle ensures the union and the final triumph of America, 435; sympathy of Ireland for, viii. 54; the bond between America and England hard to break, 56; congress hopes to avert war, 57; its hesitation, 57 (see *Continental Congress*); condition of the New England colonies, 60, *et seq.*; of the Middle and southern colonies, 71, *et seq.*; troops to be procured from continental Europe to subdue America, 100, 101, 107, 147, *et seq.*; France sends an emissary to America, 103, 104; American affairs discussed at the court of Catherine II., 104; question at issue between Britain and America, 116-129 (see *Question at Issue*); British writers have not found it easy to treat impartially of America, 121; the reason why, 121; Americans can more easily be impartial, and why, 121, 122; the Americans entered most reluctantly on a war with Britain, 122; the king's irrevocable proclamation against Americans and their friends in England, 132; feelings excited by it in America, 134, *et seq.*; energetic measures for defence, 142; the king is disappointed in his effort to obtain Russian troops to be employed in America, 150-156; the war to be transferred to New York and the southern colonies, 158; the king's speech, at the opening of parliament, declaring the Americans rebels, 160; these sentiments approved by the two houses, 161-163; the Irish parliament votes a supply of troops, 170; Lord North's bill for prohibiting the whole commerce of all the colonies, 170; this atrocious bill passes parliament, 171; the king prefers to renounce the colonies rather than give up the point at issue, 171; opinions of England's most distinguished philosophers and writers on this point, 172-175; the king and his insulting policy the cause of American independence, 175; invasion of Canada, 182, *et seq.* (see *Montgomery*); the people continually verge towards independence, 247, 248; England tries to rally her partisans in America, 272, 283, *et seq.*; the effort fails, 287, 288; debate on opening the ports, 313, 314, 320; the measure passed, 323; the country divided into military departments, 317; a virtual declaration of independence is issued by throwing open the commerce of the country to the whole world, 323; report of Bonvouloir respecting America, 330; considerations founded on it submitted by Vergennes to the king of France 331, *et seq.*; new flag of the navy, 345, 346; the question of independence, 350-356; virtually decided, 367, *et seq.*, 376, *et seq.*; the final decision, 384-393, 434, *et seq.*; the united colonies declared to be free and independent states, 449, 459; the declaration itself, and its principles,

- 465-475, immediate effects of the declaration of independence, ix. 31; independence the act of the people, 37; dangers which threatened America, 40; articles of confederation proposed, 47; objections to it, 51-56; the affair postponed, 57; need of foreign alliances, 61; application to France, 63; partisans of America in France, 69, 70; Lafayette, 70; the United States cannot be conquered, 73; military operations on Long Island, 82-96; capture of New York city, 118-121; the States form new governments, 167, *et seq.*; the American cause regarded in Europe as hopeless, 226; the gloom disappears at Trenton, 235; and at Princeton, 247-252; question of allegiance, whether due to the United States or to some particular state, 253, 254; constitutions of civil government, 257, *et seq.* (see *Constitutions, etc.*); no hatred of England long retained, 258; the system of civil government based on that of England, 258, 271, 282; America prepares the way for universal progress and reform, 283; enlistment of loyalists in the British service, 320; employment of savages, 321; finances of the United States, 323; futile attempts at a pacification made by Charles Lee with the concurrence of Howe, 328, *et seq.*; a crowd of foreign adventurers, 337; Kosciuszko, 337; Germain's implacable spirit, 349; advance of Burgoyne from Canada, 362, *et seq.*; his surrender, 420; Sir William Howe takes Philadelphia, 394-404; articles of confederation adopted, 436, *et seq.* (see *Confederation*); a free people of the United States, 406, *et seq.*; unparalleled patience of the army, 471; America in fact independent, 473; policy of Russia towards America, 473; of Frederic of Prussia, 473; treaty between France and the United States, 481; America will be satisfied with nothing short of absolute independence, 497, 498; emigration to, promoted by persecutions in Europe, 84; peace of Utrecht favorable to, x. 85; its rising glories seen by Herder, 89; and by Pownall, 235, *et seq.*; friendship of Frederic II. for, 88, 99, 108, 114; Kant, Klopstock, Goethe, Schiller, and Niebuhr rejoice in its victories, 88, 90, 91, 92; had substantially achieved independence previously to the French alliance, 139; its great need was a strong government possessing the power of coercion, 178, 206, 207; for want of such a government, America during the war was often on the brink of destruction, 180; the conquest of America fully resolved on by George III. 246, *et seq.*; America finds a friend in Marie Antoinette, 111.
- American army, enlisted under the authority of individual states, ix. 57; short enlistments, 57; dissensions among the officers, 58; positions in it sought by foreigners, 70, 71; condition of the army in August, 1776, 77; the Americans on Long Island overpowered by a greatly superior force, 87-94; their sufferings, 97, 98; sadness prevails in the camp, 98; inadequate supply of provisions 98; a retreat becomes necessary, 102; skilful measures taken, 103; a sea-fog screens them from the enemy, 104; the retreat happily effected, 104 (see *Long Island*); shameful panic and flight from New York, 119; army regulations adopted, 135; condition of the army, 135, 136; measures of congress for enlisting an army, 136; Washington condemns the practice of trusting to militia, 137; need of a permanent army, 137; want of good officers, 136, 138; Washington's suggestions unheeded, 138; evils of short enlistments, 183, 184, 221; the army melting away, 195; on the point of dissolution, 220, 221; congress interferes in military operations, 78, 111, 185; neglects to provide a suitable army, 138; militia not to be depended on, 221; Washington desires an army of the United States, 223; asks for authority to enlist men, 220-223; is not seconded by his generals, 187; some of them disobey his orders, 187, 188, 194, 196, 203, 228 (see *Lee, Charles, and Gates*); the battle of Trenton, 230-235 (see *Trenton*); sufferings of the American troops, 225, 229, 236, 239; the army on the point of dissolution, 220, 221; Washington asks for power to enlist men, 220; which is given him, 238; exhaustion of the army from a winter campaign, 251; operations in New Jersey, 240-250; the army encamps at Morristown, 252; its weakness, 334; unworthy officers, 337; the army at Middlebrook, 351; men blame Washington for his caution; but this caution saves the country, 352-354; the British army evacuates New Jersey, 356; approaches on the opposite side, 393, *et seq.*; battle of Brandywine, 396-398; Philadelphia in possession of the enemy, 404; news of the surrender of Burgoyne, 429; Gates refuses reinforcements to Washington, 432; the army at Whitemarsh, 453, 454; winter-quarters at Valley Forge, 458; sufferings of the troops, 458, 459, 465; great merit of the soldiers, 471, 472; its feebleness, x. 371, its sufferings, 403, 406, 565; unpaid, 402; its deplorable condition, 177, 234; its patriotism, 573. (See *Continental army*.)
- American banner, tricolored, unfurled over the new continental army around Boston, viii. 232; at Charleston, 403.
- American cause, Louis XVI. has no sympathy for it, x. 42, 46.
- American civil list, plan for, iv. 84; postponed by divisions in the cabinet, 86; the design resumed, 92.
- American colonies claim legislative independence of England, iv. 3, *et seq.*; their heroic resistance applauded in Europe, 14; relation of the colonies to the mother-country, 15, 17; little regarded by the metropolis, 15, 17; peculiarities of colonial civil life, 16. more popular power there than in England, 16; bounds set to the royal prerogative, 17; whence arose their power, 19;



- their governors dependent for their salaries on the colonial assemblies, 19; the colonies tend to independence, 38; restrictions on American manufactures, 63; tendency towards union, 74, 75; the colonies' disregard arbitrary instructions, 31, 32, 175, 255; take measures for self-defence against French encroachment, 112, *et seq.*; population in 1754, 127, *et seq.*; plan of union proposed by Franklin, 122; by Halifax, 165, 166; by Shirley, 172; taxation proposed (see *Taxation*); the colonies disregard requisitions for military supplies, 120, 175; want of concert among them, 29, 175; united under military rule, 207, *et seq.*; rapid growth of the colonies, 213, 214; measures of coercion proposed, 29, 32, 56, 57; the colonies reject a central power, 125; an act to quarter soldiers on the inhabitants, 230; foreign officers employed, 231, independence of the colonies predicted, 232 (see *Independence*); spread of infidelity in America, 257; the colonies humiliated and their borders contracted, 267; general discontent, 269; the genius and zeal of Pitt rouses the colonies to active exertion, 292; great exultation at the capture of Quebec, 338; decision reached to tax America, 381; acts of trade resisted in Boston, 414; discontent and commotion in all the colonies, 430; a large standing army to hold them in subjection, 454; enlightened policy pursued by the colonists, 459; necessary result of the overthrow of the French power in America, 460, 461.
- American conflict sprang from the development of British institutions, x. 37; strong reluctance of French statesmen to enter into it, 42; English people feel it to be hopeless, 529.
- American eagle, what its import, x. 572.
- American finances, their disordered state, 573.
- American flag established by congress, ix. 352; first salute paid to it abroad, 292, 293.
- American independence decided in part by the sympathies of foreign states, ix. 35; virtually achieved previous to the French alliance, 139; consented to by the king, 534; and by the English cabinet, 546.
- American letters, those of Bernard laid before parliament, vi. 271; letters of Thomas Hutchinson, aiming at the subversion of American liberty, 305, *note*, 306, *note*; these letters, and similar ones, suggested oppressive measures of the British government, 435; Franklin's opinion of them, 436, 437; published in America, 461, 464; their contents and spirit, 462; the consequences, 463; the discovery and publication of these letters falsely represented in England, 491, 497.
- American navy, origin of, viii. 114; authorized by congress, 215; flag of the navy described, 345, 346; measures taken to create one, ix. 134; a naval force equipped on Lake Champlain, 152; the frigates and smaller vessels in the Delaware, 422; the frigate "Randolph" sunk, 467.
- American overtures to the Netherlands at first disregarded, x. 261.
- American people determined on independence, 139, 177, 220; for it they trust in God, 150.
- American prisoners insulted and cruelly treated, ix. 97; confined in prison-ships, 98.
- American privateers, their great success, ix. 134, 467, 473.
- American question, its influence on the ideas and public policy of the nations of Europe, x. 35.
- American representation in parliament utterly impracticable, vi. 123, 126.
- American revolution, progress of; epoch the first: overthrow of the European colonial system, iv. 3, *et seq.*; objects of the authors, 5; epoch the second: how Great Britain estranged America, v. 3, *et seq.*; origin of the revolution, iv. 12; what did its authors intend? 5: its character and extent, 12, 13; it introduced new modes of thought and action, 13; hailed with delight in Europe, 14; great qualities of mind and heart elicited by it, 14; was inevitable, vii. 22; the hour for it had come, 22; it naturally arose from the past, 23; why should it have been opposed? 23; Britain should have offered independence, 23; it had glorious forerunners, 23; the revolution inaugurated, 42, 54; it became a matter of necessity at Concord, 301; its success ensured at Bunker Hill, 435; arose from ideas immovably fixed in the English mind, x. 39; justified by Frederic of Prussia, and its success predicted by him, 102, 106.
- American slavery, how left at the close of the war, x. 591.
- Americans, liberty their peculiar inheritance, vii. 22; as a people, they have immense resources, 22; liberty was to them a necessity, 22; various skirmishes with the British near Boston, viii. 47-49; no compromise possible, 127, 128; Carleton proclaims them traitors, 176; they invade Canada, 182, *et seq.*; their unsuccessful attack on Quebec, 206-210; their loss, 210; compelled to retreat, 425; defeated at Three Rivers, 429, 430; their evacuation of Canada, 432; their sufferings and great losses, 426, 431, 433 (see *Northern Army*); become more respected in England, ix. 141.
- Amherst, Sir Jeffrey, sent with an army to capture Louisburgh, iv. 294; reaches Halifax, 294; besieges and takes Louisburgh, 295, 296; comes to Boston with troops, 306; appointed commander-in-chief, 306; his character, 322, 324; occupies Crown Point, 323; wastes time and labor there, 323, 329; sends an expedition into the Cherokee country, 351; his slowness, 358, 360; proceeds by way of Oswego to Montreal, 360; receives the capitulation of Montreal and of all Canada, 361; sends an

- expedition into the Valley of the Tennessee, 423; his letters quoted, v. 111, 125, 129, 132; offers a reward for the assassination of Pontiac, 132; declines the command of the army in America, vii. 244; advises the king to withdraw his troops from the American continent, x. 141, 168.
- Amnesty and indemnity for the loyalists demanded and refused, x. 555, 580, 586; the matter finally disposed of, and how, 590.**
- Amsterdam, its commercial greatness, ii. 294; purchases of the West India Company; the present state of Delaware, 298; disastrous result, 299.**
- Anabaptists, Jeremy Taylor's opinion of them, i. 432; their legal status in Massachusetts, 432 (see *Baptists*); advocates for thorough social reform, ii. 459.**
- Anderson, Captain, his attack on a Hessian post at Trenton, ix. 231.**
- Andover, the people of, remonstrate against the trials for witchcraft, iii. 95, 96.**
- André, Major John, his position in the British army, x. 379; the medium of a correspondence between Arnold and Clinton, 379; pretends private business in a letter to Colonel Sheldon, 380; comes up the river to meet Arnold, 383; negotiations between the two for the surrender of West Point, 384; disguise of André, 385; he attempts to return, 386; his arrest, 387; the circumstances related, 388; avows himself a British officer, 389; is treated with delicacy, 389; his trial by a board of general officers, 390; their generous behavior, 390; is sentenced to death as a spy, 390; Clinton in vain tries to save him, 391; André entreats that he may not die on the gibbet, 392; why the request could not be granted, 392; the execution, 392; the respect paid to his memory, 393; Clinton's disappointment at the result of Arnold's treason, 394; authorities used in the relation of the affair, 395, *note*.**
- Andros, Edmund, makes peace with the Indians of Maine, ii. 111; as governor of New York, claims jurisdiction over New Jersey and Delaware, 358; and over part of Connecticut, 404; baffled in his attempt on Saybrook, 404; claims authority over New Jersey, 408; governor of all New England, 425; lands at Boston, 425; his oppressive administration, 426; demands and uses the Old South meeting-house for episcopal worship, 427; levies taxes at discretion, 427; suspends the *habeas corpus*, 427; his opinion of Indian deeds, 428; seizes the government of Rhode Island, 429; and of Connecticut, 430; the whole seaboard from Maryland under his sway, 431; deposed from office, 447; governor of Virginia, iii. 25; preserves the early papers of that province from destruction, 25.**
- Angel, Colonel, his good conduct, x. 375.**
- Anglo-Saxon race, the pioneers of a worthy civilization, iv. 5, 459.**
- Anhalt-Zerbst, the prince of, offers a regiment to George III., vi. 267, ix. 319; his strange conduct, 319; his bargain for troops, 474; a bad bargain, 474.**
- Annapolis, convention at, viii. 78; its spirit and measures, 78.**
- Annapolis, in Maryland, made the capital, iii. 31; sympathizes with Boston, vii. 59; the brig "Peggy Stewart," with more than a ton of tea, consumed, 143; patriotic zeal, 207.**
- Annapolis, in Nova Scotia, formerly Port Royal, iii. 218.**
- Anne, Queen, war of, iii. 206; gives audience to five Iroquois sachems, 219.**
- Anson, Lord George, circumnavigates the globe, iii. 439; takes a French fleet, 463; first lord of the admiralty, iv. 274; dies, 438.**
- Anspach, Margrave of, furnishes recruits for the British army, ix. 315; his zeal in urging their departure, 317; furnishes troops to England, x. 114; two battalions taken prisoners at Yorktown, 523.**
- Antagonism between the North and the South on the question of slavery, x. 347; this antagonism apparent in the old congress, 348, *note*.**
- Antagonisms in the world of action are very few, and may always be accounted for and reconciled, viii. 118; antagonisms of right and fact, and their conciliation, 119.**
- Antonio de Ulloa, his arbitrary and oppressive conduct at New Orleans, vi. 218, 219.**
- Appeal made to France for money to carry on the war, x. 417.**
- Aranda, Count de, ambassador of Spain at Paris, ix. 288; his character, 288; his hatred of England, 289; the American commissioners have interviews with him, 289.**
- "Arbella," ship, whence the name, i. 354; arrives at Salem, 357; at Boston, 358.**
- Arbutnot, Admiral, arrives in New York with re-enforcements, x. 301; sails into Charleston harbor, 304; he and Clinton summon the town, 304; Chesapeake, x. 498; encounter with the French fleet, 515.**
- Archdale, John, Governor of South Carolina, iii. 16; his discreet and beneficent administration, 17.**
- Archer, John, a faithful minister with the emigrants to Massachusetts, i. 354.**
- Argall, Sir Samuel, gets possession of Pocahontas, i. 146; drives the French from Mount Desert and from Acadia, 148; Governor of Virginia, 151; a tyrant, 152; dies, 438.**
- Aristocracy of England paralyzes all its energies, iv. 278; its privilege and power, v. 50, *et seq.*; its absolute control, 38-40, 59; the king and Pitt combine to humble them, vi. 25; they combine to overthrow his ministry, 59; and succeed, 60; they reduce their own burden of taxation by throwing part of it on America, 60, 61.**
- Aristocracy of Europe, state of, in 1774; vii. 26, 27.**
- Aristocratic rule in Great Britain, x. 117; constitution for Eastern Maine, 368.**

- Aristotle taught that the earth is a sphere, i. 6.
- Arkansas, Valley of, traversed by Spaniards, i. 40*m*, 51; by French Jesuits, iii. 160.
- Arlington, Earl of (Henry Bennet), receives a grant of Virginia, ii. 209.
- Armand, Colonel, in Washington's army, ix. 393; his misconduct at Camden, x. 320.
- Armed neutrality of 1780. Freedom of the seas unknown to barbarous powers, x. 255; how understood in the middle ages, 255; rights of neutrals first maintained by the Dutch, 255; introduced into the law of nations, 256; first proposal for an armed neutrality, 260; hesitation of the Dutch, 262; arrogant claims of England, 264; the northern powers demand explanations of her for the violations of their respective flags, 264; they propose convoy for their trading vessels, 265; Russia at first demurs, 257, 266; Holland hesitates and delays, 264; the Dutch fear England, 264; they suffer her insolence, 270; they refuse to give up Paul Jones and his prizes, 272; a British squadron attacks a Dutch convoy, 275; Russia joins the other northern powers in remonstrance, 277; the "armed neutrality" fully proclaimed, 281; its principles distinctly announced, 281; its justice and wisdom, 281; parties to it, 428, 429; action taken by England, 427.
- Arming the slaves, the question considered, ix. 291; congress advise it, 292.
- Arms prohibited to the Catholics of Ireland, v. 72.
- Armstrong, John, with a body of troops, destroys a town of the Delawares, iv. 241, 242; in the campaign against fort Duquesne, 308; raises the British flag over that fortress, 311.
- Armstrong, General, of Pennsylvania, takes command of the continental troops in South Carolina, viii. 354; takes part in the defence of Charleston, 396, 399, 403; commands the Pennsylvania militia, ix. 395, 424, 427; his inefficiency, 427, 428.
- Army, standing, for the colonies, v. 83, 86.
- Army of America. (See *Continental Army* and *Northern Army*).
- Army of France, subservient to the will of the monarch, vii. 28.
- Arnold, Benedict, of New Haven, Conn., marches with a volunteer company to the scene of conflict near Boston, vii. 316; joins at Castleton the expedition against Ticonderoga, 339; his skirmish on Lake Champlain, 364; commands the expedition to Quebec by way of Kennebec river, viii. 190; his person and character, 190; amount of his force, 190; encounters great difficulties, 193, *et seq.*; reaches Point Levi, opposite Quebec, 196; too weak to attack Quebec, 197; retires to Point aux Trembles, 198; is joined there by Montgomery, 201; leads a party in the assault on the city, 208; is wounded and carried off, 209; appointed brigadier-general, 245; retires to Montreal, 420; attempts to recover cap-
- tives by force, 428; retreats from Montreal, 432; commands a naval force on Lake Champlain, ix. 152; his naval operations, 154; is blockaded by British ships, 154; his audacity, 154; defeat of his squadron, 155; in the night passes unobserved through the British fleet, 156; is pursued and overtaken, 156; destroys his own fleet, 156; his fame for courage, 156; testimony of Washington to his merit, 335; he is slighted by congress, 335; his combat with the enemy at Ridgefield, Conn., 347; made a major-general, 348; commands on the Delaware, 352; is sent to the aid of the northern army, 374; insubordinate, 407; not in the battle of Stillwater, 410; his good advice, 411; Gates rejects it, 412; Arnold and Gates quarrel, 412; a volunteer on the field of battle, 417; his impetuous valor, 417; is wounded, 417; congress allows him the rank he claims, 418; his discontent, x. 377; his misconduct, 378; lenient censure on him by a court-martial, 378; receives money from Clinton, 378; appointed to command at West Point, 379; determines to surrender that post, 379; vainly tries to involve Washington in the snare, 382; goes down the river to meet André, 380; plan agreed on for the surrender, 380; escapes down the river in the "Vulture," 389; his threatening letter to Washington, 391; is scorned and hated even by British officers, 394; his effrontery, 394; malignant statements of the affair, 394; the plot approved by Germain and Clinton, 378; Arnold invades Virginia, 497; burns Richmond, 497; writes a letter to Lafayette, which the latter returns with scorn, 498; is ordered back to New York, 498; plunders and burns New London, 499; murders Colonel Ledyard, and massacres the garrison of fort Griswold, 500.
- Arrogance of England, x. 430.
- Artaguet, leader of a French force against the Chickasaws, iii. 365; falls in battle, 367.
- Articles of confederation agreed on, ix. 144.
- Ashburton, Lord [John Dunning], consulted, x. 578.
- Ashby, Captain, hanged, ix. 334.
- Ashe, General, his incapacity, ix. 289.
- Ashe, John, of North Carolina, he and others burn fort Johnston, viii. 95; member of the provincial congress, 98; joins Colonel Moore with a re-enforcement, 285.
- Ashley, John, proposes to abate the duty on molasses, iv. 86.
- "Asia," British man-of-war, supplied with provisions from New York, vii. 359.
- "Assiento," the, its provisions, iii. 231, 232; benefit of it assigned to the South Sea company, 401; number of African slaves imported during its continuance, 411.
- Atlee, of Pennsylvania, on Long Island, ix. 85, 89.
- Attakulla-kulla, or the Little Carpenter, a Cherokee chief, iv. 348, *et seq.*; his fidelity to his friend James Stuart, 356; comes to ask for peace, 423, 425.



Attorneys excluded from Virginia, i. 229.  
 Attucks, Crispus, one of the victims at the Boston massacre, vi. 337, 340.  
 Aubry defeats Grant near fort Duquesne, iv. 309; marches to the relief of Niagara, and is defeated with great slaughter, 321; at New Orleans, vi. 220, 293, 294, 296.  
 Auchmuty, Robert, vi. 200, 283; counsel for Preston at his trial, 348, 373.  
 Auckland, Lord, sent to America. (See *Eden, William.*)  
 Augusta, princess-dowager of Wales, mother of George III.; iv. 98, 244; unjustly accused of loose connections, 245, *note*.  
 Augusta, Ga., founded, iii. 425; taken by the British, x. 286; British defeated there, 333; surrenders, 480.  
 "Augusta," British ship of the line, blown up, ix. 431.  
 Augusta County, in Virginia, sends relief to the suffering people of Boston, vii. 75; instructions to its delegates in convention, viii. 376.  
 Augustine of Hippo, in Africa, his influence on humanity, iv. 151.  
 Augustine, St., settlement of, i. 69; oldest town in the United States, 69.  
 Austria, her alliance courted by England, iv. 277, 433; and France put aside their ancient rivalry, 279; England offers to her acquisitions in Italy, 433; under the emperor Joseph II., v. 10; inflexibly opposed to America, 11; aims at supremacy in Germany, x. 52, 105, 110, 242; its vain pretensions, 53; pride of the archducal house, 53; its firm alliance with France, 53; unfriendly to America, 53; decline of the Austrian power, 53; Austria accedes to the northern league, 430; favors American independence, 449.  
 Austrian emperor proclaims religious freedom, x. 528.  
 Austrian succession, war of the, iii. 449, *et seq.*  
 Avalon, name of Lord Baltimore's settlement on Newfoundland, i. 239, 242.  
 Ayer, Captain Samuel, of Haverhill, his intrepid conduct, iii. 216.  
 Ayllon, his voyage to South Carolina, i. 36; carries off many of the natives as slaves, 36. (See *Vasquez*).

## B.

Bacon, Francis, Viscount St. Albans, his liberal sentiments and illiberal conduct, i. 304, 305; a strange mistake of his, 319; inclined to materialism, ii. 329.  
 Bacon, Nathaniel, his character, ii. 217; elected a Burgess, 219; appointed commander-in-chief, 220; marches against the Indians, 224; takes possession of Jamestown, and burns it, 227, 228; disperses the royalists, 228; dies, 229; his partisans disfranchised, 246.  
 Backwoodsmen described, vii. 163; they are exposed to constant danger from the Indians, 164; murders by the Indians, 164; the backwoodsmen take revenge, 165; their settlement in Kentucky, 366, *et seq.*  
 Backwoodsmen of North Carolina and Virginia rise in arms, x. 335; they defeat a strong British force, 339; stop the advance of Cornwallis, 340; and determine the possession of the country beyond the Alleghanies, 340.  
 "Balance of power" between the South and the North, x. 352.  
 Balfour, Andrew, an American patriot, suffers cruel treatment, x. 560.  
 Balfour, a British colonel, takes part in the execution of Hayne, x. 492.  
 Ballot, origin of its use, i. 348; unknown in England, v. 39.  
 Baltimore, first lord (Sir George Calvert) his early history, i. 238; his character, 238; his settlement in Newfoundland fails, 239; goes to Virginia, 197, 240; finds no quiet there, 197, 240; obtains a grant of Maryland, 241; wise and benevolent provisions of the charter, 244; death of Lord Baltimore, 244.  
 Baltimore, second lord (Cecil Calvert), i. 245; charter of Maryland issued to him, 241, 245; his mild government, 252; gratitude of the people, 252, 258; his authority superseded by Clayborne, 260; confirmed by Cromwell, 261; appoints Fendall his lieutenant, 263; his authority restored, ii. 236; his tolerant and mild government, 238; his death, 238; and character, 239.  
 Baltimore, third lord (Charles Calvert), resides in Maryland, ii. 237; visits England, 240; returns to the province, 241; his authority resisted, 242, *et seq.*; visits the region on the Delaware, 309; controversy with William Penn on boundaries, 385, 386.  
 Baltimore, Lord (see *Calvert, Frederic*).  
 Baltimore, its inviting situation, vii. 49; its recent origin, 49; spirited conduct of its people, 50; recommends a continental congress, 50; sympathizes with Boston, 50; its example kindles new life in New York, 50; congress adjourns to that place, ix. 213.  
 Bancroft, Edward, an adventurer in England from Connecticut, ix. 62; his bad character, 62, 63; he betrays confidence, 64.  
 Bancroft, Richard, archbishop of Canterbury, an unrelenting persecutor of the Puritans, i. 296, 297.  
 Bank of England chartered, iii. 191.  
 Bank of John Law becomes the bank of France, iii. 354.  
 Bank of the United States, its origin, x. 405.  
 Baptists punished in Massachusetts, i. 450; in Virginia, ii. 202.  
 Barbadoes, a colony from it settle in North Carolina, ii. 137.  
 Barbarity, Indian, instances of, iii. 133, 134, 138-141, 145, 179, 180, 182, 183, 187, 188; justified by Jesuit historians, 187; other instances, 212, 213, 215, 320, 327.  
 Barbarity of the British, x. 198, *et seq.*, 307, 327, 328, 339, 395, *note*, 489, 457, 458, 560, 562.



- Barbarity of the Indians, v. 123.
- Barclay, Robert, governor of New Jersey, ii. 409.
- Barentsen, William, the peer of Columbus, ii. 261; his attempt to discover a north-east passage to China, 262; his death, 262.
- Barlow, Arthur, his voyage for Raleigh to North Carolina, i. 92.
- Barnwell, Colonel, defeats the Tuscaroras, iii. 321.
- Barré, Isaac, major, afterwards colonel, in the expedition against Louisburg, iv. 294; his good conduct, 296; adjutant-general to Wolfe, 325; is wounded, 335; dismissed from the army for his votes, v. 169; his great speech in parliament against the stamp act, 240, 241; contends against the power of parliament to tax America, 415; his eloquent speech in behalf of America, vi. 254; befriends Boston, 271; his invective against ministerial despotism, 322; would not have troops sent to Boston, 361; does not oppose coercion of America, 510; or the Boston port bill, 512; eulogizes Montgomery in the British parliament, viii. 212.
- Barrett, Colonel James, commands at Concord, vii. 298, 302.
- Barrington, Lord, secretary at war, iv. 386, 412, 413; denounces the Americans, vi. 232, 240; proposes a change in the charter of Massachusetts, 361; confesses the weakness of his department, vii. 186, 187; remonstrates against war with America, 187; his hesitation about sending troops to America, viii. 100; his admonitions unheeded, 158, 159; votes in parliament to please the king, in opposition to his own judgment and conscience, ix. 75; thinks the ministry not equal to the times, x. 143.
- Barrington, lieutenant, taken prisoner with Prescott on Rhode Island, ix. 358.
- Barrow, Henry, hanged at Tyburn for not going to church, i. 290.
- Bartlett, Josiah, delegate in congress from New Hampshire, viii. 438.
- Barton, Colonel William, takes General Prescott prisoner, ix. 358.
- Bass, Henry, of Boston, a "Son of Liberty" in 1765, v. 310.
- Bath, earl of (see *Pulteney*).
- Baton Rouge taken by the Spaniards, x. 253.
- Baum, a Brunswick lieutenant-colonel, sent to Bennington, ix. 383; amount of his force, 383; his orders, 383; is attacked by militia on every side, 385; falls mortally wounded, 385; surrender of his troops, 385.
- Bavaria, Elector of, offers troops to George III., viii. 268; the offer not accepted, 268; threatened by Austria, x. 52, 105, 111, 240.
- Baxter, Richard, suffers abuse from Jeffries, ii. 439; the head of the dissenters, 440; his political influence, 441.
- Baxter, Colonel, at fort Washington, ix. 190; his death, 191.
- Bayard, John, of Philadelphia, his character viii. 385.
- Baylor, Colonel, at Trenton, ix. 234.
- Baylor's cavalry, while begging for quarter, cut to pieces, x. 152.
- "Bay Psalm Book," printed, i. 415.
- Beatty, Captain, killed, x. 487.
- Beauchamp, Lord, a friend of America and of liberty, vi. 240, 274, 360.
- Beaujeu, naval commander in La Salle's last voyage, iii. 169.
- Beaujeu, De, leads the attack on Braddock's force, iv. 187; is slain, 188.
- Beaumarchais, Peter Augustin Caron de, his utter want of principle, vii. 32, 33; a French emissary in London, viii. 146; hastens to Paris, 146; his secret memorial to the king in favor of taking part with the Americans, 146; receives a new commission, 146; is employed by the French ministry in furnishing aid to America, 343, 344; promises this aid to Arthur Lee, 344; offers supplies on credit to the United States, ix. 64; a friend to that country, 69; warlike supplies are furnished by him, 291; the author of "Figaro," 294; his letter to Maurepas, 294; he proposes to him three objects, one of which is an alliance with America, 294.
- Beau Sejour taken by the English, iv. 198.
- Beckford, William, member of parliament from London, v. 145; denies the power of that body to tax America, 238, 242; his good counsel rejected, vi. 78, 79, 232; his efforts in behalf of America, 239, 257, 274, 360; moves for a repeal of the duty on tea, 360.
- Bedel, Colonel, of New Hampshire, stationed at the Cedars, Canada, viii. 425, 426; his cowardice, 427.
- Bedford, Duke of, first lord of the admiralty in 1746, iv. 87, 291; succeeds the Duke of Newcastle as minister for the colonies in 1748, 21; his excellent character, 21, 22; contrasted with Newcastle, 22; head of the conservative whigs, 55; earnest for depriving the colonies of liberty, 57; disagrees with Halifax, 70; at variance with the Pelhams, 70, 71; wishes to maintain peace with France, 86, 87; resigns his office, 87; distrusts the colonists, 291; desires peace with France, 400; opposes Pitt, 401; with aid from Newcastle, compels the resignation of Pitt, 408, 409; becomes Lord Privy Seal, 412; ambassador to France, 439, 442; concludes a treaty of peace, 452.
- Bedford, fourth duke of (John Russell), lord privy seal, v. 80; description of, by Lord Egremont, 81; Bute wishes him for president of the council, 95; refuses to act under the triumvirate ministry, 103; advises the king to send for Pitt, 103; he is irritated against Pitt, 147; becomes president of the council, under the Grenville administration, 147; his wishes in relation

- to a regency, 253, 255; favors freedom of trade, 257; his life in danger from silk-weavers, 258; his interview with the king, 260; remains in office, 265; wishes to retire, 295; his interview with the king, 296; solicits the aid of Bute, 427, 428; protests, with his friends, against the repeal of the stamp act, 451; denounces Massachusetts, vi. 61; proposed coalition with Rockingham, 89; insists on maintaining the supremacy of parliament over the colonies, 91; the proposed coalition fails, 92; he and his party coalesce with the ministry, 108; he and they wish to crush the spirit of liberty in Boston, 175; he seconds Hillsborough; resolutions condemning Massachusetts to punishment, 246.
- Beers, Richard, slain by the Indians at Northfield, ii. 104.
- Behring, Vitus, discovers North-west America, iii. 453.
- Belcher, Jonathan, governor of Massachusetts, iii. 392; governor of New Jersey, iv. 40.
- Belcher, Jonathan, son of the preceding, chief justice of Nova Scotia, justified the removal of the Acadians, iv. 201.
- Belle Isle taken by the English, iv. 400.
- Bellingham, Richard, his jealousy of Winthrop, i. 437; governor of Massachusetts, ii. 88; his death, 92.
- Bellomont, Earl of [Richard Coote], governor of New York, iii. 59; his pacific administration, 59; his popularity, 60; a partner of William Kidd, 60; governor of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, 82; endeavors to obtain an acknowledgment of the supremacy of England over the Five Nations, 193; his death, 60.
- Bemis's Heights, near Stillwater, N.Y., battle of, ix. 409; Morgan begins the attack, 409; Fraser, Philips, Riedesel, 409; obstinate courage of the Americans, 410; neither Gates, Arnold, nor Lincoln on the field, 410; defeat of the British, 411; their great loss, 411; second battle, 415, 416; Burgoyne surrenders, 420.
- Bennett, Richard, governor of Virginia, i. 225.
- Bennington, Vermont, settled, v. 291; its territory granted twice over, 292.
- Bergen in New Jersey, its early settlement, ii. 316.
- Berkeley, George, bishop of Cloyne, iii. 372; his character, 372; his philosophy, 372; his residence in America, 373; endows American colleges, 374; his prophecy of American greatness, 374.
- Berkeley, Lord John, a proprietary of Carolina, ii. 129; and of New Jersey, 315; sells West New Jersey to the Quakers, 355.
- Berkeley, Sir William, proprietary governor of Virginia, i. 202; severe instructions given to him, 203; hates Puritanism, 207; elected by the people, 228; his selfishness, ii. 69; one of the proprietaries of North Carolina, 129; thanks God that there are no free schools, 192; appointed agent of the colony, 197; unfaithful to the trust, 198; dissatisfied with his salary, 203; his inventory, 212; his conduct during the insurrection, 217, *et seq.*; proclaims Bacon a traitor, 222; his severities towards the malecontents, 230, *et seq.*; returns to England, 233.
- Bernard, Francis, governor of New Jersey iv. 372; made governor of Massachusetts, 377; talks of "subjection to Great Britain," 378; appoints Thomas Hutchinson chief justice, 379; his alarm at the ferment caused by the speech of Otis, 421; a conspirator against liberty, 421; recommends divers aggressions on the liberties of New England, v. 148; shares in the avails of the contraband trade, 158, *note*; his scheme of colonial policy, 200; his counsel to the ministry, 200; his pusillanimity, 201; proposes a reconstruction of New England, 225; counsels submission to the oppressive measures of parliament, 278; cannot repress the patriotic spirit of the people, 310; retires to the castle, 312; his cowardice, 315; tries to frighten the province legislature, 329, 330; opposes all concession and calls for an army, 379, 380; his pride and vanity, vi. 7; negatives the choice of Otis as speaker, 8; and of six members of the council, 8; threatens the province with the loss of its charter, 11; solicits the interposition of parliament and the revocation of the charter, 16; complains of illicit trade, 31; the taxing of America due to his advice, 41; causes the billeting act to be printed as if it were a province law, 41; insists on a negative to the choice of province agent, 69; wishes to control the election of councillors, 70; advises to alter the charter, 70; predicts a civil war, 97; advises to send troops to Boston, 101; his infatuation, 104, 151; grossly misrepresents to the ministry the proceedings of Massachusetts, 131; is defeated in an action for libel, 131, 132; prorogues the legislature and denounces its leading members, 131; he wishes troops to be sent over, 133; his false representations of a day of rejoicing, 134; his multiplied falsehoods, 135; his correspondence with Hillsborough, 150, 151; asks to become an informer, with promise of secrecy, 150; his falsehoods, 152; his shameful duplicity, 160, 171; advises against repeal of the revenue act, 171; is panic-struck at the firm front presented by Massachusetts, 164; is made a baronet, 172; denounces Samuel Adams, 192; forbids the meeting of the general court, 198; is frightened at an empty barrel, 196; pretends to be in danger, 200; the most unhappy man in Boston, 200; his demand of quarters for troops denied, 201; his misrepresentations of this matter, 202; urges the forfeiture of the charter, 212; is recalled, 268; his duplicity unmasked by the publication of letters, 271; his disappointments, 285; his altercation with the legislature of Massachusetts, 285, *et seq.*; adjourns it to

- Cambridge, 287; the members unanimously petition for his removal, 287; he leaves Boston for Europe, 290; his bad character, 291; great rejoicing at his departure, 291.
- Bernstorff, Count, prime minister of Denmark, unfriendly to America, x. 56, 272; accepts the armed neutrality, 429; but enters into a separate treaty at variance with it, 430.
- Beverly, Robert, suppresses the insurrection in Virginia, ii. 229.
- Bible, English, never printed in America till the revolution, v. 266; Bible for freedom, 289; some of its prophecies supposed to apply to New England, vi. 168.
- Biddle, Nicholas, captain in the American navy, ix. 134; captain of the frigate "Randolph," engages the "Yarmouth," of superior force, ix. 467; the "Randolph" is sunk, 467.
- Bienville, brother of Iberville, iii. 179, 200; explores western Louisiana, 204; at Mobile, 209; at New Orleans, 358, 364, 367; in Mississippi, 367.
- Bienville, Celeron de, conducts a French colony into the Ohio valley, iv. 42, 43.
- Bigelow, Timothy, major under Arnold in the expedition against Quebec, viii. 191.
- Bigot, James, missionary to the Penobscot Indians, iii. 178; stimulates them to great cruelty, 187.
- Billeting act obnoxious to New York, vi. 15, 43; its clauses renewed, 17; Governor Bernard causes it to be printed with the province laws, 41; Samuel Adams's opinion of it, 42; resisted in New York, 44; Shelburne disapproves of it, 55; a fruitful source of difficulty with the colonies, 71; resisted in South Carolina, 309.
- Billingsport on the Delaware evacuated, ix. 423; the consequences, 423.
- Bills of credit issued by Massachusetts, viii. 48; by congress, 57, 61; by New Jersey, 72; by Pennsylvania, 75; by Maryland, 78; by Virginia, 82; by North Carolina, 96; by the continental congress, 318; by Pennsylvania, 326; by South Carolina, 346, 347.
- Bishop, Bridget, accused of witchcraft, iii. 88; hanged, 88.
- Bishop and king stand or fall together, iv. 370; public opinion against bishops, 430.
- Black men, their enlistment opposed, x. 350; how far carried into effect, 350.
- Blackstone, William, settles at Boston, i. 341.
- Blackstone, Sir William, contends for the supremacy of England over her colonies, v. 417, 440.
- Blake, Joseph, brother of the admiral, conducts emigrants to South Carolina, ii. 172.
- Blanchard, Luther, fier in the Acton company, wounded at Concord, vii. 302.
- Bland, Richard, of Virginia, points to independence as a remedy, v. 442; appeals to the law of nature, 443; reports resolutions denying the power of parliament to tax America, vi. 146; one of the committee of correspondence, 455; a member of the first continental congress, vii. 130; his conciliatory speech, 130; he opposes the measures of resistance advocated by Washington and Patrick Henry, 273; elected to congress, viii. 80; is excused on account of age, 81; his high character, 81; in the convention of Virginia, 378.
- Blasphemy punished, i. 450.
- Bleiswick, Peter, pensionary of Holland, x. 260, *et seq.*
- Bliss, Theodore, a witness of the Boston massacre, vi. 339, 347.
- Block, Adriaen, the Dutch navigator, ii. 275; sails through Long Island Sound, 275.
- Blockade, law of, as interpreted by an English judge, x. 426, 427.
- Blockade of Boston, its effects there and elsewhere, vii. 56, 57; the measure universally condemned in America, 57, 58; the king and the ministry exult, 59.
- Bloody Brook, sanguinary battle there, ii. 104.
- Blouin, Daniel, agent for the people of Illinois, vi. 472.
- Bohemia invaded by Frederic II., iv. 282; reaction in, x. 82.
- Board of trade, its relations to the colonies, iv. 17; Halifax becomes head of it, 36; they apply to Parliament for absolute power over the colonies, 48, 49; Charles Townsend becomes a member, 54; they renew their efforts to crush American liberty, 83, 84; new powers given to this board, 92; they try in vain to reduce New York, 103, 104; advise taxation, 100; and a military dictatorship, 227; their secret designs against the colonies, 292, 297; their system matured, 379; the decision fully settled in 1760, 381; board of trade report against the tenure of good behavior, 428.
- "Body of Liberties" established in Massachusetts, i. 416; its provisions, 417, *et seq.*
- Bolingbroke, Lord (see *St. John*).
- Bollan, William, agent in England for Massachusetts, iv. 63, 84; dismissed, 430.
- Boone, Daniel, his birth-place, vi. 298, *note*; is allured to the West by reports of the richness of its soil, 298; traverses Kentucky, 299; built the first cottage on that territory, 299; his love of nature, 301; returns to his home in North Carolina, 302; determined to make Kentucky his future home, 302; his eldest son killed by the Indians, vii. 164; the pioneer settler of Kentucky, 366; his further career, 369, 370; dies far up the Missouri, 370.
- Boone, Thomas, governor of South Carolina, assumes to be sole judge of elections, v. 150.
- Boonesborough in Kentucky, its origin, vii. 366.
- Borough, an English, the French minister purchases one, vii. 174, 175.
- Boscawen, Admiral, takes the French ships "Alcide" and "Lys," iv. 183; in Nova Scotia, 201, 202; commands the fleet sent with Amherst's army to Louisburg, 294, 296.



Bossuet justifies slavery, x. 346.

Boston, founded, i. 358; first church formed, i. 359; its fundamental principles, 359; the town incorporated, 359; equips privateers against the French, ii. 89; generous contributions for sufferers in Philip's war, 109; merchants of Boston trade with Carolina, 157; this trade heavily taxed, 158; the Antinomian controversy, 388; the Episcopal service introduced by Andros, 426; he demands a meeting-house for it, 427; Boston throws off his government, 445, 446; Boston noted for liberality, ii. 109; witchcraft in Boston, iii. 97; flourishing condition of, 369; the "Boston News-Letter," 374; the town applauds the refusal of a fixed salary to the governor, 392; its population in 1761, iv. 418; writs of assistance tried there, 414, *et seq.*; elects James Otis one of its representatives, 420; denies the right of Parliament to tax America, v. 197; the stamp act denounced, 309; Oliver hung in effigy, 310; the chief actors in the scene, 310; bonfire on Fort Hill, 312; another in King Street, 313. Hutchinson's furniture and papers destroyed, 313; officers of the crown terror-stricken, 313; the town elects Samuel Adams representative, 331; their confidence in him, 350; memorial to Governor Bernard for opening the courts, 375, 376; chooses Hancock its representative, vi. 7; proposes union as a means of security, 6; a board of customs established, vi. 85; the people exasperated at the passage of Townshend's revenue act, 96; hostile feelings excited, 97; patriotic utterances of the press, 97, 98, 102; intimate correspondence with New York, 98; the inhabitants distressed and divided between fear and hope, 101; revolution rapidly advancing, 103; non-importation resolved on in town meeting, 103; the measure fails in part, 117; the people complain of having to maintain sycophants and court parasites, 117; the merchants renounce commerce with England, 132; false representations made of the state of things in Boston by the governor, 134, 135; and by the commissioners of the customs, 136; the true state of things, 136, 137; Boston thanks Dickinson for the "Farmers' Letters," 139; things hastening to a crisis, 145; riot of the tenth of June, 1768, 156, 157; a town meeting in consequence, 158; its address to Governor Bernard and his answer, 159, 160; it protests against the introduction of troops, and asserts its determination to maintain its liberties at every hazard, 162; the ministry incensed, 173; and determine on vigorous measures, 174; memorials for and against Boston, 174; popular enthusiasm, 179; non-importation again resolved on, 179; Boston and vicinity ready for extreme measures, 194; town meeting to consider what should be done, a report and resolves, 197; convention proposed, 198; the town vote to be provided with fire-arms,

199; the militia under arms, 201; a demand for quarters of troops denied, 201; false representations of Boston made by Gage, 200, 203; a convention at Faneuil Hall, 203; the troops arrive, 207; difficulty of finding quarters for them, 208, *et seq.*; Gage comes to Boston and in person demands quarters, but is refused, 210; many soldiers desert, 213; as there was no rebellion in Boston, the troops there could do nothing, 234; Parliament resolves to chastise Boston, 240; character of Boston; its political and social system and capacity for self-government, 240-243; Boston's petition to the king, 271; asks for the removal of the troops, 271; the town demands their removal, 284; the merchants unanimously vote the partial repeal of the revenue acts unsatisfactory, and adhere to the non-importation covenant, 290; Bernard leaves Boston for Europe, 290; great rejoicings thereon, 291; meeting of merchants in Faneuil Hall, the liberty song, 309; celebration of the fourteenth of August, 309; Boston firm in the non-importation agreement, 311; Boston's "Appeal to the World," 312; tar and feathers used on an informer, 313; inactivity of the troops, 314; they are "of no sort of use," 314; are despised by the towns-people, 333; the women renounce the use of tea, 333; the affray at Ebenezer Richardson's house, 333, 334; the affray at Gray's ropewalk, 334, 335; disputes between the soldiers and the townsmen, 334, *et seq.*; the Boston massacre, 336, *et seq.*; the town meeting on the day after, 341; the demand for the instant removal of the troops, 342; Hutchinson tries to evade the demand, 343; is overawed by Samuel Adams, 344; the council advise the removal, 345; Hutchinson complies, 346; extreme chagrin of the British officers, 346; Boston's instructions to its representatives, 363; the king orders all ships stationed in North America to rendezvous in Boston harbor, and castle William to be garrisoned by the regular troops, 369; a powerful British fleet in Boston harbor in 1771, 406; the ministers refuse to read Hutchinson's proclamation for thanksgiving in November, 1771, 408; the governor refuses to answer the inquiries of the town, 427; the town claims a right to discuss public affairs, 428; a committee of correspondence proposed by Samuel Adams, and voted by the town, 428, 429; Boston is seconded by other towns, 431; by a public act joins issue with king and Parliament, 432, 433; the proceedings of Boston sent to Virginia, 455; public meeting to consider the subject of the landing of the tea, 473; extreme excitement, 474, *et seq.*; another town meeting, 475; arrival of a tea ship, 477; an immense meeting at the Old South Church, 478; two more tea ships arrive, 480; the tea thrown overboard, 486, 487; parcels of tea picked up

and publicly destroyed, 493; a man tarred and feathered, 493; the Boston port bill, 511; other stringent measures adopted for curbing the spirit of liberty in Boston, 512-526; Gage sent to Boston with four regiments, 523; closing of its port by the British ministry, vii. 34; patriotism of its citizens, vii. 34; meeting in Faneuil Hall, 35; decides that the tea shall not be paid for, 36; circular letter to the colonies, 36; General Gage arrives as governor, 37; effect of the port act upon the people, 42; Parliament allows their lives to be taken with impunity, 43; address to Hutchinson on his departure, 46; a majority of merchants engage to import nothing from England, 47; the letter from Philadelphia received with impatience, 47; the people do not regret being singled out for ministerial vengeance, 48; they receive sympathy from Baltimore, New Jersey, and South Carolina, 50, 51; especially from Virginia, 53, 54; the cause of Boston becomes the cause of all the colonies, 55; blockade of Boston begins, 5; its melancholy effects, 56; business of all kinds at an end, 57; more troops arrive, 62, 63; firmness of the people, 64, 65; at a great meeting the royalist party exert themselves to the utmost, 68; the town, by an immense majority, sanction the proceedings of the committee of correspondence, 69; Gage's foolish and futile proclamation excites only indignation, 70; arrival of two more regiments and a 64-gun ship, 70; Gage, with all this force, dreads the town meetings, 70, 71; Boston is supplied with needful articles of provision by both the Carolinas, 72, 73; by Connecticut, 73; by the French inhabitants of Quebec, 74; by Delaware, Maryland, and Virginia, 74, 75; the "regulating act" requires Boston to pay for the tea thrown overboard, 96; firmness of Boston, 98; its earnest appeal to the other towns, 98; cheering answer of Pepperell, 99; military review at Boston, 101; the cadets return the king's standard, 101; delegates from three counties meet in Boston, 109; this convention denounces the recent acts of Parliament, 110; the supreme court not allowed to proceed under the regulating act, 111; seizure of powder at Somerville, 114; thousands of men in arms start for the relief of Boston, 115, 120, 122; the wealthy royalists collect there, 122; Gage erects fortifications on Boston Neck, 122; the selectmen remonstrate, but in vain, 122; the carpenters, notwithstanding they share the general suffering, refuse to construct barracks for the army, 124; Gage seizes private military stores, 142; outrageous conduct of the soldiery, 142; the citizens apply to congress for advice, 142; their magnanimity, 142, 185; Lord Chat-ham moves in parliament for the removal of the forces from Boston, 196; the motion rejected, 203; the army in Boston to be increased, 244; contributions for the relief

of Boston from all the colonies, 251; some relief from England, 251; commemoration of the Boston massacre, 253, *et seq.*; oration of Warren, 254, 255; British officers present, 254; their outrageous conduct, 256; British troops sent from Boston to Concord, 288; their shameful repulse, 304; the British army besieged in Boston, 310; many of the people permitted to leave Boston, 320; this permission withdrawn, 321; great sufferings of those who remain, 321; affair at Grape Island, 362; more troops arrive, 362; skirmish near Noddle's Island, 363; the light-house burned, 363; Boston is strictly beleaguered, 363 (see *Bunker Hill*); positions of the British army in July, 1775, viii. 42; of the American army, 42, 43; number of the British, 42; of the Americans, 44; number and condition of the inhabitants, 42; Boston town meeting held in Concord, 48; British suffer from inaction and sickness, 67; Gage cuts down the liberty tree, 68; the Old South turned into a riding-school, 292; Faneuil Hall a playhouse, 292; occupations of the besieged army, 292; Boston cannonaded, 293; aspect of the town, 295; the British army compelled to evacuate it, 298; despair of the loyalists and refugees, 298; the British army leave behind ample supplies, 302; American army enters Boston, 303; joy of the inhabitants, 303, 304; condition of the place, 303; its present prosperity, 307.

Boston committee of correspondence, their secret journals still exist, vi. 428, *note*; their pledge of secrecy, 430; they send letters to the other towns of the colony, 433; the towns respond, 437, *et seq.*, 446; the committee urge union, 466; they are joined by the committees of five adjoining towns, 475, 477; the matter of the disposal of the tea is left in their hands, 475; the tea-ships, and their cargoes and consignees, in the hands of this committee, 475; the tea thrown overboard, 486, 487; the committee in active correspondence with the other colonies, 488; they prepare the way for a congress of all the colonies, 507, 508; their circular letter, 508.

"Boston Gazette," its bold utterances against the revenue act, vi. 97, 98, 194, 199, 210, 230, 232, 235, 247, 249, 252; denounced in the British parliament, 107; quoted 309, 310, 329; Samuel Adams, in this paper, solemnly contemplates a resort to the last appeal, 407; contemplates independence, 426, 427; urges resistance, 466, *note*; calls for union, 489; and for a general congress of the states, 489.

Boston light-house burned, viii. 48; repaired, 49; skirmish there, 49.

Boston massacre commemorated, vii. 253, *et seq.*; shameful behavior of British officers, 256.

Boston port bill arrives, vii. 34; is widely circulated, 42; its influence in Boston, 34; in Salem and Newburyport, 38; in New

- York, 40, 41; in Rhode Island and Connecticut, 42; in Philadelphia, 43.
- Botetourt, Lord, appointed governor of Virginia, vi. 177; a wise choice, 177; arrives in his province, 228; is pleased with its condition and the people are pleased with him, 228, 229; meets the legislature of Virginia, 279; resolves of that legislature, 280; the governor is displeased and dissolves the assembly, 281; he promises a partial repeal of the obnoxious acts, 315; his death, 378.
- Bougainville assists in the defence of Quebec, iv. 331, 334, 336.
- Boundaries between the English and French colonies, iii. 339, *et seq.*
- Boundaries, new, of Massachusetts, v. 163.
- Boundaries, discussions respecting, x. 576, 579, 584; the matter settled, 587; marked on the map, 591.
- Bouquet, Colonel Henry, in Carolina, iv. 256, 270; in the expedition against fort Duquesne, 309; his toilsome march to relieve fort Pitt, v. 129; attacked by Indians, 130; repels the attack, and relieves Pittsburgh, 131; his expedition to the Ohio country, 221.
- Bourlamarque, a French colonel, iv. 238; wounded at Ticonderoga, 303; abandons Fort Carillon, 323; in the battle of Sillery, near Quebec, 359.
- Bonvouloir, (see *De Bonvouloir*.)
- Bowdoin, James, a loyal man, vi. 202, 212; his statement touching the Boston massacre, 347; advises the appointment of Franklin, 374; drafts the reply of the council to Hutchinson, 448; proves parliamentary taxation to be unconstitutional, 453; negatived as a councillor, vii. 48; chosen to congress, but cannot attend, 64; letter of General Lee to him, ix. 204, 205.
- Bowler, Metcalf, of Rhode Island, comes to Boston with good news, vii. 35; writes good news to Massachusetts, 316.
- Bowman, Joseph, a captain of backwoodsmen, x. 195, 196.
- Bracket, Anne, her escape from the Indians, ii. 110.
- Braddock, Edward, major-general and commander-in-chief, his character, iv. 170; arrives in the Chesapeake, 177; holds a congress of American governors, 177; recommends taxation by parliament, 178; his contempt of American troops, 184, 185; his delays, 184, 185, 186; insults the country, 185, praises Franklin, 184; surprised, utterly defeated and killed, 187-191; his grave, 192; consternation which followed, 192.
- Bradford, William, the pilgrim, i. 311; governor of Plymouth colony, 314; Winthrop visits him, 364.
- Bradstreet, colonel John, provisions Oswego, iv. 236; his good conduct at Ticonderoga, 301; marches against fort Frontenac, 305; captures that fort, 306; his expedition, v. 210; makes peace with the Indians, 211.
- Bradstreet, Simon, sent to England in behalf of Massachusetts, ii. 75; counsels submission to the king, 88; governor of Massachusetts, 446.
- Braintree, Mr., denounces the courts of admiralty, v. 329.
- Brandenburg, embraces the system of Calvin, x. 81; its elector becomes king of Prussia, 84.
- Brandywine, Washington on the north side of it, ix. 394; he sends his baggage to Chester, 394; prepares to dispute the passage, 395; duty assigned to Sullivan, 395, 396; Sullivan disobeys and commits serious blunders, resulting in the defeat of the American army, 396, 397; Washington arrests the pursuit of the right wing, 398; gallant bearing of Stirling, 397; of Wayne, 398; of Maxwell, 399; Howe's plan of battle fails, 400; he cannot pursue the American army, 400; loss of the Americans, 399; of the British, 400.
- Brant, Joseph, the Mohawk chief, his interview with lord George Germain, viii. 301; rouses the fury of his countrymen against the Americans, ix. 321; urges them to remove farther west, 359.
- Brattleborough in Vermont, settled from Massachusetts, iii. 370.
- Braxton, Carter, his scheme of a constitution for Virginia, viii. 435.
- Bray, Thomas, commissary, procures the establishment by law in Maryland of the church of England, iii. 31, 32.
- Brébeuf, Jean de, his toilsome journey from Quebec to the Huron country, iii. 122; his self-inflicted penances, 124; his visions, 124; his labors, 125; visits the neutral nation, 129; his martyrdom, 140.
- Breed's Hill, Colonel Prescott has orders to occupy it, vii. 409 (see *Bunker Hill*).
- Bressani, Joseph, a prisoner among the Iroquois, and cruelly tortured, iii. 134.
- Breton, Cape, settled by the French, iii. 235 (see *Louisburg*).
- Breton colony in Acadia, iv. 193.
- Brevard, Ephraim, a leading patriot in North Carolina, vii. 371, 373; his honorable character, 371.
- Brewer, Jonathan, of Waltham, in Massachusetts, proposes to invade Canada by way of the upper Kennebec, vii. 323; part of his regiment fight on Bunker Hill, 418.
- Brewster, William, the pilgrim, i. 300, 302; embarks for America, 306.
- Breymann, a Brunswick lieutenant-colonel, sent to the support of Baum, ix. 384; conflict at Bennington, 385; his hasty retreat, 385; in the battle of Bemis's Heights, 417; is mortally wounded, 417; his troops surrender, 418.
- Brickett, James, lieutenant-colonel in Frye's regiment, in Bunker Hill battle, vii. 411.
- Bridge, Colonel Ebenezer, with part of his regiment, went on Bunker Hill with Prescott, vii. 408.
- Brigadiers elected by congress, viii. 30, 31.
- Bristol in England, elects Edmund Burke to parliament, vii. 176.



Britain ruled by an aristocracy, x. 117.  
 British army in America in 1774, no longer amenable to the civil law, vii. 43; shut up in Boston with inadequate supplies, 318; mortification of the officers, 318; they calumniate the Americans, 318, 319.  
 British colony planted in Nova Scotia, iv. 45.  
 British constitution, solidity of the, v. 97.  
 British fleet attack Gloucester, viii. 65; destroys Portland, 113; reduces Norfolk to ashes, 230, 231; cannot remain in Boston harbor, 297; sails out of it, 302; at anchor several days in Nantasket road, 302, 356; a fleet from Cork arrives in Cape Fear river, 357; unsuccessful attack on Charleston, 404-410; its severe losses, 411; sails for New York, 412; a fleet arrives before Quebec, 424, 425; fleet of Lord Howe arrives at Sandy Hook, 458.  
 British institutions developed in America, x. 37; British commissioners sent to America, 122; their mission wholly deceptive, 123; their false representations, 125; they exceed their powers, 125; a British officer leads the savage Indians in scenes of massacre, 137, 152; the British government justifies and praises Indian butcheries, 138; approves and justifies treachery, 378; threatens "the extremes of war" to the Americans, 151; these threats fulfilled, 152, 223, 226, 227, 231, 307, 327, 328, 339, 343, 395, 457, 458, 489, 500, 504, 505, 560, 562; the ancient affection for the mother country washed out in blood, 140.  
 British officers, their cruelty, x. 152, 198, 307, 311, 328, 334, 343, 457, 560; a marked change in their conduct after the accession of Lord Shelburne to power, 562.  
 British people, address of congress to them, vii. 148.  
 British standard joined by many people in Virginia, viii. 226.  
 British troops, their sufferings from the attack on Bunker Hill, viii. 25; great loss of officers, 26; positions of the army in July, 1775, 41; its numbers, 41; its numbers in Feb. 1776, 292; Washington plans an attack, 292; he takes possession of Dorchester Heights, 293; the British army unsuspecting of peril, 295; their astonishment at beholding the American works, 296; contrast between them and the Americans, 296; a council of war advises to evacuate Boston, 298; the British arms disgraced, 299; hasty departure of the British army, 302, 356; to be concentrated at New York, 356; Clinton, re-enforced from Ireland, is to reduce Charleston and the southern colonies, 357; Clinton, with a body of troops invades South Carolina, 395; lands on Long Island, 396, 397; his dilatory proceedings and inactivity, 399; withdraws his troops, 412; re-enforcements arrive to the British troops in Canada, 424; they pursue the retreating Americans, 425, *et seq.*; their murderous attack on the men of Lexington, vii. 293; enter

Concord in a hostile manner, 298; they fire on the people, 302; are driven out of Concord, 303, 304; their retreat becomes a flight, 360; are pursued through Lincoln, Lexington and West Cambridge, 305-308; get back to Boston, 309; their great loss, 309; are besieged in Boston, 310; dare not attempt a sally, 317; straitened quarters and scanty supplies, 318; British flag struck on the ocean to the Americans for the first time, 341; the British army in Boston receives re-enforcements, 362, 389; a large force lands in Charlestown on the day of Bunker Hill, 413; re-enforcements arrive, 420; number of the British troops engaged, 420; first attack on the American line, 422; their slow advance, 423; precipitate retreat, 424; second attack of the British, 425; are repulsed in greater disorder, 425; great slaughter of their right wing, 426; most of their officers killed or wounded, 426; third attack, 429; the redoubt carried by the bayonet, 429, 430; the Americans retreat unpursued, 431; the immense loss of the British, 431, 432; on Staten Island, ix. 33; they land on Long Island, 83; twenty thousand British and Hessians attack four thousand Americans, 90; the Americans are overpowered, 94; the British insult their prisoners, 97, 98; approach the American lines at Brooklyn, 101; do not perceive the retreat of the Americans, 104; enter the American works, 104; land on New York Island, 119; obtain possession of the city, 120; their cruelty, 129, 130; land on Frog's Neck, 175; their march to White Plains, 177-179; a partial engagement at Chatterton Hill, 181; overrun New Jersey, 194, *et seq.*; take possession of Rhode Island, 200; their brutal conduct, 216; in New York, how they spent their time, 226, 227; their signal reverses at Trenton, 232-235; and at Princeton, 247-250; the results of the campaign inauspicious to them, 254; General Howe prepares to march on Philadelphia, 351; is out-generalled by Washington, 352; evacuates New Jersey, 356; embarks for Philadelphia, 391; lands at the Head of Elk, 393; battle of Brandywine, 396, *et seq.*; British troops enter Philadelphia, 404; they cross over into New Jersey, 423; battle of Germantown, 425-428; the British abandon the highlands on the Hudson, 429; they take the forts on the Delaware, 434, 435; comfort of the British in Philadelphia, 465; their passion for amusement, 465; their licentiousness, 465, 466.  
 Broeck, Abraham Ten, a patriot of the New York Assembly, vii. 210.  
 Broglie, Count de, a friend of America, ix. 70; aspires to Washington's place, 284.  
 Brooke, Lord Robert, proposes to remove to America, i. 384; a proprietary of Connecticut, 395.  
 Brookfield, Mass., set on fire and deserted, ii. 103.



- Brooklyn, in Connecticut, sends provisions to Boston in 1774, vii. 73, 74.
- Brooklyn, on Long Island, how defended, ix. 82; Howe dares not assault those defences, 95; intends to take them by regular approaches, 101; the fortifications and the island evacuated, 103, 104.
- Brooks, John, a physician in Reading, captain of the minute-men of that town, at Concord battle, vii. 304; as major in Colonel Bridge's regiment took part in the battle of Bunker Hill, 414; afterwards governor of Massachusetts, 414.
- Brooks, John, his statements touching Lee's conduct at Monmouth, x. 131, *note*.
- Brooks, Colonel John, of Massachusetts, at White Plains, ix. 181; in the battle of Bemis's Heights, 417.
- Broome, of the New York Congress, viii. 439.
- Broughton, Captain Nicholas, of Marblehead, cruises against the commerce of the enemy, viii. 69.
- Brown, John, of Pittsfield, Massachusetts, announces a plan for seizing Ticonderoga, vii. 271 *a*; unites with others in the enterprise, 338, 339; bears information of the surrender to the continental Congress, 341; his expedition against Ticonderoga, ix. 408.
- Brown, John, slain at Lexington, vii. 294.
- Brown, John and Joseph, of Providence, take the lead in the burning of the "Gaspee," vi. 419.
- Brown, John, of Providence, a merchant, Washington applies to him for powder, viii. 61.
- Brown, Major John, sent into Canada to obtain information, viii. 177; brings back an encouraging report, 178; is not able to join Allen, 183; is esteemed able by Montgomery, 184; he and Livingston capture Chambly, 186; they repel Maclean, 187; at Quebec leads on a feigned attack, 206.
- Brown, Jonas, wounded at Concord, vii. 302.
- Brown, Lieutenant-Colonel (British), defeated at Augusta by Marion, x. 333; his extreme cruelty, 334, 489.
- Brown, Robert, leader of the English Independents, i. 287.
- Browne, John and Samuel, adherents of Episcopacy in Salem, i. 348; sent back to England, and why, 350; publish in England ill reports of the colony, 350.
- Brunswick, the king applies for troops to, viii. 255, *et seq.*; character of the reigning duke, 256; of Prince Ferdinand, 256, 257; he approves the British proposal, 257; the duke concurs, 257, 258; chaffering on the price of troops, 258; price of every one killed, 258; tariff for the wounded, 258; pay and subsidy, 258; numbers furnished by Brunswick, 258, 259; future life of Ferdinand, 259; his incompetence cost Prussia a fearful overthrow in 1806, 259; his inglorious end, 259; number of Brunswickers sent to America, 269, 270.
- Brunswick, Duke of, his shabby conduct, ix. 315; his extreme meanness, 474; Brunswick troops under Riedesel in the battle of Hubbardton, ix. 369, 370; in the battle of Bennington, 384, 385; in the battle of Bemis's Heights, 409, 416; their surrender at Saratoga, 420; the Brunswick princes wish them not to be sent home, 475.
- Brunswick in Maine burned by the Indians, iii. 335.
- Brutality of British soldiers, ix. 216, 560, 562.
- Bryan, George, vice-president of Pennsylvania, hostile to slavery, x. 359, 360.
- Buccaneers, their origin, i. 214.
- Buckingham county in Virginia, instructions to its delegates in convention, viii. 376.
- Buckingham, Earl of (Robert Hobart), his extravagant words in the House of Lords, vi. 500.
- Buckminster, William, of Barre in Massachusetts, in Bunker Hill battle, vii. 418; is dangerously wounded, 432.
- Buford, Colonel, his dastardly flight, x. 307; massacre of his regiment, 307.
- Bulkeley, Rev. Peter, leads in the settlement of Concord, i. 382.
- Bulkeley, Peter, son of the preceding, agent of the colony in England, ii. 112; returns, 122.
- Bull, Captain, disconcerts Andros's attempt to get possession of the fort at Saybrook, ii. 404.
- Bull, Henry, restores the charter of Rhode Island, ii. 448.
- Bullitt, Thomas, of Virginia, his bravery, iv. 309.
- Bunker Hill, battle of, vii. 407, *et seq.*; preparations for it, 408; the British general, Gage, intended to occupy the hill, 407; the movement anticipated, 407; the execution of the design intrusted to Prescott, 408; the prayer before commencing the march, 408; the redoubt constructed, 409; day-break, 410; surprise of the British, 410; armed vessels and a battery on Copp's Hill fire on the Americans, 410; Prescott strengthens his defences, 410; sends for re-enforcements and provisions, 411; no refreshments are sent, and no supplies of any kind, 412; Gage orders an attack, 411; two thousand British troops land at Moulton's Point in Charlestown, 413; Howe halts and sends back for more troops, 413; Prescott prepares to oppose them, 414; the defences incomplete, 414; small supply of powder, 415; the regiments of Stark and Reed are sent to the hill, 416; Seth Pomeroy arrives as a volunteer, 417; Joseph Warren comes a volunteer, 417, 418; portions of Little's, Brewer's, Nixon's, and Whitcomb's regiments arrive, 418; troops from Connecticut, 408, 410, 414, 418; the artillery-men desert their field-pieces, 418; number of the British troops engaged, 420; number of the provincial troops in the battle, 421; free negroes fight side by side with white men, 421; Charlestown burned, 422; terrific grandeur of the scene, 422;

- first attack of the British, and their precipitate retreat, 424; joy of the Americans, 424; second attack and another hasty retreat, 425; utter disorder of the British, 425; great slaughter in their ranks, 426; unerring accuracy of American aim, 426; horrors of the scene, 426; defeat of the British certain had the powder not been utterly exhausted, 427; reduced to a single artillery cartridge, 429; the redoubt carried by the bayonet, 430; retreat of the Americans, 430; the British loss, 431, 432; American loss, 432; fall of Warren, 433; his exalted character, 433; Gage's opinion of the battle, 434; Howe's attack condemned, viii. 25; effect of the battle in Europe, 100, 102.
- Bunker Hill Monument and the smiling scenes around it, viii. 306, 307.
- Burgh, Hussey, in the Irish House of Commons, denounces the American war, viii. 170.
- Burgoyne, John, appointed major-general of the army under Howe, vii. 245; his character and talents, 245, 246; he is rebuked by Luttrell, 246; lands in Boston, 362, 379, 389; his estimate of the British troops in the battle of Bunker Hill, 420; observes the battle from Copp's Hill, 422; arrives in Canada, viii. 431; pursues the retreating Americans, 432; his correspondence with Lee, 46, 220; plan of his campaign, ix. 322; arrives at Quebec, 361; his preparations for invading the states, 362; his speech to the savages, 363, 364; the reply, 364; his regulations about scalping, 364; in a proclamation he threatens to let loose the savages, 365; amount of his force, 366; he moves his army up the lake, 366; and occupies Ticonderoga and Mount Independence, 367; his high reputation in England, 367; Carleton refuses to assist him, 370; his thanksgiving, 370; his difficulties, 371; his mistake in the choice of a road, 371; his delays, 371; his troops dispirited, 371; his opinion of the Indians, 371; he resolves to use them, 371; murder of Jane McCrea, 371; Burgoyne forgives the murderer, 372; approves of the Indian barbarities, 382; takes a pledge of them to remain, 383; fixes the time for arriving at Albany, 383; sends an expedition under Baum to Bennington, 383; the expedition totally frustrated, 385; Indians leave in disgust, 386; dismay in the camp, 386; Burgoyne attempts to force his way to Albany, 407; his slow progress, 408; first battle of Bemis's Heights, 409; Burgoyne's army utterly crippled, 411; his condition becomes dangerous, 414; the Indians leave him, 414; waits for co-operation from New York, 415; second battle of Bemis's Heights, 415; Burgoyne exposes himself fearlessly, 417; orders a retreat, 418; finds himself surrounded, 419; he capitulates, 420; amount of his losses, 420; causes of this great result, 421; his captive troops remain in the environs of Boston, 466; he goes to England on parole, 466; his troops detained, and why, x. 126.
- Burke, Edmund, shares the opinions of the Board of Trade in regard to taxing America, iv. 375; in the service of that Board, 375, *note*; spares the reputation of Halifax, 375, *note*; secretary to the Marquis of Rockingham, v. 302; his exalted character, 302; quoted, 73, 74, 91, 100, 102, 190; obstinately maintains the power of Parliament to tax America, 397, 398; advocates the reception of the petition of Congress, 400; founds the new tory party of England, 418; bitterly ridicules Grenville, 455; his sarcasm on Lord Chatham, vi. 46; his inconsistency, 59; denounces, while partly approving, the plan of taxing America, 78; his prophecy respecting American taxation, 78; sympathizes with the enemies of liberty, 216; inveighs against Lord Camden, 231, 232; justifies the Massachusetts assembly, 232; opposes Lord North, 253; opposes parliamentary reform, 320; Burke and Wedderburn are allies, 357, 362; prescribes more aristocracy as the cure of evils caused by aristocracy, 361; condemns the system of the ministry in regard to America, 362; elected agent of New York, 385; does not oppose the coercion of America, 510; strongly condemns the Boston port bill, 513; his great speech against taxing America, 519-521; his unfortunate position, 522; protests against the employment of Indians against the Americans, 118; his despondency, 175; he is elected from Bristol, 176; follows the lead of Rockingham, and is not willing to accept the conditions proposed by the continental Congress, 192; is opposed to hostile measures, 218; his interview with Franklin, 263; he reveres Franklin to the last, 263; he brings forward his plan for conciliation, 265; his splendid eulogy on New England, 266-270; misjudges in regard to the steadiness of American troops, viii. 99; brings forward a bill for composing the troubles, 168, 169; eulogizes Montgomery, 212; his position in 1776 not tenable, ix. 141; applauds Fox, 144; his secession from public business, 146; his opinion of Franklin, 285, 286; denounces the war with America, 324; condemns the employment of Indians, 365; desires peace at any rate, 478; his utterances in Parliament, x. 39, 246; is hopeless as to the abolition of slavery, 347; favors peace with America, 520; is made paymaster of the forces, 535; opposes parliamentary reform, 549; his ungenerous language towards Shelburne, 553.
- Burke, William, would relinquish Canada, iv. 364; a friend of liberty quoted, vi. 51, 361.
- Burnet, William, governor of Massachusetts, insists on a fixed salary, iii. 391; dies, 392.
- Burr, Aaron, a volunteer in Arnold's march through the wilderness to Quebec, viii. 191; aide-de-camp to Montgomery, 206; aid to General Putnam, on New York Island, ix. 121.

- Burroughs, George, accused of witchcraft, iii. 87; his trial, 91; his execution, 92.
- Burroughs, Leaman, alarms Port Royal, S.C., iii. 327.
- Bute, Earl of (John Stuart), his relation to the royal family, iv. 244; his character, 244; George II. despises him, 245; Townshend despises him, 246; he assists Murray, 246; and Pitt, 247; rejoices in the elevation of Pitt, 275; recommends Abercrombie as commander-in-chief in America, 294; the young king's speech written by him, 383; admitted to the privy council and to the cabinet, 384; a timid, imbecile, ignorant man, 388; becomes secretary of state, 391; becomes first lord of the treasury, 438; decorated with the order of the garter, 442; his perfidy towards the Duke of Bedford, 443; not the author of the stamp act, v. 83, *note*; opposes its repeal, 88, *note*; resigns office, 94; his contempt of Pitt, 95; but wishes to see Pitt in office, 143; retires into the country, 146; his aid solicited by Bedford and Grenville, 427, 428.
- Butler, Colonel John, inflames the Indians against the Americans, ix. 377; leads a party of Tories, 378.
- Butler, William, of North Carolina, arrested as a "regulator," vi. 188; a reward offered for killing him, 397.
- Butterfield, Major, surrenders the fort at the Cedars, viii. 427.
- Buttrick, Major John, of Concord, vii. 302; gives order to fire, 303.
- Byllinge, Edward, and other Quakers, purchase West New Jersey, ii. 355; his unreasonable claim, 361.
- Bynge, George, the solitary "no" in the House of Commons on the Boston Port Bill, vi. 512.
- Byron, Admiral, succeeds Lord Howe in command of the British fleet, x. 149; his operations in the West Indies, 295.
- C.**
- Cabeza de Vaca lands with a body of Spaniards in Florida, i. 396; his adventures there, 40, *et seq.*; traverses Texas and New Mexico, 40, *et seq.*; returns to Spain, 41.
- Cabinet of Great Britain, its divisions and jealousies, iv. 66, 70; plans for taxing America are delayed in consequence, 86; imbecility of the cabinet, 101; end of Newcastle's cabinet, 247 (see *Ministry*); reorganization of the cabinet, 438.
- Cabinet of George III. in 1763; names of its members and their characters, v. 79, 80; the triumvirate ministry, 96; end of that ministry, 142; a strong cabinet, 147, 148; this cabinet overturned 239 (see *Ministry*).
- Cabot, John, his commission for discovery, i. 10; discovers the Western continent, 11.
- Cabot, Sebastian, discovers the continent of North America, i. 11; his second voyage, 12; skirts the coasts of the United States, 13; deprived of his due renown, 14; his later years, 15; "the great seaman," 15; too little known, 15; proposes a north-east passage to India, 78.
- Cadillac, de la Motte, conducts a colony to Detroit, iii. 194; is governor of Louisiana, 347; visits Illinois, 348.
- Cadwalader, Lambert, of Philadelphia, at Fort Washington, ix. 190, 191; is unable to co-operate with Washington in crossing the Delaware, 228, 229; from Bristol crosses that river to Burlington, 239; at Croswick, 243; advises to attack the British, x. 127.
- Cahnawaga tribe of Indians, iii. 245.
- Caldwell, James, minister of the gospel, murdered by a British soldier, x. 372, 373.
- Calef, Robert, his exposure of the witchcraft delusion, iii. 97.
- Calendar regulated in 1752, iv. 84.
- California discovered, i. 40g.
- Callieres, governor of Canada, iii. 179, 194.
- Calloway, Richard, a pioneer settler of Kentucky, vii. 366, 368.
- Calvert, Benedict, son of Lord Baltimore, renounces the Romish Church, iii. 33.
- Calvert, Cecil. (See *Baltimore, second lord.*)
- Calvert, Cecil, secretary of Maryland, in London, his letters quoted, v. 78, 82, 86, 190, 249; is strongly opposed to taxing the colonies, 249, *note*.
- Calvert, Charles. (See *Baltimore, third lord.*)
- Calvert, C., secretary of Maryland, advises taxation, iv. 250, 380.
- Calvert, Frederic, sixth Lord Baltimore, his character, iv. 137; relation of Maryland to him, 137; his prerogatives and revenue, 138.
- Calvert, Leonard, conducts a colony to Maryland, i. 245; his mild government, 248; an insurrection compels him to flee, 255.
- Calvert, Sir George. (See *Baltimore, first lord.*)
- Calvin, John, his influence on the settlement and destinies of New England, i. 266; afraid of too much free inquiry, 275; parallel between him and Luther, 274, 277, 278; influence of his system on the American mind, ii. 459, *et seq.*; his system compared with that of Luther, iv. 152; "a church without a bishop, a state without a king," 153; its wide influence, its mighty and deep impression, its living energy, 153; teaching the natural equality of man, it was always favorable to freedom, 154; it moulded and fashioned American institutions, 154; its tenets as taught by Jonathan Edwards, 155, *et seq.*
- Calvinism, political meaning of, ii. 459, 460; its influence on the institutions of Massachusetts, 461, 463; of Connecticut, 462; its essential and distinctive traits, iv. 153, *et seq.*; the inspirer of human hope and parent of freedom, 154; always favorable to intelligence, purity of life, freedom, and courage, vi. 192; spirit of liberty thence derived, ix. 501; four great teachers of four great nationalities arose from it, 501; how it differs from the philosophy of Descartes, 501, 502.

- Calvinist, Samuel Adams is one, vi. 192, 267.
- Cambridge, its response to the Boston circular, in opposition to British aggression, vi. 438; again, 456; and once more, 475, 477.
- Cambridge, in Massachusetts, the men of Middlesex come in arms to this place, vii. 114, 115; provincial congress meet there, 154; British troops pass through it, 289; outrages committed there, 303; headquarters of the American army established there, 313, 315, 321, 325, 405, 408, 420.
- Cambridge platform, i. 444; its lasting influence, 444.
- Camden, Earl of (Charles Pratt), maintains that Parliament has no right to tax America, v. 403; opposes the declaratory bill, 446-448 (see *Declaratory Bill*); he wishes the elective franchise more equally diffused, 447; is lord chancellor under Lord Chatham, vi. 22; his indiscretion, 44; consents to the taxation of America by Parliament, 58, 59; denounces New York, 65; is thoroughly in accord with the enemies of America, 177, 178, *note*; is at a loss what to do, 182, 183; his ingratitude towards Lord Chatham, 214; is afraid of Chatham, 268, 276; urges the repeal of the Revenue Acts, 276; dismissed from office, 324; favors equal representation in Parliament, 361; favors the cause of liberty in the colonies, 519; protests against the violent policy of the ministry in 1774, vii. 178; thinks justice on the side of America, 181; desires the settlement of the controversy on the conditions proposed by Congress, 191; contends that Parliament has no right to tax America, 202; and that the Americans do well to resist, 202; denies any responsibility for the duty on tea, although he consented to the measure, 226; justifies the union of the Americans, and predicts the independence of the colonies, 262.
- Camden, S.C., battle of, x. 319; the two armies meet, 320; favorable position of the British, 321; dispositions for battle, 321; total defeat of the Americans, 323; great loss of the British, 323; the place abandoned by the British, 488.
- Cameron, deputy Indian agent, shrinks from employing the Cherokees against the colonists, viii. 89; inflames the savages against the Americans, ix. 160, 162.
- Cameron, James, in the convention of Pennsylvania, ix. 170.
- Cameronians, their sufferings, ii. 410.
- Camp of liberty around Boston, vii. 321; its want of able generals, 321; want of perfect union, 322; want of efficient discipline, 322; want of military equipments, 322.
- Campbell, Arthur, a patriot in South Western Virginia, vii. 195.
- Campbell, Donald, after Montgomery's fall, orders a retreat, viii. 208.
- Campbell, Farquhar, a Highland settler in North Carolina, viii. 96.
- Campbell, Indian agent of the British, arrested by Wooster, and sent out of Canada, viii. 419.
- Campbell, John, of the Scoto-Irish church on the Holston river, vii. 195.
- Campbell, John, an insurgent Highlander, is killed in battle, viii. 288, 289.
- Campbell, Lieutenant-Colonel (British), takes Savannah, x. 285; and Augusta, 286.
- Campbell, Lord William, governor of South Carolina, vii. 337; viii. 84; unfit to govern, 84; his rash conduct, 85; denies the existence of grievances, 85; urges the ministry to employ force against the patriots, 89; his arrest proposed, 89; he dissolves the assembly and takes refuge on board a man-of-war, 90; thinks it would be easy to reduce the Carolinas and Georgia, 91, 92; urges Sir Peter Parker to attack Charleston, 357; is present during the attack, 404; receives a mortal wound, 411.
- Campbell, Major (British), a prisoner at Yorktown, x. 520.
- Campbell, Neil, governor of New Jersey, ii. 412.
- Campbell, William, in the battle of Point Pleasant, vii. 169; marches with a rifle company to the relief of the tide-water in Virginia, viii. 224.
- Campbell, William, of North Carolina, viii. 284; "the famous Colonel William," raises a regiment of backwoodsmen from beyond the mountains, x. 332; commands at King's Mountain, 336, 338; severe action there, and total defeat of a strong British force, 339; his humanity towards house-burners and assassins, 340; the turning point of the war, 340; he is summoned to join Greene in South Carolina, 470, 475, 477; his brave conduct at the battle of Guilford, 479; at Hobkirk's Hill, 486; and at Eutaw Springs, 493.
- Canada, settled by the French, i. 27; conquered by the Kirks, 334; restored, 335; conquest of Canada first proposed in New England, ii. 88; its population in 1679, 417; invasion of the Iroquois, 418-424; granted to the Hundred Associates, iii. 119; religious zeal the motive for colonization, 119; the Franciscans, 119; the Jesuits, 120; their privations, 128 (see *Jesuits and Missions*); insecurity of the colonists, 148; harassed by the Mohawks, 148; the Hundred Associates resign the province to the king, 148; supposed to include the Kennebec valley, 154; New England fails in the attempt to conquer it, 184-186; another failure, 223; supposed to include the whole basin of the St. Lawrence, 339; Upper Canada claimed by the English, 340; conquest of Canada proposed, 464; the design abandoned, and why, 464; iv. 30, 31, 165, 184; regarded by some French statesmen as an incumbrance, 72, 73; its population in 1754, 129; desire to conquer it, 148, 182; Loudoun fails to conquer it, 240; scarcity in Canada, 260; the English aristocracy could not conquer it, 270; Pitt determines on its conquest, 291; New England enters on the affair with great zeal, 292; the country cut off



- from intercourse with France, 293; misery of the inhabitants, 293; the country exhausted, 306; its weakness, 320; population in 1759, 320; surrender of Quebec, 338, 360; discussion in England about retaining Canada, 363, *et seq.*; great errors committed in its early history, 458; not a printing-press in the country, 458, *note*; ignorance of the people, 458, *note*; the cession of Canada hastens the independence of the British colonies, 460; further results, 460; its boundaries restricted, v. 135, 163; its former laws and usages abolished by the British government, 212; misconduct of the royal officers, 213; affairs of, vi. 17, 55; an immense territory included under this name, vii. 156; the Catholics living there partly enfranchised, 156, 157; the French system of law restored, 157; the Canadian nobility conciliated, 157; the Catholic worship established by law, 158; the clergy well satisfied, 158; Indians in Canada, a missionary sent to conciliate their friendship to America, 279; the occupation of it becomes to the united colonies an act of self-defence, viii. 176; an invasion of it resolved on by Washington, 68; the French nobility and Catholic clergy favor the English rule, 177; the peasantry welcome an invasion, 177; Schuyler sends an emissary to obtain information, 177; and makes some preparation for the enterprise, 177, 178; the province invaded by the Northern army, 181 (see *Northern Army*); Canadian clergy and nobility unfriendly to the American cause, 417; the people become hostile, 421; Congress sends commissioners to Canada, 423; they advise the evacuation of the province, 426; Congress reluctant, 426; plan for conquering, x. 176; its voluntary cession to the United States suggested, 540; the cession cannot take place, 541.
- Canadians, iv. 188, 210, 211, 238, 239, 252, 257, 263, 266; assist in the defence of Ticonderoga, 302; and in the defence of Quebec, 325, 328, 330; they waver and fly, 335, 337; General Gage endeavors to raise them against the Americans, vii. 117, 118; address of the continental Congress to them, 159; another address of the same to the same, 381.
- "Canceaux," a British armed ship, bombards Portland, vii. 341.
- Cancello, Louis, missionary to Florida, i. 59.
- Candor is possible in writing history, and why, viii. 118.
- Cannibalism of the Indians, iii. 134, 145, 284, iv. 95, 97, 312.
- Cannon, seizure of, near Newport, vii. 183; used by the British in their attack on Bunker Hill, 410-428; a large supply obtained by the Americans at Ticonderoga, 340.
- Canonchet, Sachem of the Narragansetts, ii. 102; his spirit of revenge, 102, 105; his death, 106.
- Canonicus, Sachem of the Narragansetts, i. 399.
- Cape Ann, visited by Pring, i. 114; a settlement there, 321, 339.
- Cape Cod, the first spot in New England trod by Englishmen, i. 112.
- Cape Fear River, arrival of British land and naval forces in, viii. 357.
- Cape Horn, origin of the name, ii. 276.
- Capellen, Van der, Baron, his reasons for refusing to England the Scottish brigade, viii. 251, 252.
- Captives in war, how treated by Indians, iii. 283, 284; among Indians unwilling to return to their former homes, v. 222; striking instances of this, 222.
- Cardross, Lord, leads an emigration to South Carolina, ii. 173; returns to Europe, 174.
- Carillon (see *Fort Carillon*).
- Carleton, Guy (afterwards Lord Dorchester), colonel of grenadiers in Wolfe's army, iv. 325; is wounded, 335; at the siege of Havana, 444; governor of Canada, vi. 51; his advice, 51, 52; supports the views of the British ministry, 68; in England, vii. 117; has full authority to arm and employ Canadians and Indians against the Americans, 118; abhors the scheme, 119; returns to his government, 158; takes measures for the defence of the province, 365; the command in Canada assigned to him, viii. 100; he proclaims the Americans as traitors, 176; is unable to relieve St. John's, 186; the Canadians and Indians forsake him, 183, 186; he will not turn the savages loose on the frontier, 186; vainly attempts to relieve St. John's, 187; is defeated by Warren, 187; descends the river to Quebec, 199; the amount of his force there, 200; returns no answer to Montgomery's summons, 202; repels the assault made by that general, 206-210; is lenient to his prisoners, 210; his humanity to sick Americans left behind, 425; his cautious movements, 431; blamed for restraining the Indians, ix. 151, 376; his plan for the campaign of 1776, 152; provides a naval force on Lake Champlain, 153; sails up the lake, 154; severe conflict with Arnold's fleet, 155; gains a complete victory, 156; lands at Crown Point, 157; his retreat, 157; greeted with cheers at Quebec, 241; restrains the ravages of the Indians, 321; the king and ministers are displeased at this, 321; Carleton prepares to invade the United States, 359; is displeased at being superseded by Burgoyne, 361, 362; refuses to assist Burgoyne, 370; is censured by that officer, 376; supersedes Clinton in America, x. 529, 535; his humanity, 563; restrains Indian hostility, 563.
- Carlisle, Earl of (Frederic Howard), sent as commissioner to America, x. 122.
- Carolina, North (see *North Carolina*).
- Carolina, South (see *South Carolina*).
- Carolinas, condition of the, viii. 84-98; British expedition against them, 282, 394, *et seq.*; their example, 345-354. (See *North Carolina* and *South Carolina*.)

- Caroline of Brunswick, queen of George IV., viii. 259; her early training, 259.
- Caron, Le, early Franciscan missionary to the Wyandots, iii. 118; visits Lake Huron, 118.
- Carr, Dabney, of Virginia, a young statesman of great promise, vi. 454; his early death, 455.
- Carr, Maurice, lieutenant-colonel of the twenty-ninth regiment in Boston, vi. 335, 341.
- Carr, Robert, one of the royal commissioners in 1664, ii. 84.
- Carrier, Martha, accused of witchcraft, iii. 92; executed, 92.
- Carrington, Colonel, his able conduct, x. 472, 473.
- Carroll, Charles, of Maryland, vii. 143; on the Maryland committee of correspondence, viii. 76; is sent to Canada as commissioner, 423; signs the Declaration of Independence, ix. 59; a fast friend of Washington, 465.
- Carroll, John, brother of Charles, afterwards archbishop of Baltimore, goes to Canada to conciliate the clergy to the American cause, viii. 423.
- Carteret, James, son of the preceding, ii. 168.
- Carteret, James, governor of New Jersey, ii. 319.
- Carteret, Lord, reserves his share of land in South Carolina, iii. 331.
- Carteret, Philip, brother of George, governor of New Jersey, ii. 317, 408; arrested by Andros, 408.
- Carteret, Sir George, one of the proprietaries of Carolina, ii. 129; and of New Jersey, 315; his heirs sell east New Jersey to William Penn and others, 361, 409.
- Carthage, attack on it by Vernon, iii. 441; fatal effects of the climate, 442.
- Cartier, James, his voyages to North America, i. 19, *et seq.*; discovers the St. Lawrence, 19, *et seq.*; reaches and names Montreal, 21; passes a winter in Canada, 23.
- Cartwright, George, one of the royal commissioners in 1664, ii. 84; his testimony before the privy council, 90.
- Cartwright, John, advocates the independence of America, vi. 516.
- Cartwright, Major John, refuses to take part in hostilities against America, vii. 343.
- Cartwright, Thomas, a sufferer for non-conformity, yet intolerant, i. 285, *note*.
- Carver, John, the pilgrim, and Robert Cushman, negotiate with the Virginia company, i. 303; chosen governor of the Plymouth colony, 310; dies, 314.
- Carver, Jonathan, explores the great western valley and the borders of Lake Superior, vi. 297.
- Carver, Jonathan, of Connecticut, his travels in the Northwest, x. 134; published in England, 134; his ardent anticipations, 135.
- Cary, Archibald, member of the Virginia convention, viii. 247, 377, 378, 380.
- Cary, Thomas, governor of North Carolina, iii. 22; he and his party take up arms, 23, 24; sails for England, 24.
- Castine, or St. Castin, Baron, establishes a fort on the coast of Maine, iii. 178; his expeditions against Casco, 183; and Pemaquid, 189; in Acadia, 218; repels an invasion of that province, 217.
- Castine the younger, seized by the English, iii. 335.
- Castine occupied by the British, x. 232; Massachusetts undertakes its recovery, but fails, 233; causes of the failure, 233.
- Caswell, General of North Carolina, at Camden, x. 321; his brigade make speedy flight, 322, 324.
- Caswell, Richard, of North Carolina, vii. 271 *c*; delegate to Congress from North Carolina, viii. 95; the foremost patriot of the province, 97; a financier, a statesman, and a general, 97; marches against the highland insurgents, 235, 236; misleads the enemy, 237; totally defeats them, 238, 239.
- Catawba nation of Indians, iii. 245; foes of the Iroquois, 246; estimated population, 253; war with the colony, 326.
- Catawbas, their alliance sought, iv. 345, 347; allies of the English, 423.
- Catharine II., becomes Empress of Russia, iv. 455; her character, v. 9; her domestic and foreign policy, 9, 10; her military resources, vii. 348; her character, viii. 104, 105; her equivocal answer to the British minister, asking for troops to be employed in America, 107; George III. writes to her for troops, 149; her coolness, 150; her friendly advice to the British ministry, 150; she recommends concession, 150; a question of veracity between her and the king, 151; she refuses his demand for troops, 153, 155; her dignity and policy will not allow her compliance, 153; her sarcastic reply to the king, 154; her letter, 154; the letter not an autograph, 155; she will not allow any further discussion, 155; her attitude towards America, x. 55; joins the armed neutrality, 277.
- Cathmaid, George, has a grant of land in North Carolina, ii. 135.
- Catholic Church assumes to represent the divine wisdom itself, vii. 28.
- Catholic powers bound together to oppose Protestantism and reform, iv. 278; league of the Catholic powers against England and Prussia, 432; defeated in their struggle against innovation, v. 3.
- Catholics, how their emancipation began, vii. 156; those in Canada are in part enfranchised by the Quebec act, 157; their worship is established by it, 157, 158; the American Congress seeks their aid, 159; few Catholics in the thirteen colonies, 159, 160.
- Catholics of Ireland, disqualifying laws against them, v. 62-72; their education prohibited, 68.

- Catholics of Maryland placed on an equality with Protestants, viii. 76, 78.
- Catlin, his resignation as mandamus councillor, vii. 111.
- Causes of the war which followed the accession of William of Orange to the throne of England, iii. 175, 176.
- Cavendish, Lord John, refuses to serve under Grafton, vi. 22; approves the Boston port bill, 512; deprecates the policy of the British ministry, vii. 224, 225; denounces the employment of German mercenaries against America, viii. 263; in Parliament objects to the policy of the ministry, ix. 142; he proposes a revival of the obnoxious measures, 145; the revival refused, 146; moves in Parliament to withdraw the British forces from America, 246.
- Cayuga, tribe of Indians, ii. 419.
- Celtic-American Republic on the banks of the Mississippi, vi. 217, *et seq.*; an envoy sent to France, 218, 220; its disastrous termination, 222, *et seq.*
- Census of New Orleans in 1769, vi. 296; of the whole valley of the Mississippi, the Spanish portion, 296; of the English portion, 223.
- Central power wanting in America; great danger arising from the lack of it, x. 179, 207.
- Chalmers, the historian, an error of his corrected, ii. 309, *note*.
- Chambly, in Canada, taken by the Americans, viii. 186.
- Champlain, Samuel, conducts an expedition to Canada, i. 25; founds Quebec, 28; goes on an expedition against the Iroquois, 28; explores lake Champlain, 28; spends a winter among the Hurons, 29; "father of New France," 29; his death, 29; introduces Franciscan friars into Canada, iii. 119; introduces Jesuits, 120.
- Champlain, Lake, Allen and his party cross it on their way to Ticonderoga, vii. 339; cruise of Arnold on this lake, 364; the lake the key of Canada, 365; a naval force provided there by the Americans, ix. 152; by the British, 153; operations of Arnold and of Carleton on the lake, 154-156.
- Chancellor, Richard, first reaches Archangel by sea, i. 79.
- Charlemagne, under him a united Germany, x. 64; he crosses the Alps, and is made by the pope emperor of Rome, 64; the pope acknowledges his temporal, but not his spiritual authority, 65; the consequences happy for mankind, 66; his authority lost by his successors, 67.
- Charles Augustus of Saxe Weimar refuses aid to England, x. 95.
- Charles I., king of England, his sentiments in regard to Virginia, i. 194; demands a monopoly of tobacco, 197; tacitly sanctions a representative government in Virginia, 197; his partisans resort thither, 210; his marriage with Henrietta Maria, 333; confirms the grant of Massachusetts, and why, 342; places restraint on emigration, 412; in Scotland is involved in difficulties, 414; convenes a Parliament and dissolves it, ii. 2; his weakness, 5; his rash attempt to seize some of the members of Parliament, 7; is seized and held prisoner by the army, 14; his death, 15; the deed justified, 15; the consequences disastrous, 17.
- Charles II., king of England, recognized in Virginia, though in exile, i. 210; his character, ii. 48; not cruel, 32, 50; weak, silly, and licentious, 49; grants a liberal charter to Connecticut, 54; grants a like charter to Rhode Island, 62; his lavish grants of territory to his courtiers, 69, 70; proclaimed at Boston, 74; gives away Virginia to his courtiers, 209; his fickleness, 435; hangs an innocent papist, 438; becomes an absolute monarch, 438.
- Charles III., of Spain, his weak character and inglorious reign, v. 15, 16; how employed in 1774, vii. 33; his character, ix. 303; devoted to the interests of the papal see, 303.
- Charlestown, Massachusetts, i. 347; the church formed there, the model of all succeeding churches in Massachusetts, 359; removed to Boston, 359; heroic spirit of its inhabitants, vi. 477, 481; burned on the day of Bunker Hill, vii. 421, 422 (see *Bunker Hill*).
- Charleston, S.C., founded, ii. 170; in peril from the Indians, iii. 327; patriotic spirit of its citizens, vii. 251; their enthusiasm, 337; is threatened, viii. 394; measures for its defence, 89, 90, 395, 398; activity of Governor Rutledge, 394; earnest spirit of the people, 398; they watch the proceedings of the enemy, 403; their anxiety, 406; their joy at the repulse of the British, 412; the women of Charleston present a pair of colors to their brave defenders, 413; defence of, x. 291; a capitulation asked for and refused, 293; description of the place, 302; not defensible, 303; it surrenders, 305; severe terms, 305; value of the spoil, 305, 306.
- Charlevoix, Peter Francis Xavier de, missionary at Niagara, iii. 342.
- Charter, first colonial English, i. 120; its provisions, 120; second charter for Virginia, 136; third charter, 145; its surrender demanded by the king, 188; *Quo warranto* issued, 189; judgment declared against it, 192; charter of Maryland, 241; to the second Plymouth company, 272, 273; the Plymouth Pilgrims did not obtain one, 321; charter of Massachusetts, 328; charter of Plymouth company revoked, 329; charter of Massachusetts granted, 342; its fundamental principle, 343; the rights of the colonists fully secured, 344; this charter regarded as the voice of God, 350; the charter and government transferred across the Atlantic, 352; the measure justified, 352, 353; the charter in danger, 407; charter of Connecticut, ii. 54, 55; charter of Massachusetts abrogated, 127; resumed, 447; charter of Carolina,



- 129; another, 137; charter of Pennsylvania, 362; charter of Rhode Island demanded, 429; the demand for the charter of Connecticut evaded, 430; the charter oak, 430; charter of 1692 to Massachusetts, iii. 80; arrives in Boston, 87; charter threatened, 380.
- Chartered rights menaced, vi. 9, 10, 69, 111, 113, 116, 182, 231, 240, 250, 306, 370, 371, 372, 451.
- Charters in France arbitrarily confiscated, vii. 23.
- Chase, Samuel, the foremost man in Maryland, viii. 76; his character, 76; for independence, 313, 315, 320; is sent to Canada as commissioner, 423; his activity in Maryland for independence, 447; moves to count only white inhabitants in apportioning supplies, ix. 51; speaks on the claim of Virginia to western lands, 56; signs the declaration, 59.
- Chase, Thomas, of Boston, a "son of liberty" in 1765, v. 340; refuses to take the oath, vii. 111.
- Chastellux, Francis John, Marquis de, quoted, viii. 341, 362; x. 593, 516.
- Chatelet, Count du, sent as minister to England, vi. 130; thinks it impossible for England to conquer America, 140; thinks advantage may be taken of opportunities, 237; foretells the independence of America, 244, 255; his remarkable letter to Choiseul, 255, 256; advocates free trade, 255, 259; warmly favors the independence of Louisiana, 264.
- Chatham, Earl of (see *Pitt, William*), his administration weakened on his elevation to the peerage, vi. 24-28; cannot cope as formerly with difficulties, 27, 28; jealous of the Bourbons, 27; his accord with the king, 45; gives his confidence to Shelburne, 45; his determined character, 45, 46; his embarrassments with regard to America, 52; thrice denounces Charles Townshend as "incurable," 57; his ministry opposed by the old whig party, 59; and defeated, 60; his administration virtually at an end, 61; the king needs his help, and writes to him, 82; vindicates his friend the Earl of Shelburne, 83; prefers the adherents of Bedford to those of Rockingham, 83; his long illness, 91, 108; his extravagance, 108; he resigns office, 214; proposes a reform in Parliament, 320, 325; accuses the ministry of conspiring against liberty, 323; he invokes the guidance of reason and common-sense in the halls of legislation, 324; asks for the entire repeal of the revenue act, 351; comes forward as the champion of the people of England, 361; desires a "more full and equal representation" in Parliament, 363; reads an election sermon by Dr. Tucker, 440; sees the crisis hastening in Boston, 457; protests against employing Indians against the colonists, vii. 118; his favorable opinion of the Americans, 190; his high praise of the American Congress, 191; his interview with Franklin, 191; wishes the dispute settled on the terms proposed by Congress, 191; he and Rockingham do not agree, 192; his energetic speech in the House of Lords, 196; proposes to remove the army from Boston, 196; his splendid eulogy on the American people, 197; their spirit of liberty, 198, 199; the wisdom of Congress, 200; urges the repeal of the oppressive acts, 201; the king's anger at this speech, 201; good effect of the speech, 203; introduces a bill for conciliation and to prevent a civil war, 219; his speeches upon it, 220, 221; the bill rejected, 222; his eulogy on Franklin, 220, 221; his severe invective against the ministry, 221; his eldest son refuses to serve against the Americans, 343; disapproves of the American war, ix. 325; condemns the employment of Indians, 365, 477; maintains that America cannot be conquered, 477; protests against the use of German mercenaries, 477; says Gibraltar is the best proof of British naval power, 477; his last speech in the House of Lords, 494; opposes the dismemberment of the British monarchy, 495; is struck with death, 495; his last days, 495; his wonderful eloquence, 496; his death, 496.
- Chatham, Massachusetts, its utterance in favor of liberty, vi. 440.
- Chaudière river, dangers of the, viii. 194, 195.
- Chaumonot, Joseph Marie, a Jesuit missionary to the Onondagas, iii. 143.
- Chauvin has a monopoly of the fur trade in Canada, i. 25.
- Cheesman, Captain, in Montgomery's attack on Quebec, viii. 206; is slain, 208.
- Cheesman, Edmund, one of the chiefs of the insurrection in Virginia, ii. 230; intrepid conduct of his wife, 231.
- Cherokee nation, iii. 246; its beautiful country, 247; estimated population, 253; war with the English settlements, 323; treaty with the English, 331, 332; Cherokees in London, 332; their friendship to Oglethorpe and his colony, 433.
- Cherokees friendly to the colonists, iv. 193; Lyttleton provokes them to war, 342, 343; their distrust of the English, 344; send a large deputation to Charleston, 345; are haughtily received by the governor, 346; he invades their country, 348; massacre of Cherokee prisoners by the English, 350; the Cherokees retaliate, 350, 355; Cherokee towns destroyed, 352; they take fort Loudoun, 355; the frontier deserted, 356; another expedition into the Cherokee country, 423, *et seq.*; the Cherokees submit, 423; their utterance to Tryon respecting the division of territory, vi. 86; treaty concluded with them, 226, 227; another treaty, 378; their help sought by the British government against the colonists, vii. 119; murders committed by them, 164; their numbers in 1775, 337; Georgia open to their hostility, 337; they sell the land now in part constituting the state of Kentucky,

- 365; the British authorities excite them to hostilities against the people of Carolina, viii. 88; take up the hatchet against the Americans, ix. 160; they are utterly defeated, 161, 162; and sue for peace, 162, 163; their incursions repelled, x. 202; invited to the British standard, 332; lavish distribution of presents to them, 344.
- Cherry Valley, the settlers there threatened with Indian hostility, vii. 365; massacre at, x. 152, 153.
- Chesapeake discovered by Spaniards, i. 60; attempt of Spaniards to possess it, 71; Spaniards again visit it, 73; explored by Smith, 133, and by Clayborne, 237.
- Chester, Captain John, commands a company of Connecticut troops at the rail-fence on the day of Bunker Hill, vii. 420.
- Chesterfield, Earl of (Philip Dormer Stanhope), is thanked by Massachusetts, vi. 13.
- Chicago visited by Marquette, iii. 161, 346.
- Chickasaw tribe of Indians, iii. 160, 249; where located, 249, 250; estimated population, 253; incite the Natchez to attack the French, 360; their hatred of the French, 365; expel them from their country, 368; befriend the colony of Georgia, 433.
- Chickasaws, their alliance sought, iv. 345, 347; allies of the English, 423; their numbers in 1775, vii. 337.
- Chignecto, N.S., burned by the French, iv. 68; taken by the British, 71.
- Child, Robert, and others, attempt to subvert the charter government of Massachusetts, i. 438-441.
- Child, Sir Joshua, his statement touching Massachusetts, ii. 91.
- Chippeway Indians invite a mission, iii. 132; a mission begun, 150; attack the Iroquois, 190; peace with them, v. 210.
- Chiswell's lead mines in Virginia, vi. 86, 225, 227.
- Choctaw nation, iii. 250; assist the French against the Natchez, 363; friendly to the Georgia colony, 433.
- Choctaws, their help sought by the British government against the colonists, vii. 119; their numbers in 1775, 337.
- Choiseul, Stephen Francis, duke of, the French minister of war and of foreign affairs, iv. 392; offers to negotiate with England, 393; his great character, 394; the greatest French minister since Richelieu, 394; proposes peace on the basis, *uti possidetis*, 395; the offer refused, 402; he concludes the family compact between France and Spain, 403; foresees the necessary result of the surrender of New France, 460; sends a French officer to travel in America, v. 193; he foresees American independence, 193, 341; a great minister, vi. 25; foresees the greatness of America, 26; studies the condition of the British colonies, 26, 23; his circumspection and prudence, 53; sends De Kalb to ascertain the condition of things in America, 66; seeks information from every possible source respecting that country, 67, 180; foresees the result of American taxation, 79, 96; sends Chatelet to England as minister, 130; his projects, 169; makes diligent inquiry into American affairs, 180; his watchfulness, 236; his sagacity, 237; corresponds with Chatelet, 236-238; wishes the independence of Louisiana, 263, 264; his jealousy of England, 268, 269; and of Russia, 269, 270; his moderation prevents a war between Spain and England, 387, 388; is dismissed from office, 388; his exalted character, 388.
- Christian, Colonel, with Virginia levies; his successful march against the Indians, ix. 161.
- Christiana fort on the Delaware, ii. 287.
- Christianity predicated on the unity of mankind, iv. 7.
- Christison, Wenlock, a Quaker, his courage before his judges, i. 457; is discharged, 458.
- Church, Benjamin, a professed patriot, secretly a traitor, vi. 409, quoted on the subject of union, 454; a concealed traitor, vii. 136; appointed director of the army hospital, viii. 57; his secret correspondence with the enemy, 112; he is imprisoned, 112; his fate, 112.
- "Church without a bishop, a State without a king," iv. 153.
- Church of England, v. 34, 35; of Ireland, 63.
- Cibola, a fabulous country, vain attempts to find it, i. 40 c, *et seq.*
- Cilley, Colonel, of Nottingham, in New Hampshire, hastens to the scene of conflict after the combat at Concord, vii. 314; in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 409.
- Civil compact, this idea shapes the English revolution of 1688, iii. 6, 8.
- Civilization, established in Greece and Rome, iv. 6; extended by the Greek colonies, 6; the old and the new civilization compared, 12.
- Civilization, high, of the colonies, vi. 240, *et seq.*
- Civil list, American, opposed by Mr. Grenville, v. 176.
- Civil list proposed for every American province, vi. 77.
- Civil society, ancient bonds of, weakened, iv. 4; civil war arms men of the same ancestry against each other, 13.
- Civil wars multiplied by kings, viii. 237.
- Clarendon, Earl of, a friend of the younger Winthrop, ii. 53, 54; Rhode Island votes thanks to him, 64; his message to Massachusetts, 77, 83; one of the proprietaries of Carolina, 129; his ministry, 433.
- Clark, Abraham, delegate in Congress from New Jersey, ix. 53, 253.
- Clark, George Rogers, of Kentucky, x. 193; his operations beyond the mountains, 194, *et seq.*; takes Kaskaskia without bloodshed, 196; takes Vincennes, 197, *et seq.*; obtains possession of all the country on the Illinois and Wabash rivers, 201; and thus disconcerts the plans of Spain in that quarter, 203.

- Clark, Jonas, minister of Lexington, vii. 231; his patriotic spirit, 231.
- Clarke, Colonel, defeats the British at Augusta, Georgia, x. 333.
- Clarke, Sir Francis, mortally wounded in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 416.
- Clarke, John, goes to Rhode Island, i. 392; goes to England, 427; preaches at Lynn, 450; his arrest and fine, 450; agent of Rhode Island in England, ii. 61; he obtains a charter for that colony, 64; his benevolence, 65.
- Clarke, Richard, of Boston, one of the consignees of the tea shipped to Boston, vi. 473; his rude answer to the committee, 474.
- Clarke, Saint Clair, his expedition to the country northwest of the Ohio, ix. 467.
- Clarke, Walter, governor of Rhode Island, ii. 429; declines office, 448.
- Claverhouse, John Graham of, his cruelty, ii. 410.
- Clayborne, William, comes to America as a surveyor, i. 237; explores the country around the Chesapeake, 237; discourages the settlement of Maryland, 246; resists by force of arms the colony of Lord Baltimore, 249; attainted for treason, 249; banished as a murderer, 200; returns and excites a rebellion, 254; as commissioner of the long Parliament, deposes Stone, the deputy of Lord Baltimore, 259; repeats the act, 260; visits Carolina, ii. 133.
- Cleveland, Colonel Benjamin, raises a regiment in the mountains of North Carolina, x. 335, 336; his brave conduct at King's mountain, 337, 339;
- Cleaves, George, agent in Maine for Rigby, i. 429.
- Clergy of Canada, satisfied with the Quebec act, vii. 158; clergy of France tainted with scepticism, 28; averse to the American cause, viii. 177, 417, 423.
- Clergy of Massachusetts, how supported, i. 359; their action in the case of Roger Williams, 373; reproached by the adherents of Mrs. Hutchinson, 387; a synod of ministers assembles, 390; consulted in civil affairs, 440, 445; their courage, 443; the ministry indispensable to New England life, 443; the second synod in 1648, 444; influence of ministers, 446, ii. 87, 121, 123; what gave them this influence, iii. 74; their connection with the witchcraft delusion, 75, *et seq.*
- Clergy of Virginia, their contest for church dues, v. 171, 172; clergy, Calvinist, of New England, their good influence, 320.
- Cleverly, Stephen, of Boston, one of the "Sons of Liberty" in 1765, v. 310.
- Clinton, George, in the general assembly of New York, vii. 210; elected to the second continental Congress, 284; present there, 353; opposes the evacuation of New York, ix. 118; in the skirmish near Manhattanville, 126; in a council of war, 176; visits the Highlands with Washington, 187; his success at Hackensack, 251; commands in the Highlands, 338; is chosen governor of New York, 372; endeavors to save fort Clinton, 413; will be satisfied with nothing short of independence, 498.
- Clinton, George, admiral and governor of New York, iv. 24; ascends the Hudson, 25; attends the Congress at Albany, 29; deplores the tendency to independence, 25; Clinton and Shirley invoke the interposition of the king, to provide a contribution of the colonies for their own defence, 29, 32; resolves to compel the interposition of Parliament, 34; his proceedings in New York firmly resisted by the legislature, 52, 53; still pursues his selfish schemes, 57; urges the imposition of taxes, 62; asks of the assembly means to resist French encroachments on the Ohio, and is refused, 74; is superseded in office, and execrated by the people, 103; impeached for mal-administration, 164.
- Clinton, Sir Henry, sent out as major-general of the army in America, vii. 245; lands in Boston, 362, 379, 389; watches from Copp's Hill the battle in Charlestown, 422; crosses Charles river in a boat and joins in the fray, 428; embarks at Boston on a Southern expedition, viii. 277; is destined to North Carolina, 279, 282; his instructions from the ministry, 357; receives re-enforcements in Cape Fear river, 357; resolves to sail for Charleston, 358; his savage proclamation, 358; his arrival off Charleston, 395; lands on Long Island, 396, 397, 399; differs in plan from the naval commander, 399; his troops suffer from the climate, 399; he discovers no ford between Long Island, where he was, and Sullivan's Island which he was to attack, 399; his inactivity, 400; the attack is made by the fleet, but the land forces do nothing, 404, 405, 408; they embark for New York, 412; joins Howe on Staten Island, ix. 82; leads the van in the battle of Long Island, 90; marches on White Plains, 180; commands the expedition to Rhode Island, 200; moves against Putnam in the Highlands, 412; takes forts Clinton and Montgomery, 413; returns to New York, 414; succeeds Howe in the command of the British land forces, x. 120; evacuates Philadelphia, 124; commences his retreat to New York, 127; loses the battle of Monmouth, 133; remonstrates against the weakening of his force by detachments to the South, 156; threatens to evacuate New York, 156; represents his forces as inadequate, 174, 221; raises a regiment of Irish, 175; determines on the conquest of South Carolina, 301; embarks on that enterprise, 301; disasters suffered by the way, 301; takes Charleston, 305; his ensnaring proclamation not procured, 307; confiscates private property, 307; another proclamation, full of cruelty, 308; returns to New York, 308, 309; his operations in New Jersey, 374; his retreat, 375; his expedition to Rhode Island, 376; he becomes disheart-



- ened, 376, 377; complains to the ministry, 377; his complot with Benedict Arnold, 371, *et seq.*; his disappointment at the result, 394; his false representations of the affair, 394; he disapproves of Cornwallis's movement on Virginia, 484; foresees evil from it, 484; fears an attack from Washington in New York, 506, 509; regards the royal cause as hopeless in Virginia, and advises Cornwallis to take a defensive position, 503; hatred and rivalry between him and Cornwallis, 506; wishes by all means to retain command of the Chesapeake, 510; favors a post at Yorktown, 511; finds himself thoroughly out-generalled by Washington, 513; purposes to relieve Cornwallis, but fails, 517; is recalled from his command, 529.
- Clinton, General James, brother of George, with Washington at the Highlands, ix. 187; takes command of fort Montgomery, 413; marches into the Indian country, x. 231.
- Cloyce, Sarah, of Salem village, accused of witchcraft, iii. 86.
- Clymer, George, of Philadelphia, vi. 481, 524; in Congress, ix. 59.
- Cocheco, now Dover, attack on it by Indians, iii. 180.
- Coddington, William, built the first good house in Boston, i. 358; an adherent of Ann Hutchinson, 392; obtains a grant of Rhode Island, 392; a judge there, 392.
- Coffin, Nathan, an American sailor, will not fight against his country, ix. 313.
- Colbert, Jean Baptiste, favors the plans of La Salle, iii. 163.
- Colburn, Andrew, lieutenant-colonel, killed in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 411.
- Colden, Cadwallader, of New York, iv. 25; his elaborate argument for taxing the colonies, 54; a further argument, 57, 58; continues to favor parliamentary taxation, 116; advises the subversion of American liberty, 371; is made lieutenant-governor of New York, 372, 427, 429; advises the annexation to New York of Western Massachusetts and all of Vermont, v. 149; his false representations of the people, 215; would allow an appeal to the king in all cases, 224; upholds the stamp act, 314, 332; opposes the people and threatens to fire on them, but is told the consequences, 355; he yields to the people, 356; thirsts for revenge, 357; is superseded in the government, 358; announces the probability of the repeal of the revenue acts, vi. 315.
- Coligny, Admiral, sends a colony of Huguenots to Florida, i. 61.
- College of William and Mary founded, iii. 25.
- Colleton, James, governor of South Carolina, ii. 185; his oppressive conduct, 186; the people resist, and banish him from the province, 187.
- Collier, Sir George, British admiral, his statement of the British force landed on Long Island, ix. 85, *note*; his barbarity, 227; sails up the Penobscot, x. 233.
- Colonial agents, Grenville's interview with, v. 188.
- Colonial assemblies in Virginia, an error respecting them corrected, i. 199, *note*; tacitly sanctioned by the king, 197; colonial commerce, restrictions on, 196, 203, 220, 221, ii. 42, 197 (see *Commerce*); the modern colonial system, iii. 112, 384; colonial manufactures discouraged, 384; colonial interests sacrificed, 385.
- Colonial governors, dependent for their salaries on the provincial assemblies, iv. 19; often dissolute and vile men, 20.
- Colonial governments, remodelling of, iv. 414.
- Colonial policy of the Grenville administration, v. 107; Shelburne opposes this policy, 136; Richard Jackson opposes it, 155; Grenville urges on the scheme, 157, *et seq.*, 182, 187, 190; the policy openly inaugurated, 187.
- Colonial policy of Spain, v. 16.
- Colonial system of Europe, overthrow of the, iv. 3, *et seq. passim*; this system is self-destructive, 461, 462.
- Colonies, their military strength in 1765, v. 434.
- Colonies, Anglo-American, their general character, ii. 450; population in 1688, 450; cause of the emigration, 451; origin, 452; a free people, 452; a moral people, 453; a Christian people, 453; a Protestant people, 454, *et seq.*; how related to the home government, iii. 100; taxation, 101; how related to Episcopacy, 102; the judiciary, 103; policy pursued by England towards them, 104; the currency, 104; the colonial system, 105; the trade in wool, 106; masts, 106, 390; theory as to charters, 107; uninterrupted progress, 339; extending settlements, 370; population, 371; schools and colleges, 373; the press, 374; no union of the colonies, 380; charters threatened, 381; checks on their industry, 384; sugar colonies favored at the expense of the others, 385; paper-money system, 386; compelled to receive slaves, 415; tendency to independence, 464; their relation to England, iv. 15; an offshoot, not a part of it, 15; admire the constitution of England, yet prefer their own, 16; had a life of their own, 16, 17, 55; could not be moulded at will, 55; attempts to obtain a revenue from them, 23, 32, 33, 52, 58, 62, 85; they are left to protect themselves, 83; effort still made to raise a revenue from them, 100; the project delayed, 101 (see *American colonies*); to be taxed by Parliament, v. 81, 82; all civil officers therein to be dependent on the king's pleasure; 82, 83; their charters to be annulled, 83; one scheme of government to be imposed on all, 83; a standing army to be maintained at their expense, 83, 86; the measure supported by Pitt, 87; fervent attachment of the colonies to England, 90; navigation acts disregarded in the colonies, 157, 158; Grenville's plan for taxing the colonies sanctioned by

Parliament, 187, 191; alarm occasioned in the colonies by its adoption, 193, *et seq.*; views of James Otis on the rights of the colonists, 198, 199; loyalty of the colonies, 209, 223; spirit of resistance in Boston, 197, *et seq.*; in New York, 198, 216; in Rhode Island, 217; the military power placed above the civil, 235; taxation by Parliament carried through, 247; the mutiny act extended to America, 249; bounties to the colonies, 250; restraints on the industry of the colonies, 265; and on their trade, 266-268; taxation, direct and indirect, now added to colonial restrictions, 267; general dissatisfaction in the colonies, 270-280, 285, *et seq.*; the colonies meet in Congress, 334; the people in all the colonies accede to its action, 359, 360; plan for a permanent union, 360 (see *America*); the time from which their revolt may be dated, vi. 41; they all deny the right of Parliament to tax them, 43; kind spirit of Lord Shelburne towards them, 39, 43; his conciliatory policy, 53-55; rendered ineffectual by the headstrong opposition of the king and the oligarchy, 56, 57, 64; extreme bitterness of party leaders in England against them, 65, 66; each colony had a character of its own, which the men in power wholly overlooked, 73; the men in power refuse to hear their complaints, 74; every thing must be done by the strong hand, 45, 68, 73, 74, 80, 91; the doors of Parliament, by special order, shut against their agents, 75, 80; the colonies aim not at independence, 73; but only at having their rights, 12, 51, 97, 121; false representations respecting them, 39, 41, 57, 68; their independence foreseen, 26, 84, 95, 370; progress of revolutionary ideas, 102, 103, 105; the department of the colonies assigned to Lord Hillsborough, 109; his policy in regard to them, 110; their charters to be abrogated, 111, 116; the colonists firmly resolved to resist all infringement of their privileges, 139; the prospect before them, 140; the colonies to be trampled under foot, 207, 216; spirit of the colonies not understood, 229, 230; the colonists unappalled, 266; form agreements for non-importation, 272, 308; the ferment increases, 310; their charters threatened, 231, 306, 371, 372; enumeration of the rights of the colonies, 432; and of their grievances, 433; a committee in Massachusetts issue a secret circular summoning all the colonies to stand for their rights, 469; the colonies united, 483; were entitled to independence, vii. 23; there was no other way to their full development, 34; Britain should have offered them independence, 23; determination of the king to coerce them, 24; the thirteen colonies are pledged to union, 35; character of the people, 35; the colonies make the cause of Boston their own, 55; they contribute largely for its relief, 73, *et seq.*; a general Congress proposed by New York, 40, 46; by Pennsylvania, 45;

by Connecticut, 46; by Maryland, 50; by New Jersey, 50; by Virginia, 54; Massachusetts appoints the time and place, 64; and elects delegates, 64; Indians and Canadians to be employed against the colonists, 117, 118; the continental Congress meet, 127; total population of the colonies, 128; it is agreed that in Congress each colony shall have one vote, 130; debate on the foundation of colonial rights, 132; the demands of the colonies are made to rest on an historical basis, 138; a union of the colonies under a president to be appointed by the king is rejected, 140; firm union of the colonies, 205; Lord North's plan of conciliation, 243; contrasted with that of Lord Chatham, 244; "the twelve united colonies," 391; their union, viii. 38; a plan of confederation proposed, 53; its provisions, 53, 54; their affairs a subject of discussion at the court of Catharine II., 104; Georgia accedes to the union, 108; the colonies threatened with force by the king, 131; he will send Russians, Hanoverians, and Hessians to crush them to submission, 137; the king cannot obtain Russian troops, 150-156; temper of the middle colonies, 213; attempts to detach them from the union, 214, 215; mutual attraction of France and the colonies, 216, 217; division of the country into military departments, 317; plan of a confederation, 332.

Colonies, modern European, i. 213, iii. 113, *et seq.*

Colonies, the Greek, i. 212, 213.

Colorado of the West, discovered, i. 40 *f.*

Colored American soldiers at the battle of Monmouth, x. 133; proposal to enlist colored troops, 291; Hamilton advises it, 291; Henry Laurens advises it, 291; Congress recommends it, 291; Washington discourages it, 292; South Carolina rejects the proposal, 292; and would rather assume a position of neutrality, 293.

Columbus, his earlier life, i. 7; expected to reach the Indies by sailing west, 8; discovers America, 8; discovers the main land, 12, 14; brought together the ends of the world, iv. 8.

Commerce, freedom of, beneficial to mankind, v. 25; state of, in America, 429; x. 579.

Commerce of America thrown open to the whole world, viii. 323.

Commerce of the world, great changes in, i. 117; commerce in slaves, 162, *et seq.*; commerce in white servants, 175; colonial commerce, restrictions on, 196, 203; colonial policy of ancient Greece, 213; of Carthage, 213; of Spain and Portugal, 213; English navigation acts, 212, ii. 42; freedom of commerce vindicated by the Dutch, i. 215; commercial policy of Cromwell, 216-218; this policy permanently established in England, 218; commercial policy of the Stuarts, 219; commercial monopolies, iii. 104, 105; their gross injus-

- tice, 106, 107; wide extent of the system, 109; falseness of its principles, 110; its influence on the politics of nations, 110; ancient commercial system, 111; a paper currency, and the funding system unknown, 112; development of the modern system, 112; it is founded in error and injustice, 113; system of Portugal, 113; of Spain, 114; of Holland, 114; of France, 115; commercial rivalry of France and England, 116; other causes of animosity, 118; English colonial monopoly, 231; commerce in slaves a source of power to England, 233; commerce with the West through Oswego, 339; commerce bears sway, 390; commercial monopoly a cause of war, 400; commerce in slaves, 402; contraband trade (see *Smuggling*).
- Commerce, universal tendency of society towards, iv. 6; promoted by the diffusion of the northern nations of Europe, 7; commercial restrictions shattered, 13.
- Commercial class acquires supreme power in England, iii. 7, 8, 387; divided commercial monopoly, 400.
- Commercial restrictions proposed, iv. 62, 146; and disregarded, 147. (See *Writs of Assistance*).
- Commissioners of customs at Boston pretend to be in danger, vi. 128; complain of the spirit of liberty there prevailing, 128; and call for troops, 129; under false pretences they again call for troops, 136; a 50-gun ship sent to Boston at their request, 154; their haughtiness and hatred of the country, 154; their spite against John Hancock, 155; order the seizure of his sloop "Liberty," 155; under apprehensions of danger, they go on board the frigate "Romney," 157; the danger not real, 157, 158; they exaggerate the recent disturbance, 160; they call for the exertion of military power, 161; they return to Boston, 212; they apply to be released from the income tax, 404.
- Commissioners, royal, to inquire into the affair of the "Gaspee," vi. 450, 451.
- Commissioners sent by Charles II. to regulate the affairs of New England, ii. 77; their ill success in Massachusetts, 78, 84-86; and in Plymouth, 84; their proceedings in Connecticut, 83; and Maine, 86; they return disappointed, 87.
- Commissioners sent to treat with the revolted colonies, x. 122; who they were, 123; their mission deceptive, 123; their silly conduct, 123; their letter to Congress, and the answer, x. 125; their ferocious proclamation, 151.
- Commissioners to be sent from England to the colonies, viii. 170; they are expected by the moderate party in America, 244, 327; Samuel Adams scorns the thought, 327; their powers, 360, 361.
- Committee of correspondence appointed by New York, vii. 41, 42; by Philadelphia, 45; by Baltimore, 50; by Virginia, 54.
- Committee of safety appointed by the provincial Congress of Massachusetts, vii. 228; their powers, 228; their circular to the several towns of the province and to New Hampshire and Connecticut, 313; no alternative left to them but to drive out the British army or perish in the attempt, 321.
- Committees of correspondence proposed, vi. 425; and appointed, 429; their secret journals still exist, 428, *note*; their design 429; and influence, 430; under a pledge of secrecy, 430; the plan works well, 437, *et seq.*, 446, 447, 452; at least eighty towns in Massachusetts respond, 445; the system results in a union of the colonies, 439, 454, 456, 466 (see *Boston Committee*); committees of correspondence between the colonies organized, 455, 460; a select committee issue a secret circular to all the colonies, 469.
- "Common Sense," an essay by Thomas Paine, viii. 286; Rush gives it this title, 236; the argument: monarchy discountenanced in the Bible; the greater number of kings are bad men; kings multiply civil wars; they are of no real use; we are now driven to an appeal to arms; our cause is of great worth, 237; Great Britain has not been our protector: not England only, but all Europe, is our parent land; our connection with England is of no use to us; America should avoid any close connection with Europe, 238; our territory is too vast to remain long subject to any external power, 239; reconciliation to England would be our ruin; peace and prosperity can come to us only through independence, 240; France and Spain will give us no assistance, unless we declare our independence, and the proper time for this is now come, 241.
- Common-sense the standard of morals and of truth, viii. 248, 249.
- Complot of Sir Henry Clinton and Benedict Arnold, x. 371, *et seq.*
- Conant, Roger, his extraordinary vigor, i. 339; makes a settlement at Salem, 339.
- Concord, Mass., settled, i. 383; a town meeting held there composed of Boston exiles, viii. 48.
- Concord in Massachusetts, the Middlesex county convention meet there, vii. 112; the provincial Congress meet there, 153; Gage sends an expedition thither, 288; the people are roused, 290; William Emerson, the minister, 290; he and his flock appear in arms, 290; arrival of the British troops at Concord village, 298; rally of the alarm company, 298; they retreat beyond the river, 298; re-enforcements come from Lincoln, Acton, Bedford, Westford, Littleton, Carlisle, and Chelmsford, 299; destruction of stores by the British, 300; the Americans hesitate about resisting, 300; their hesitation removed by the British fire, 302; the first victims at Concord, 303; the battle of Concord, 303; the British retreat with great loss and are vigorously pursued, 304, *et seq.*; their retreat becomes a flight 306; cruelties per-



- petrated by them, 308; the British arrive in Boston, 309; the American loss, 309; the British loss, 309; great consequences of the battle, 310, 311, *et seq.*; the whole country roused, 312; the British army besieged in Boston, 313; the effect in Europe, 342, *et seq.*
- Confederation, plan of, proposed by Franklin, viii. 53; the plan equivalent to a declaration of independence, 54; its two great principles, 54; submitted to Congress by Franklin, 245; the proposal negatived, 245; committee to prepare articles of confederation, 392; draft of a plan made by Dickinson, ix. 46; his unfitness for such a work, 46, 47; hindrance to a confederation, 47; the states jealous of a central power, 48; the effects remain of contests with the crown, 48; the confederacy seemed to stand in the place of the crown, 49; the right of taxation withheld from Congress, 49; Franklin's plan contrasted with that of Dickinson, 49, 50; debate on the apportionment of supplies to be furnished by the several members of the confederacy, 51, 52; debate on the question of representation, 53, 54; no plan of confederation at present adopted, 57; a further delay, 131; articles of confederation adopted, 436; unity of the colonies, of what sort, 437; no central authority, 437; what does "my country" mean? 437; the principle of resistance, and this alone, held the colonies together, 437; the spirit of separation increases, 438; the South jealous of the North, 438; vast extent of the United colonies, 438; what constitutes citizenship? 439; power of naturalization, 439; each state an independent sovereign, 440; vote by states, 440; evident inequality, 440; a compromise, 441; Congress has no power to levy taxes, 441; the post-office, 441; import and export duties, 441; influence of slavery on the distribution of quotas, 441, 442; rule finally adopted, 442; navigation laws, 442; the public lands, 443; country north-west of the Ohio, 443; jealousy of a standing army, 443; effect of the popular affection for Washington, 444; thirteen armies, and not one, 444; maritime affairs, 444; foreign relations, 444; coining money, &c., 445; rotation in Congress, 445; no executive power, 445; no judiciary, 445; no veto on the action of any State, 445; no incidental powers, 446; scarcely any mode of amendment, 446; but for the spirit of the people, the government had no chance to live, 446. Four great results, 446: 1. A republican government may equal the widest empire in its extent of territory, 447; 2. No man to be disfranchised for color, race, or religious belief, 447; 3. A citizen of one state entitled to equal privileges in all the states, 447, 448; free blacks are citizens, 449; 4. Individual liberty secured, 449, 450. The confederation was a contradiction, yet contained the elements of a free nation, 450; articles of, x. 144; confederation of the states proposed, 408; adopted, 420; its defects, 421; it was the opposite of union, 422; it was sure to lead to division, strife, and anarchy, 422; obedience to its requisitions could not be enforced, 423
- Confiscation of property by Sir Henry Clinton, x. 307.
- Congress, a general, proposed by Samuel Adams, vi. 466, 507; advocated by the "Boston Gazette," 469; recommended by Providence, vii. 42; by Philadelphia, 45; by New York, 46; by Baltimore, 50; by Virginia, 54; by North Carolina, 55; Massachusetts appoints the time and place, 64; and elects delegates, 64; delegates chosen by Rhode Island, 65; by Maryland, 66; by New York, 78-83; by South Carolina, 81; by Pennsylvania, 82, 83; by New Jersey, 83; by New Hampshire, 83; by Virginia, 84, 85. (See *Continental Congress*.)
- Congress, first Anglo-American, iii. 183; suggested by Massachusetts, 183; Congress European, at Aix-la-Chapelle, 466.
- Congress, general. (See *Continental Congress*.)
- Congress of Indian tribes at the Falls of St. Mary, iii. 153; a splendid affair, 154; with no enduring result, 154; another Indian congress, 214, 222.
- Congress of commissioners at Albany in 1748; iv. 25, *et seq.*; the Massachusetts delegation, 26, 27; plans of Clinton and Colden, 25; numerous attended by Indian chiefs, 28; another congress there, 88; congress of governors at Boston, 252.
- Congress of Massachusetts. (See *Provincial Congress*.)
- Congress of the American people proposed, v. 279; some of the colonies falter, 292, 293; South Carolina yields a hearty approval, 294; the Congress meet in New York, 334; what colonies were represented, 334; the argument for American liberty, on what founded, 335; debates in Congress concerning liberty and privilege, 343; declaration of rights, 344; memorials to Parliament, 344, 345; union inaugurated, 346; the petition of Congress presented in Parliament, 398.
- Congress, provincial. (See *Provincial Congress*.)
- Connecticut river discovered by Adrian Blok, ii. 275.
- Connecticut, settled from Massachusetts, i. 395, 396; the Pequot war, 398-402; civil institution of the colony, 402; it recognized no jurisdiction of the king, 402; charter obtained by the younger Winthrop, ii. 54; the charter liberal, 55; happy fruits of the charter, in the purity, the tranquillity, the domestic and social happiness of the colony during more than a hundred years, 56-61; the royal commissioners in Connecticut, 83; Hartford and New Haven united, 83; population in 1675, 93; no blood shed there, in Philip's war, 109; generosity to the sufferers, 109; boundary fixed on the side of New Netherland, 295; Andros as-



sumes the government, 430; the charter oak, 430; the charter taken from its hiding-place, 448; population in 1688, 450; effect of the English revolution, iii. 66; address of the assembly to William, 66; the charter intact, 66; influence of the clergy, 69; the charter always in danger, 69; attempt in Parliament to revoke it, 70; Cornbury joins in the attempt, 70; law of inheritance, 392; remonstrates against arbitrary power, iv. 49; population in 1754, 128, 129; claims a part of the territory of Pennsylvania, 140; Connecticut troops brave and victorious in war, 207, 211; heavy burdens on the colony, 293; Connecticut troops at Ticonderoga, 298, 301; has five thousand men under arms, 319; described as a mere democracy, 370; remonstrates against infringement of its rights, v. 224; Bernard proposes a dissolution of the colony, 225; Johnson has a similar desire, 226; Connecticut deals roughly with Ingersoll, the distributor of stamps, 316, *et seq.*; the principles of natural liberty avowed, 360; resolves on resistance to the stamp act, 378; elects William Pitkin governor, vi. 14; refuses compliance with a requisition, 51; able defence of its rights by Johnson, its agent, 111-115; purpose of the British ministry to annul its charter, 111, 113, 116; determined attitude of the colony, 149; petitions the king, but refuses to petition Parliament, and why not, 149; denies the right of Parliament to tax the colonies, 166; sends a colony to the lower Mississippi, 238; its charter again threatened, 451; Connecticut has claims on the Western Valley, 506; its representatives make a declaration of rights, vii. 42; the people anxious for a general Congress, 46; they send relief to the suffering people of Boston in 1774, 73; honors the delegates of Massachusetts to Congress as they pass through the colony, 106, 107; thousands of its men in arms start for the relief of Boston, 120; measures taken preparatory to active resistance, 155; armed bands rush to the scene of conflict near Boston, 315, 316; Connecticut attempts to mediate, 321; offers six thousand men, 325; sends one thousand of her sons to garrison and defend Ticonderoga and Crown Point, 365; Connecticut troops with Spencer at Roxbury, 405; with Putnam at Cambridge, 405; with Knowlton and Putnam at the rail-fence near Breed's Hill, 408, 410, 414, 418; attack of the British and their hasty retreat, 424; the Connecticut and New Hampshire men cover the retreat of the Massachusetts men from the redoubt, 430; under Putnam, on Prospect Hill, near Boston, viii. 43; the legislature order the equipment of two armed vessels for the defence of the coast, 68; Connecticut soldiers complained of by Schuyler, 185; many of them leave the army at Cambridge, 218; Governor Trumbull apologizes for them to Washington, 219; others volunteer to take their places, 219; the ministry

intend to infringe on the charter of the colony, 360; instructs its delegates in Congress to vote for independence, 437; sends troops to the defence of New York, ix. 57, 79; Connecticut men on Lake Champlain, 152, 157; the civil government still administered as under the charter, 261; popular education provided for, 271; rule for nomination to high civil office, 271; Connecticut militia sent to Providence, 412; her regiments resolve to return home, 403.

Connolly, John, a land-jobber and willing tool of Lord Dunmore, vii. 162; his letter to the people of Wheeling, 165; arrested in Maryland, viii. 224.

Conservative party formed in New York in 1774, vii. 41; on what founded, 41; their principles and influence, 41, 77, 107; conservative policy of Congress, 138, 149, 150, 356, 358, 361.

Constitutions of civil government in America, not founded on speculative theory, but on the innate idea of justice, and the rights of man, ix. 257; no fifth monarchy men, 258; no desperate hatred of England, 258; no violent departure from the past, 258; sovereignty resides in the people, 258; the people had confidence in themselves, 259; England a land of liberty, 259; why American statesmen became republican, 260; elective franchise, how enjoyed (see *Elective Franchise*), the legislature, how elected in the several states, 265; House of Representatives, how apportioned, 265; great inequality in Maryland and South Carolina, 265; historic precedents generally followed, 266; two legislative bodies, in every state but two, 266; term of service, 266; modes of electing the governor, 267; property qualification, 267; period of service, 268; a conditional veto, 268; the legislature independent of the governor, 269; the appointing power, 269; the judiciary, 270; public education not provided for save in Massachusetts and Connecticut, 270, 271; the people are represented in the government as they truly are, 271; freedom of worship and of religious belief secured to all, 272, 273; religious tests, how far required as qualifications for office, 275; applied chiefly to the Catholic and the Jew, 275; soon eliminated, 275; the church not a part of the state, 276; in freedom of conscience and of worship, America found its nationality, 276; disposition of church property, 277; separation of church and state approved of by all, 277, 278; estates not to be entailed, 279; provision for reforming the civil constitution, 281; the rights of man declared in every constitution except that of South Carolina, 282; theory of political life, 282, 283.

Constitution of South Carolina, x. 155; of Virginia, 223; of Massachusetts, 367; one formed by the British ministry for Eastern Maine, 368.

Contempt, language of, employed by British officials in speaking of the Americans, vi.

- 10, 65, 143, 203, 278, 322, 419, 496, 501, 513, 517, 523.
- Continental army, first assumption of the name, vii, 391; Washington chosen general, 393; his great qualities, 393-400; state of the army on his arrival, 404; want of order, 404; want of experience, 405; imperfect discipline, 405; scanty supplies of military means, 405; want of system, 405; small supply of powder 415; its temper exhibited at Bunker Hill, 416, *et seq.*; election of generals, viii, 26-31; their incompetency, 30; state of the army at Cambridge, 41; its several positions, 43; its numbers, 44; deficiencies, 44; want of discipline and subordination, 45; various skirmishes, 47, 49; nothing done for the army by Congress, 50; its condition unsatisfactory to Washington, 51; the army in three divisions, 61; great want of ammunition, 61; colored men allowed to serve in the army, 110; a committee of Congress visit the camp, 111; arrangements made for a new army, 112; invasion of Canada, 132, *et seq.* (see *Northern Army* and *Montgomery*), distress of the army for want of supplies, 217; enlistments go on slowly, 218; Connecticut men desert, 218; Washington complains, 219; he enlists a new army, 219; great neglect of Congress to provide for the army, 234; Congress votes to increase the army, 245; powder is received in large quantities, 245; the American army employed with decisive effect on the British troops in Boston, 293, *et seq.*; bad policy of short enlistments, 315, 316; small amount of Washington's force in New York, 440; the men poorly equipped, 440; conspiracy against Washington, 441; the first military execution, 441; an exchange of prisoners agreed on, ix, 45, 46; dissensions among the officers, 58; Gates assumes to hold equal rank with Washington, 58; New York city to be defended, 76; the fortifications poorly armed, 77; condition of the army, 77; the Americans defeated on Long Island, 90-94; their sufferings, 97; their confidence in Washington, 98; retreat from Long Island, 103, 104; shameful panic and flight from New York, 119, 120 (see *American Army*).
- Continental Congress meets at Philadelphia, in September, 1774, vii, 125; chooses a president and secretary, 127; number of members, 127; actuated by one spirit, 127; animated discussion on the manner of voting, 123; each colony to have one vote, 130; the session opened with prayer, 131; news from Boston 132, 134; debate on the foundation of colonial rights, 132, *et seq.*; Congress sympathizes with Massachusetts, 134; approves the resolutions of the county of Suffolk, 134, 135; by a compromise, it is agreed to consent to the navigation acts, 139; the British colonial system was thus accepted, 140; the insidious plan of Galloway is rejected, 140, 141; the legislature of Massachusetts applies to Congress for advice, 142; sympathy for Boston, 142; Congress leaves Massachusetts to her own discretion with respect to the form of her government, and approves of her resistance to British aggression, 145; if Britain attempts to execute the regulating acts by force, Congress promise that all America will resist, 145, 146; its declaration of rights, 146; resolves to discontinue all importations from Great Britain and all exports, save of rice, to Britain and the West Indies, 147; inaugurates the abolition of the slave trade, 148; addresses the people of all the provinces, and the people of Great Britain, 148; it petitions the king, 149; strong desire for conciliation, 149; independence not yet desired, 150; the old relations with Britain are earnestly and exclusively sought, 151; Congress adjourns, 149; high character given to it by Lord Chatham, 191; he wishes that the conditions proposed by Congress may be accepted, 191, 192; his splendid eulogy on Congress, 200; second continental Congress meets in May, 1775, 353; essential weakness of this body, 353, 354; has great difficulties to encounter, 354; is swayed by diverse sentiments, 356; unprepared for war, 356; its course was directed by inevitable and unforeseen events, 357; unanimous approval of the conduct of Massachusetts, 357; the first deputy from Georgia appears, 357, 358; Congress instructs New York not to oppose the landing of British troops, 358; unfortunate consequences of this advice, 358, 359; hesitates to approve the taking of Ticonderoga, 361; John Hancock is chosen president, 378; Congress proposes to have the colonies put in a state of defence, 379, 380, 381; while at the same time proposing to negotiate with the king, 379, 380, 381; misgivings of Congress, 381; address to the Canadians, 381, 382; propositions of Lord North are laid on the table, 382, 383; dilatory action of Congress, 383; consents to the occupation of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, 383; adopts the army around Boston, 390; borrows money for the first time, 390, 391; advises Massachusetts not to institute a new government, 391; appoints a solemn fast throughout the twelve colonies, 392, 393; takes measures for organizing a continental army, 393; unanimously elects by ballot George Washington commander-in-chief, 393; his unequalled character, 393-400; the extreme difficulties of his position, 400, 401; the appointment gives universal satisfaction, 402; elects four major-generals, viii, 26; elects eight brigadiers, 30, 31; the character of each, 30, 31; expects but one campaign, 34; its financial system, 35; its plan for the increase of the army, 35; authorizes the invasion of Canada, 35; sets forth the causes for taking up arms, 35, 36; second petition to the king, 37, 38; address to the people of Great Britain, 38; address

to the city of London, 39; their delusive confidence, 39; Congress do nothing for the army round Boston, 50; inefficient as an executive body, 51; it gives authority to employ troops, but no proper cause is taken for raising and equipping an army, 52; no leave for permanent enlistments, 53; plan of confederation proposed by Franklin, 53; Lord North's plan of conciliation is referred to a committee, 54; remembers the friendly interposition of Jamaica, 54; sends to Ireland an expression of sympathy, 55; complains that Howe, an Irishman, is an enemy, 55; its apathy and hesitation, 55; answer to Lord North's plan of conciliation, 56; reasons for rejecting the plan, 56, 57; Congress shuns energetic measures, 57; organizes a post-office, 57; its financial system, 57, 58; paper-money issued, 58; and this virtually irredeemable, 58; Congress refuses to open the American ports, 58; is wanting in sagacity, promptness, and decision, 108; a mean jealousy of New England, 109; Gadsden of South Carolina defends New England, 109; slow progress of Congress, 109, 110; much time spent on small matters, 110; men of color allowed to serve in the army, 110; a committee of Congress visits the camp, 112, 113; Congress undecided, 115; the king's savage proclamation makes them somewhat more decided, 137; Congress encourages New Hampshire and South Carolina to establish a government, 137; it sees the wisdom of a declaration of independence, but postpones the measure, 141; appoints a committee for foreign correspondence, 142; Congress disapproves of Schuyler's proposal to relinquish the invasion of Canada, 182; founds an American navy, 215; secret communications between Congress and the French ministry, 216, 217; invites Virginia to institute a government, 224; Congress at first excludes negroes from the army, afterwards admits them, 233; votes to increase the army, 245; a committee of Congress meets a committee of New York, 279; Congress votes to Washington a medal, commemorative of his success at Boston, 304; dissatisfied with Dr. Smith's eulogy on Montgomery, 315; discusses the policy of short enlistments, 316; more paper-money issued, 318; Congress sends commissioners to Canada, 319; authorizes commissions for privateers, 320; disclaims allegiance to the crown, 320; prohibits the slave-trade, 321; a virtual declaration of independence issued, in the opening of the commerce of the united colonies to all the world, 323; John Adams moves that the people institute governments, 367; the motion prevails, 367; preamble to the resolution, 367; the preamble a virtual declaration of independence, 368; Duane and others oppose it, 368; the Pennsylvania delegates decline to vote upon it, 369; it is adopted, 369; Richard Henry Lee presents resolutions for

independence, 389; they are seconded by John Adams, 389; animated debate upon them, 390; all New England, Virginia, and Georgia for independence, 391; the opponents, 390; the question postponed for three weeks, 392; a committee chosen to prepare a declaration, 392; a committee to form a plan for a confederation, 392; a committee for treaties, 393; inadequate provision made for the army, 441; meeting of Congress to consider the question of independence, 449; who were present, 449; their superior character, 449; their longevity, 449; the order of the day, 451; great speech of John Adams, 451; reply of Dickinson, 452, *et seq.*; he wants delay, 452, *et seq.*; he is answered by Wilson and Witherspoon, 456, 457; the united colonies declared to be free and independent States, 459; signs the declaration of independence, ix. 41, 59; agrees to an exchange of prisoners, 46; plan of a confederation considered, 47, *et seq.*; plan of Dickinson, 49, 50; the plan criticised, 49, 50; debate on the matter of representation in Congress, 53, 54; and on the public lands, 55, 56; the fear of a standing army precludes proper measures for the public defence, 57; Congress too ready to assume the conduct of a campaign, 78; its relations to Gates and to Washington, 78; wish New York to be defended, 76; unreasonable expectations, 101; Sullivan comes with a message from Lord Howe, 110; Congress unwilling to abandon New York, 111; debate on the message from Lord Howe, 112; a committee appointed to meet him, 112; unsatisfactory interview with him, 116, 117; Congress reluctantly yields to the opinion of Washington that New York must be abandoned, 115, 116; dilatory proceedings 131, 132; plan of a treaty with France, 132; the fisheries, 132; free ships make free goods, 132; commissioners to France appointed, 133; neglects to provide an efficient and permanent army, 136, 138; its vain, presumptuous confidence, 173, 174; confirmed in its delusion by Lee, 174; interferes in military operations, 185; a great disaster follows, 190-193; "Congress loves to see matters put to hazard," 185; on the approach of the enemy, Congress adjourns to Baltimore, 213; the temporizing policy of Congress thrown aside, 237; confers on Washington additional power, 238; authorizes a loan in France, 238; and issues more paper-money, 239; mean jealousy entertained of Washington, 255; strange vote of Congress, 255; disregards the advice of Washington, 335; offer of Congress to Gates, 336; confers more power on Washington, 338; helplessness of Congress, 338; it interferes in Pennsylvania, 338; its numerous errors and defects, 343; finally establishes the flag of the United States, 352; removes Schuyler from command, 386; elects Gates his successor, 386; lavish



- favor upon him, 386, 388; slight and neglect Washington, 388; interferes with the commissary department, 388; politics of Congress, 389; appointment of general officers, 389; retires to Lancaster, 402; improper interference of Congress, 433; meets at Yorktown, 436; adopts articles of confederation, 436 (see *Confederation*); appoints a board of war, 454; the Conway cabal, 455; does nothing for the army, 460; desires a winter expedition to Canada, 462; issues more paper money, 468; its depreciation, 468; conflict of opinion between Congress and Washington, 470; Congress for separatism, Washington for union, etc., 470; Congress jealous of the popularity of Washington, 470; ratify the alliance with France, x. 117; address of, to the American people, 118; rejects the offers of Lord North and the British ministry, 122; opens loan offices, 169; issues continental money, 169; tries to obtain foreign loans, 171, 221; invites Richard Price to the country, 172; votes to place the country, in the matter of finance, under the "protection" of the King of France, 173; renounces all coercive power over the several states, 178; is therefore utterly helpless, 179; forms a plan for the invasion of Canada, 176; nothing came of it, 177; wastes time on personal and party interests, 204; its pecuniary difficulties, 205; discussions in reference to peace, 213, *et seq.*; votes in regard to boundaries, 214; its ultimatum, 214; votes touching the fisheries, 215, 217; congratulates the King of France on the birth of a daughter, 216; refuses to prohibit the slave trade, 217; insists on independence, 220; refuses to trust to the magnanimity of Spain, 220; recommends the arming of colored men, 291; finds itself utterly helpless for want of money, 401; resorts to temporary expedients, 401.
- Continental money issued, x. 169; counterfeited by the British ministers, 168, 205, 396; depreciation of it, 168, 173; this prolongs the contest, 168; amount issued, 397; value in 1780, 401; it ceases to circulate, 401.
- Contraband trade with the French sugar islands, iv. 376, 377; measures taken to stop it, 414; widely carried on, v. 157; curious illustration, 158, *note*; the British ministry resolve to suppress it, 160, vi. 248.
- Contrast between George III. and Samuel Adams, vii. 59.
- Convention of Massachusetts assemble at Boston in 1768, vi. 202; object of the meeting misrepresented, 203; Governor Bernard tries to frighten them, but in vain, 204; their energetic proceedings, 205; united with prudence, 204, 206.
- Convention of Saratoga broken by the English, x. 126.
- Conway, brigadier in Washington's army, ix. 397; at Germantown, 424; the Conway cabal, 454, *et seq.*; Washington's opinion of him, 455; his discontent, 455; his injurious words are made known to Washington, 455; Washington has an interview with him, 456; he bids defiance to Washington, 456; Sullivan's high praise of Conway, 456; Conway resigns his commission, 456; is appointed inspector-general and major-general, 457; at last he fully justifies and applauds Washington, 464.
- Conway, General Henry Seymour, wishes to command in America, iv. 293; denies the power of Parliament to tax America, v. 242; his speech against a tax, 244, 245; is secretary of state for the colonies under the Rockingham administration, 303; his character, 304; friendly to America, 365; his speech on the right to tax America, 387, 388; Conway and Grafton wish to see Pitt at the head of the government, 396; his wishes are thwarted, 397; assures the American agents of his good-will, 400; offers in Parliament a resolution in opposition to his avowed sentiments, 415; moves the repeal of the stamp act, 434; the repeal carried, 436; transports of the people, 436; secretary of state and leader in the House of Commons, vi. 21; dismayed by Townsend's insolence, 49; his mild counsels are not heeded, 58; excluded from the ministry, 109; wishes the duty on tea repealed, 276, 360; his motion against continuing the war, x. 529; who supported the motion, 529.
- Cook, colonel, of Connecticut, at the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 409.
- Cook, James, the navigator, iv. 324; in the fleet sent against Quebec, 332.
- Cooper, Myles, president of Columbia college, New York, threatens the employment of savage Indians against the Americans, vii. 119; inculcates the duty of passive obedience, 208; says the friends of the American Congress are guilty of unpardonable crime, 208.
- Cooper, Samuel, minister of Brattle Street Church, Boston, the eloquent and patriotic minister, vi. 241; quoted, 328; his prayer at town-meeting after the Boston massacre, 341; his opinion touching that transaction, 348; advises the election of Franklin as agent in England, 374; his letters quoted, 405; in the pulpit stigmatizes Hutchinson as the progeny of the "old serpent," 461.
- Copley, William, of Boston, vi. 158; true-hearted, 430; town-clerk, 473.
- Copley, John Singleton, at town meeting, vi. 479.
- Copley, Sir Lionel, Governor of Maryland, iii. 31.
- Corce's Indian tribe in North Carolina, iii. 239; attack that colony, 320.
- Corlaer, governor of New York, ii. 419, 420.
- Cornbury, Lord (Edward Hyde), his ill character and administration, iii. 60; governor of New York and New Jersey, 61; embezzles the public finances, 61; his haughty demeanor, 61; his imperious conduct, 62; his career in New Jersey, 63; an enemy to Connecticut, 70.



- Corner, John, captain of the frigate "Romney" in Boston Harbor, vi. 155; his diary quoted, 195, 196, 199, 200, 201, 203.
- Cornstalk, a Shawanese chief, vii. 169.
- Cornwallis, Earl, arrives in Cape Fear river with re-enforcements, viii. 357; his first exploit in America, 358; is consulted by Clinton, 395, 399; joins Howe on Staten Island, ix. 82; lands on Long Island, 83; advances to Flatbush, 84; makes a further advance, 93, 94, 124; attacks fort Washington, 191; commands in New Jersey, 194; enters Brunswick, 201; supposing the fighting to be over, sends his baggage to England, 227; returns to command at Princeton, 241; leads an army to Trenton, 243; rejects the good advice of Donop, 244; finds Washington at Trenton, 244; is held at bay by him, 245; defers an attack till next day, and thus loses the opportunity of crushing the "rebellion," 245; his army goes to sleep, while Washington goes to Princeton, 245; he starts in pursuit, but does not overtake him, 251; Cornwallis at Amboy, 334; at Brunswick, 345; surprises Lincoln at Boundbrook, 346; at Hillsborough, 352; at Brunswick again, 354; is vigorously attacked by Morgan, 355; attacks Stirling's division and drives it back, 356; leaves New Jersey, 356; on the march to Philadelphia, 394; forms a junction with Knyphausen, 395; crosses the Brandywine, 396; the battle, 397, 398; takes possession of Philadelphia, 404; takes part in the battle of Germantown, 428; crosses the Delaware into Jersey, 435; returns to Philadelphia, 435; Germain appoints him to conduct the southern campaign, x. 284; arrives in South Carolina, 304; brings to Clinton a re-enforcement, 304; marches towards Camden, 306; praises a terrible massacre, 307; rivalry between him and Clinton, 308, 309; state of his command, 309; forcibly enrols the male inhabitants among his troops, 310; instances of his cruelty, 311; reaches Camden, S.C., 319; totally routs the American force under Gates, 322; becomes with the British ministry the favorite general, 326; establishes a reign of terror, 327; his military murders, 328; his sequestration of estates, 333; marches into North Carolina, 332; the victory of the backwoodsmen at King's mountain compels him to retreat, 340; sufferings of his troops, 341; his plans wholly frustrated, 344; his barbarity to prisoners, 457; his cruelties not imitated by American officers, 457; pursues Morgan's army, 461; again invades North Carolina, 469; pursues Greene's army through that State, 470, *et seq.*; encounters Greene's army at Guilford, 475; the army of Cornwallis victorious, but ruined there, 481; he retreats to Wilmington, abandoning all North Carolina, out of Wilmington, to the Americans, 481; invades Virginia, 484; excesses committed by his troops, 485; he reaches Petersburg, Va., 499; amount of his force, 500; seizes all the valuable horses, 504; his operations in central Virginia, 504; amount of property destroyed by him, 505; tired of the war, he wishes to get back to Charleston, 508, 509; hatred between him and Clinton, 506; concentrates his force at Yorktown and Gloucester, 511; besieged by Washington, 518, *et seq.*; surrenders, 522; articles of capitulation, 522.
- Cornwallis, Edward, conducts a body of English emigrants to Nova Scotia, iv. 45; his severe treatment of the Acadians, 46; and of the Micmac Indians, 47; endeavors to dislodge a French force on the isthmus, 67, *et seq.*
- Cornwallis, Lord Charles, votes against taxing America, vi. 413.
- Coronado, Francisco Vasquez, despatches an expedition into New Mexico, i. 40 *e*; reaches the river Del Norte, 40 *m*; fails to find a northern Peru, 41; reaches the Arkansas, 41.
- Correspondence, committees of (see *Committees*, &c.).
- Correspondence, foreign, a committee of Congress appointed for, viii. 142, 143.
- Corsica, the British ministry assist its revolt from France, vi. 175, 176.
- Cortereal, Gaspar, ranges the coast of North America, i. 16; kidnaps Indians, 16.
- Cortlandt, colonel of a New York regiment, ix. 409.
- Cory, Giles, of Salem village, iii. 87; pressed to death, 93.
- Cory, Martha, imprisoned for witchcraft, iii. 86; executed, 93.
- Cosby, governor of New York, encroaches on popular liberty, iii. 393; defeated, 394.
- Cotton, its culture introduced into Virginia, i. 179.
- Cotton, Rev. John, arrives in Boston, i. 365; his character, 365; preaches against rotation in office, 366; argues against hereditary office, 385; a code of laws prepared by him, 416.
- Councils, Indian, how conducted, iii. 279.
- Country life, pleasures of, v. 51.
- Court intrigues on the accession of George III. iv. 382, *et seq.*
- Courts of law, opening of the, v. 375.
- Cowhowee river, combat on, iv. 424.
- Cowpens, meaning of the term, x. 462; fierce and obstinate battle there, 464; total defeat of the British, 465.
- Coxe, Daniel, a proprietary of New Jersey, iii. 47; his plan to get possession of the lower Mississippi, 202.
- Craddock, Matthew, proposes the transfer of the Massachusetts charter to America, i. 351; which seems to have been the early design, 351; the design accomplished, 352, *et seq.*; his generosity, 354; defends the Massachusetts colony, 405.
- Crafts, Thomas, of Boston, painter, one of the "Sons of Liberty," in 1765, who hung Oliver in effigy, v. 310.

- Cramahé, lieutenant-governor of Quebec, his preparations for defence, viii. 196.
- Cranfield, Edward, governor of New Hampshire, ii. 116; the whole province mortgaged to him, 117; dissolves the assembly, 117; a new thing in New England, 117; his tyrannical proceedings, 118-120; his imprisonment of Moody, 119; his conduct approved by the English government, 120.
- Craven, Charles, governor of South Carolina, defeats the insurgent Indians, iii. 328.
- Credit, bills of, issued, iii. 186, 209, 387.
- Creek Indians, their numbers in 1775, vii. 337; Georgia exposed to their inroads, 337; the British authorities excite them against the people of Carolina, viii. 88; refuse to unite in a confederacy against the Americans, ix. 161.
- Creek nation of Indians, iii. 250, 251; estimated population, 253; treaty with the English, 331; befriend the Georgia colony, 433; their alliance sought, iv. 345, 347.
- Cresap, Michael, of Maryland, his contests with the Indians, vii. 165; raises a company of riflemen, viii. 63; marches to the siege of Boston, 63; dies, 64.
- Croghan, George, of Pennsylvania, accompanies Gist in his exploring tour, iv. 77; visits the Wyandots, Delawares, Miamis, and other Indian tribes, 77, *et seq.*; negotiates a treaty with them, 79; his second journey in 1751, 82; descends the Ohio, v. 243; his danger, 338; happily succeeds in his mission, 339; urges the colonization of the Illinois country, vi. 32.
- Cromwell, Oliver, his commercial policy, i. 216; permanently established, 218; his war with the Dutch, 217; his vast plans, 217; confirms the patent to Lord Baltimore, 231; did not embark for America, 411; offers the people of Massachusetts estates in Ireland, 444; offers them Jamaica, 446; ever the friend of New England, 446; never its oppressor, 446; head of the independent party in England, ii. 11; religious spirit of his troops, 12; his share in the death of the king, 14, 15; assumes supreme authority, 20; his remarkable character, 20; his great actions, 21; his successive parliaments, 23, *et seq.*; his death, 27; his corpse insulted, 34.
- Cromwell, Richard, acknowledged in Virginia, i. 227.
- Crown, immense patronage of the, vi. 94.
- Crown Point, a fortress there built by the French, iii. 341; military operations for its reduction, iv. 207, *et seq.*, 251; abandoned by the French, 323; taken by Seth Warner, vii. 340; garrisoned by troops from Connecticut, 365; abandoned by the Americans, ix. 58; Carleton lands there, 157; and leaves it, 157.
- Crozat, Anthony, obtains a monopoly of the trade of the Mississippi valley, iii. 347; is disappointed and resigns his charter 348.
- Crucities of the British in South Carolina, x. 307, 310, *et seq.*, 323, 334, 339.
- Cruget, of New York, elected to Parliament from Bristol, vii. 176.
- Culpepper, John, leader in the insurrection in North Carolina, ii. 159; goes to England, 160; his arrest, trial, and acquittal, 161.
- Culpepper, Lord, obtains a grant of a large part of Virginia, ii. 209; is appointed governor for life, 245; his avarice, 246; returns to England, 247; his patent revoked, 249.
- Cumberland, Duke of, brother of George III. votes for removing the troops from Boston, vii. 203; his energetic speech against the employment of German mercenaries, viii. 269.
- Cumberland, William, Duke of, at the head of military affairs, iv. 169; his cruel heart, 170; his orders to Braddock, 170; increases the rigor of the mutiny bill, 171; is thought of as future king of British America, 232; has the chief conduct of the war, 249, 250; is defeated in Germany and compelled to retire, 284; is charged with forming a new ministry, v. 256, *et seq.*; visits Pitt, 260; and presses him to take office, 261, 262; forms a new ministry, 296, *et seq.*; has a seat in the Rockingham cabinet, 301; dies, 367; his merciless disposition, 367.
- Cumberland Island settled, iv. 242.
- Cumming, Sir Alexander, makes a treaty with the Carolina Indians, iii. 332.
- Cummings, Charles, pastor in Southwestern Virginia, vii. 195.
- Cunningham, Patrick, of South Carolina, viii. 86.
- Cunningham, Robert, of South Carolina, viii. 86.
- Cunningham, William, a British officer, his extreme cruelty, x. 458.
- Currency, or circulating medium, false theory respecting, iii. 387; derangements of in the colonies, 388, 389; these lead to collisions with England, 390; state of in Massachusetts, vii. 323.
- Cushing, Thomas, elected to a convention of the people of Massachusetts, vi. 198; representative from Boston to the general court, 284; is not ready for decisive action, 426; refuses to serve on the committee of correspondence, 429; speaker of the House, his feeble advice, 466; he yields to the stronger impulses of Samuel Adams, 469; "the timid speaker," 492; delegate to the Congress at Philadelphia, vii. 64; delegate in Congress from Massachusetts, opposed to independence, viii. 242; he is superseded by Elbridge Gerry, 243.
- Cushman, Robert, agent for the Leyden church in England, i. 303.
- Custom-house officers, their rapacity, v. 162; their acts illegal and oppressive, 162.
- Cuyler, of the New York Congress, viii. 439.

## D.

- Dablon, Claude, missionary to the Onondagas, iii. 143; and to the Chippeways, 152.
- D'Aguesseau, Henry Francis, chancellor of France, opposes the frantic scheme of John Law, iii. 357, 358.
- Dakota or Sioux tribe of Indians, where located, iii. 146, 148, 150, 167, 243, 244.
- Dale, Sir Thomas, governor of Virginia, i. 142; establishes martial law, 143; introduces desirable changes, 150.
- D'Alembert, Jean le Rond, a free-thinker, ix. 233; his famous eulogy of Franklin, 492.
- Dalrymple, Sir John, his pamphlet for America, vii. 285.
- Dalrymple, William, lieutenant-colonel, commander of troops sent to Boston, vi. 207; finds it difficult to procure quarters for his men, 208, *et seq.*; his broils with the people, 314; is ready for an attack on them, 330, 334; removes the troops from Boston, 342, *et seq.*; by the king's order takes possession of the castle, 369, 370.
- Dalvell, Captain, relieves Detroit, v. 126; his night attack on the Indians, 127; is defeated and slain, 127, 128.
- Danbury, Connecticut, expedition of the British to, ix. 346; the village destroyed, 346; hasty retreat of the British, 347.
- Danforth, Thomas, president of Maine under Massachusetts, ii. 114.
- Danforth, Samuel, of Cambridge, Mass., a mandamus councillor, addresses the people and resigns his office, vii. 115.
- Danger arising from the want of a central power, x. 207.
- Daniel, Antoine, his fatiguing and hazardous journey to the Huron country, iii. 122; his martyrdom, 138.
- Daniel, Robert, deputy governor of North Carolina, iii. 21.
- Dare, Virginia, first English child born in the United States, i. 105, 106.
- Darien, Ga., founded, iii. 427, 431; the district of, assembles in a local congress, vii. 206; its patriotic language, 206.
- Dartmouth College exposed to danger from Indian hostility, vii. 279.
- Dartmouth, Earl of (William Legge), president of the board of trade under the Rockingham administration, v. 304; proposes a measure of gross injustice, 322; his conciliatory spirit, vi. 434, 459, 466, 467; confidence of the Americans in him, 466, 468, 471; but drifts along with the cabinet towards coercion, 460; Samuel Adams thinks him a good man, but without greatness of mind, 468; and intrusted with power in order to deceive the American people, 468; with the purest intentions, he pursues the oppressive policy of the cabinet, 472; is disposed to wait patiently, 500; wishes to see lenient measures adopted, 518; basely lends his aid to the king in his measures subversive of all liberty, vii. 58, 59; he instructs Gage to have the leading patriots in Massachusetts arrested and imprisoned and to put down by force the spirit of liberty, 218, 219; his weakness, 221; opposes the bill of Lord Chatham for conciliation, 221; issues sanguinary instructions to Gage, 285; becomes keeper of the privy seal, viii. 165; his character, 165; approves of coercing the Americans, 301. (See *Legge*).
- Dartmouth tea ship arrives at Boston, vi. 477; her owner summoned before the Boston committee, 482; a clearance for her is refused, 483, 484; her cargo of tea thrown overboard, 486, 487.
- D'Artois, Count, afterwards Charles X., longs for war with England, ix. 287.
- Dashwood, Sir Francis, iv. 396.
- Davenport, Rev. John, first minister of New Haven, i. 403; his death, ii. 92.
- Davidson, General, of North Carolina, x. 460, 470.
- Davie, William Richardson, his brave men, x. 334.
- Davies, Rev. Samuel, his encomium on Washington, iv. 190.
- Davis, Isaac, Captain of the Acton minutemen, vii. 299; his earnest bravery, 302; is slain at Concord, 303.
- Dawes, William, goes to Lexington to inform Adams and Hancock of danger, vii. 289; rouses the people on the road, 290.
- Dawn, Field Marshal, defeated by Frederic II. at Leuthen, iv. 288, 289.
- Daye, Stephen, printer, arrives in Boston, i. 415; first printing done in the United States, 415.
- Dayton, Colonel, of New Jersey, x. 372; is thanked for good conduct, 374.
- Dead river in Maine, difficulties encountered by Arnold's expedition on its banks, viii. 193.
- Dean, James, missionary among the Caghnawaga Indians, employed to conciliate the northern tribes, vii. 279.
- Deane, James, his mission to the Six Nations, viii. 418.
- Deane, Silas, of Connecticut, with others, plans the surprise of Ticonderoga, vii. 338; appointed commissioner to France, viii. 318, 319; his character, 318, 319; arrives in Paris, ix. 62; his instructions, 62; he confides in Edward Bancroft, 62; his interview with Vergennes, 63; asks for two hundred field-pieces and clothing, 63; allows himself to disclose important secrets, 64; freights three ships with warlike supplies, 291; he is presented to Louis XVI. and the queen, 489, 490.
- Dearborn, Henry, comes from Nottingham in New Hampshire with men to oppose the British troops, vii. 314; captain of a company in Stark's regiment at the rail fence near Bunker Hill, 419; in the expedition against Quebec, viii. 191; is taken prisoner in the assault, 210; in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 416, 418.
- De Barras, Admiral, arrives in the Chesapeake, x. 515, 516.

- De Berdt, Dennis, agent for Massachusetts in England, v. 398, vi. 41.
- De Bonvouloir, employed by Vergennes to go to America as his agent, viii. 103; his knowledge of the country, 103; his instructions, 103; sails for the colonies, 104; arrives in Philadelphia, 216; has interviews with Franklin and a secret committee of Congress, 216; great importance of these communications, 217; his report to Vergennes, 330.
- Debt of the United States, x. 173.
- Debts to British subjects, contracted before the war, x. 555, 580, 585.
- Declaration of independence, the way prepared for it, viii. 247, 434-447; debate in Congress, and final decision, 448-461; written by Jefferson, and why by him, 392, 462; the draft wholly his own, 465; criticisms in Congress, 465; clause on the slave-trade and slave insurrection, 465, 466; the passage stricken out, 466; the slave-trade first branded as piracy, 466; the omission to be regretted, 467; principles of the declaration, 467; facts therein recounted, 468, *et seq.*; solemn conclusion, 471; character of its bill of rights, 472; its theory in politics, 472; it is written for all humanity, 472; its effect on the nations, 473; its reconciliation of right and fact, 473; it makes no war on all kings, 473; it renounces the rule of George III. not as a king but as a tyrant, 474; there was no wish to revolutionize England, 474; the republic came to America unsought, 474; the declaration formed a nation, 475; why the fourth of July is kept as the anniversary, 475.
- Declaration of rights by Congress, vii. 146.
- Declaration of the rights of man, issued by the convention of Virginia, viii. 381-383.
- Declaratory act, its abominable character, vi. 24.
- Declaratory bill of 1766, what it was, v. 444, 449; opposed by Pitt in the House of Commons, 444; by Camden in the House of Lords, 446-448; it claims the absolute power of Parliament to bind America in all cases whatsoever and to enforce this claim by fire and sword, 444, *et seq.*, 454.
- De Clugny, minister of finance in France, viii. 363; his character, 363.
- Deerfield, Mass., burned in the Indian war, ii. 103; slaughter of Lathrop and his men, 104; again burned and the inhabitants massacred, iii. 212, 213.
- Deerfield in New Hampshire sends a military force to the scene of conflict, vii. 314.
- Defiance, Mount, on Lake George, unoccupied by the Americans, ix. 361; occupied by Burgoyne's army, 366.
- De Grasse, Count, sent with a fleet to America, x. 447; his part in the struggle, 503; arrives with a powerful fleet and army in Chesapeake, 514; his encounter with an English fleet, 515; is master of the Chesapeake, 515; assists in the capture of Cornwallis, 523; defeated and taken prisoner by Rodney in West Indies, 545.
- De Guines, French ambassador at London, viii. 102; his correspondence with Vergennes, 102, 103, 133; he thinks negotiation impossible, 134.
- De Kalb, sent by the Duke of Choiseul to ascertain the state of affairs in America, vi. 66, 67; his report to Choiseul, 132, 133; sent to the relief of South Carolina, x. 314; not fitted to command in America, 315; commands the right wing at Camden, 321; his brave conduct, 323; severely wounded and dies, 323. (See *Kalb*.)
- De la Barre, Governor of Canada, ii. 418; makes war on the Five Nations, 420; is worsted, 422.
- Delancey, James, chief-justice of New York, iv. 25; lieutenant-governor, 104; opposes Franklin's plan of union, 124; advises the interposition of Parliament, 172; his death, 371, *note*; royalist brigadier-general, ix. 85, *note*; takes Woodhull prisoner and takes his life, 100; appointed a brigadier in the British service, ix. 320; enlists men for the army, 320.
- Delancy Family in New York, vii. 76; are royalists, viii. 274.
- Delancy, James, a British officer, his cruelty, x. 562.
- Delaplace, Captain, surrenders to Ethan Allen the fortress of Ticonderoga, vii. 340.
- Delaware (properly De la War), Lord, appointed governor of Virginia, i. 137; his arrival there, 140; his wise administration, 141; returns to England, 142; in Parliament, 149; his death, 152.
- Delaware, colony and state, first settled by the Dutch, i. 281, 282; a colony of Swedes and Finns on that territory, 286, 287; this colony subdued by the Dutch from New Netherland, 297; the territory purchased by the city of Amsterdam, 298; disastrous result, 299; possession of the country taken by the English, 315; the country claimed as an appendage to New York, 319; recovered by the Dutch, 322; restored to the English, 325; retained by the Duke of York, 362; granted to William Penn, 367; present boundaries established, 394; made a separate government, iii. 35; again united to Pennsylvania, 37; the final separation, 44; elects representatives to the first American Congress, v. 329; adopts the Virginia resolves against taxation by Parliament, vi. 282; contributes to the relief of Boston, vii. 74; a military organization begun, 207; the assembly maintains the right of each colony to an equal vote in Congress, 271*b*; its firm patriotism, viii. 75; it assents to the measure of an armed resistance, 75; declares for independence, 437, 438; insists on a vote for each colony, ix. 53; a regiment of very brave troops from this state, 88, 93, 94, 103; constitution of civil government, 262; prepares for the ultimate abolition of slavery, 281; the



- southern county disaffected, 392; had partially abolished slavery, x. 357.
- Delaware Indians, their location, iii. 239; iv. 76, 77, 95, 108, 109, 110; interviews of Franklin and Washington with them, 108, 109; their murders along the Pennsylvania frontier, 241; chastised, and Kittanning, their town, destroyed, 241; combine with other Indians to drive out the English, v. 112, 119; attack fort Pitt, 128, 129; peace made, 210, 221; murdered in cold blood, vii. 165; peace with them, 167; take up arms against the Americans, ix. 160. (See *Lenni Lenape*.)
- Delaware river explored by the Dutch, ii. 276; first settlement on its banks, in New Jersey, 279; obstructed, ix. 422; approach to Philadelphia defended, 422, 429; the obstructions removed, 423, 434; forts Mercer and Mifflin evacuated, 434, 435.
- De Levi. See *Levi*.
- De Longueil, Governor of New France, iii. 342.
- Deméré, Paul, captain in the Cherokee country, iv. 243, 343; is killed, 355.
- Democracy in Rhode Island, i. 393; in Massachusetts, 433, *et seq.*; democratic revolution in England a failure, and why, ii. 1, 17, 18; the party extinct, 31; Vane, the first martyr to its principles, 40; democracy of Connecticut, 55, 56, 59; of Rhode Island, 64; new empire of, hailed in Europe, iv. 15; democracy in Connecticut, 370; in New York, 371; in Pennsylvania, 372.
- De Monts, Sieur, obtains a charter for Acadia, i. 25; settles a colony there, 23; explores the coast of New England, 26; his monopoly revoked, 28.
- Denmark averse to the American cause, x. 56; accedes to the "armed neutrality," 264, 265, 274, 429.
- Departure of General Howe, x. 118; of the British commissioners, 125, 151.
- Deplorable condition of the army, x. 177, 234.
- Depreciation of the currency, x. 168, 173, 396.
- Depredations of the British, x. 333, 504, 505.
- De Rasières, Isaac, his visit to New Plymouth, ii. 280.
- Descartes, René, his philosophy, ix. 500; differences between him and Luther, 500.
- Des Chaillons joins in the savage attack on Haverhill, iii. 214.
- Des Moines river, in Iowa, discovered by Marquette and Joliet, iii. 158.
- De Soto, Ferdinand, his earlier life, i. 41; prepares to invade Florida, 42; lands with a strong force on that peninsula, 43; his Indian guides treacherous, 45; traverses Georgia, Alabama, and Mississippi, 47-51; severe battle with the Indians, 48; his cruelty, 47; reaches the Mississippi, 51; crosses that river, 52; marches through Arkansas and Missouri, 53; harsh treatment of the natives, 54; his death, 56; entire failure of the enterprise, 57; his followers on the Red river, 57; their return, 59.
- D'Estaing, Count, his fleet anchors in the Delaware, x. 145; enters New York Bay, 146; arrives off Newport, 146; sails to attack the British fleet, 147; his fleet damaged by a storm, 148; sails for Boston, 148; is censured by Sullivan, 148; takes Grenada, 235; his operations in South Carolina, 236; his unsuccessful attempt on Savannah, 236; is wounded, 297; sails for France, 238.
- Destructive inroad of British troops into South Carolina, x. 294.
- Detroit occupied as a French post, iii. 194; saved from an attempt of the Fox Indians, 224; in 1763 described, v. 114; the fort there, 115; the population, 115, *note*; siege of it by the Indians, 117, 121; relieved, 126, 127; its population in 1763, vi. 224.
- De Vaudreuil, Governor of Canada, iv. 184. (See *Vaudreuil*.)
- Devens, Richard, of Charlestown, member of the committee of safety, vii. 421.
- De Vries visits Virginia, i. 200; commands an expedition from Holland to the Delaware, ii. 282; goes on an embassy to the Indians, 291.
- Dexter, Samuel, negated as a councillor of Massachusetts, vii. 48.
- Dickinson, General Philemon, of New Jersey his success, ix. 252.
- Dickinson, John, of Pennsylvania, "the illustrious farmer," speaks against the revenue act, vi. 104-106; the "Farmer's Letters," 106; Boston thanks him for that production, 139; the author of the "Farmer's Letters," his great influence in that colony, vii. 44; wanting in vigor of will, 44; his cold feeling towards Boston, 44; proposes moderate measures, 45, 46; his timidity and extreme conservatism, 82; is neglected in the choice of delegates, 82, 83; believes that Parliament may regulate the trade of the colonies, 133; is elected to the first continental Congress, 142; petition of Congress to the king written by him, 149; address of the continental Congress to the Canadians drawn by him, 159; his theoretic views correct, 377; deficient in energy, 377; for a time exercises unbounded influence in Congress, 378; drafts a second petition from Congress to the king, viii. 37; its tame spirit, 38; his apathy, 56; acts in concert with the proprietary government, 72; misuses his power, 74; chosen one of the committee of safety of the province, 75; is immovably opposed to independence, 109, 245; his incivility to John Adams, 109, 245; hinders all attempts at progress, 109, 245; mischievous consequences of instructions to the Pennsylvania delegates in Congress drafted by him, 139; his address to the assembly of New Jersey, 214; opposes a convention of the people in Pennsylvania, 324; is flattered by the tories, 324; keeps aloof from the popular movement, 386; opposes the declaration in Congress, 390; one of the committee for digesting a plan of confederation, 392; of

- the committee on treaties with foreign powers, 393; his position in Congress, 452; at variance with John Adams, 452; his speech in reply to Adams on the question of independence, 452, *et seq.*; his timidity, ix. 47; his plan of a confederation contrasted with Franklin's, 49, 50; its extreme weakness, tending to anarchy, 50; his proposition relative to supplies, 51; is superseded in Congress, 59; refuses an election to Congress, 193.
- Dieskau, Baron, commander of the French forces in Canada, iv. 183; sent to oppose the army of Johnson, 209; falls in battle, 211.
- Difficulties of Congress, x. 169, *et seq.*, 178, 204, 210, 215.
- Dilatory conduct of General Howe, x. 121.
- Dinwiddie, Robert, surveyor-general for the southern colonies, iv. 42; lieutenant-governor of Virginia, recommends an alliance with the Miamis, 97; sends Washington as envoy to the commander of the French on the Ohio, 108; recommends a tax on the colonies, 167, 178, 222; urges the subversion of the charter government, 222; praises Washington, 235.
- Diplomacy of Spain fails, x. 164, 165, 188, 193, *et seq.*, 203.
- Discontent of Spain at the continuance of the war, x. 441.
- Distress of America, x. 418; no remedy but in a stronger government, 419.
- Dixon, Jeremiah, and Charles Mason, their line established, ii. 334.
- Dixwell, John, a regicide, comes to America, ii. 35.
- Dobbs, Governor of North Carolina, iv. 268, 379.
- Dodgington, George Bubb, Lord Melcombe, iv. 98, 99, 388, 412, 413.
- Dogger Bank, naval battle there, x. 451.
- Dongan, Thomas, Governor of New York, ii. 414; resists the building of a fort at Niagara, 422.
- Donop, Count, colonel of Hessian troops, viii. 265; lands with his brigade on Long Island, ix. 83; narrowly escapes death, 85; at White Plains, 181; in New Jersey, 215, 224; his advice to Rall, 216; his diary, 217, *note*; is wounded, 226; the diary quoted, 229, *note*; retreats to Princeton, 239; marches on Trenton, 243; his advice to Cornwallis, 244; his encounter with Wayne, 401; his assault on Red Bank, 430; his failure, 431; is mortally wounded, 431; his dying words, 431.
- Dorchester, great celebration at, in 1769, vi. 309; unites with Boston in the struggle for liberty, vi. 475, 477.
- Dorchester Heights, 407; a commanding position, viii. 292, 293; Washington takes possession of it, 293; the intrenchment, 294; a good night's work, 295, 296; the enemy fear to attack, 297; Nook's Hill occupied, 299, 302; the enemy compelled to leave Boston, 298-300.
- Dorchester Neck, now South Boston, vii. 406.
- D'Orvilliers, French admiral, ix. 249, 250.
- Douglas, William, of Boston, proposes a stamp duty, iv. 58.
- Dover, N. H., settled, i. 328, 329; attack on it and massacre by Indians, iii. 180, 181; another, 187.
- Dowdeswill, chancellor of the exchequer, v. 322, 368, 381, 415; leader of the Rockingham party in the House of Commons, vi. 59; denounces the plan of Charles Townshend, 78; opposes Lord North, 253; wishes the duty on tea repealed, 360; justifies America, 510; strongly opposes the Boston port bill, 513.
- Drake, Sir Francis, explores the western coast of North America, i. 86; visits the colony of Raleigh in North Carolina, 101; conveys the settlers back to England, 102.
- Drayton, William Henry, of South Carolina, viii. 86; president of convention, 345; chief justice, 348; his charge to the grand jury, 353.
- Dreuilletes, Gabriel, from Canada descends the Kennebec, iii. 135; travels among the Abenakis, 136; embarks for the Far West, 146.
- Drummond, Lord, his intrigues at Philadelphia, viii. 244, 318; receives a rebuke for breaking his parole, ix. 82.
- Drummond, Sarah, her intrepidity, ii. 224.
- Drummond, William, first governor of North Carolina, ii. 135; advises the deposition of Berkeley in Virginia, 224; led the rebellion in that colony, 222, 224, 226; suffers death for it, 231.
- Duane, of New York, member of the continental Congress, vii. 79, 127, 133; he proposes to recognise the navigation acts, 139; he advocates the insidious plan of Galloway, 141; his compromising spirit, 379; delegate in Congress from New York, viii. 315, 318; anxious for the arrival of the British commissioners, 327; is averse to separation from Britain, 368; his action in Congress, x. 220.
- Du Barry, Marie Jeanne, countess, the last mistress of Louis XV., vii. 33.
- Du Bois, William, prime minister of France, his infamous character, iii. 324.
- Du Chatelet (see *Chatelet*).
- Duché, Jacob, opens the session of Congress with prayer, vii. 131; his extemporary prayer, 132.
- Dudington, Lieutenant, commander of the revenue schooner "Gaspee," vi. 418; is wounded, 419.
- Dudley, Joseph, sent to England as agent of Massachusetts, ii. 123; president of the provisional government of that colony, 425; his charge to a packed jury, 427; chief justice of New York, iii. 54; urges the ministry to revoke the charter of Connecticut, 70; governor of Massachusetts, 99; endeavors to subvert the liberties of his country, 100; his character, 100; meets the Indians at Casco, iii. 211.
- Dudley, Thomas, deputy governor of Massachusetts, i. 355, 359; his intolerant spirit, 449.

- Duffield, George, of Philadelphia, his sermon likening George III. to Pharaoh, viii. 385.
- Duhaut, the murderer of La Salle, iii. 173; is himself murdered, 174.
- Dumas, editor of *Vattel*, writes to Franklin on European interest in American affairs, viii. 216.
- Dulany, Daniel, of Maryland, his arguments against the stamp act, v. 326; mentioned with honor by William Pitt, 327; his apathy, viii. 76.
- Dummer, Jeremiah, agent in England for Massachusetts, iii. 382.
- Dunbar, Colonel Thomas, in Braddock's army, iv. 186; destroys the military stores, 191; his shameful retreat, 191, 192.
- Dunbar, Samuel, minister of Stoughton, in Massachusetts, his prophetic prayer at a county convention, vii. 109.
- Dundas, Henry (afterwards Lord Melville), his speech against the Americans, vii. 253.
- Dunmore, Countess of, congratulated on her arrival in Virginia, vii. 52.
- Dunmore, Earl of (Murray), royal governor of New York, vi. 334; is involved in an unworthy strife, 384; justifies the "Regulators" of North Carolina, 401; his rapacity, vii. 52, 161, 162; dissolves the Virginia House of Assembly, 54; takes possession for himself of Pittsburgh and its dependencies, 162; claims the country on the Scioto, the Wabash, and the Illinois, 163; calls out the militia to resist Indian hostility, 166, 167; their heroic conduct, 169; seizes the powder of the colony, 275, 276; threatens to free and arm the slaves, and to lay Williamsburg in ashes, 276, 277; great alarm and excitement, 276, 334, 385; he convenes the Assembly, 384; vetoes a bill of that body, 385; becomes uneasy, and apologizes, 386; takes refuge on board a man-of-war at York, 386; his rash conduct, viii. 79; abdicates the government, 79; driven from the land, he maintains command of the water of Virginia by means of a flotilla, 220; plunders Holt's printing office, 220; blockades Hampton, 221; is repulsed with loss, 222; his foray at the Great Bridge, 222; proclaims martial law, 223; invites servants and negroes to rise against their masters, 223; his extensive plans, 223, 224; is routed from Great Bridge, 227; receives arms for the negroes, 229; is refused provisions for himself and the fleet, 229; to glut his vengeance, Norfolk is reduced to ashes, 230, 231; his anger because the British expedition is not sent to Virginia, 282, 283; is driven from the land, ix. 35; his black allies do not help him, 35, 36; his adherents disperse, 36; he arrives at Staten Island, 82.
- Dunning, John [Lord Ashburton], solicitor-general of England, vi. 206, 233, 360; superseded by Thurlow, 358; wishes a repeal of the duty on tea, 360; is counsel for Franklin before the privy council, 494; his speech, 494, 495, 498; vindicates the course of the American people, vii. 223; he defends the right of the Americans to fish on the Banks, 239; a member of the Rockingham ministry, x. 534.
- Duplessis, Manduit, a French officer at Brandywine, ix. 399; his gallant conduct at Germantown, 426.
- Du Poisson, Jesuit missionary among the Arkansas, iii. 361; slain by the Natchez 362; his death avenged, 362.
- Duquesne, fort, now Pittsburg, a fort commenced there by the Ohio company, iv. 108, 112, 116; becomes a French fort, 117; taken by the English and provincial troops, 311.
- Duquesne, Marquis, governor of Canada, sends a powerful force to occupy the Ohio valley, iv. 107.
- Durand, French minister, at London, vi. 95; his opinions touching the dispute of the mother country with America, 95; predicts American independence, 95; his correspondence with Choiseul, 95, 96, 99, 111.
- Durant, or Durand, George, has a grant of land in North Carolina, ii. 134; joins in the insurrection of 1679, 160; a judge, 162.
- Durkee, John, of Connecticut, active in the cause of liberty, v. 441.
- Dustin, Hannah, of Haverhill, taken by Indians, iii. 188; her escape, 189; heroic conduct of her husband and herself, 189.
- Dutch first maintain the freedom of the seas, x. 59, 255; their strong sympathies for America, 60; receive ungenerous treatment from England, 59; afraid of a war with England, 262; decline to make a treaty of commerce with America, 262; suffer from the ravages of British cruisers, 264, 270; submit to the insolence of England, 264; Paul Jones's squadron protected by the Dutch, 272; a Dutch squadron attacked by an English one, 275; Holland accedes to the armed neutrality, 281; Dutch ships captured and condemned by England in time of peace, 427; they lose their possessions in both the Indies, 438, 440; they fight the English at the Dogger Bank, 451 (see *Netherlands* and *Holland*).
- Dutch Americans in New York, inflamed against England, vii. 249.
- Dutch colonies (see *New Netherland*).
- Dutch commerce, its vast extent, i. 215, 216.
- Dutch East India Company chartered, ii. 263.
- Dutch republic, defects in its constitution, x. 258; difficulties in the public administration, 259; want of unity, 261; distracted by foreign influence, 259; acknowledges American independence, 527, 528.
- Dutch West India Company proposed, 261, 275; chartered, 278; its resources, 278; plants colonies extensively, 278 (see *New Netherland*).
- Duties on glass, paper, red and white lead, painters' colors, and paper, imported into America, being articles of British manufacture, an act passed for levying, vi. 84;

contrary to the true principles of commerce, 276; the duty produces only a paltry sum, 276; the repeal promised, 278; the act repealed, 351, 352.

Duty on tea, vi. 84 (see *Tea*).

Dyer, Eliphalet, of Connecticut, urges union, v. 194; a delegate in the first American Congress, 346; his opposition to the stamp act, 351.

Dyer, Mary, a Quaker, comes to Boston, i. 452; is banished, but returns, 456; sentenced to death, reprieved, sent away, again returns, and is hanged, 457.

## E.

Early envoys from France observe the antagonism between the North and the South, x. 349.

East India Company, their impoverished condition, arising from the refusal of the colonies to receive their tea, vi. 457, 458; they are allowed the right of exporting tea to America free of duty, 458; they export it, 465; proposal to pay an indemnity to them for the destruction of the tea, vii. 65, 82, 241; by the direction of the king exports tea to America, viii. 127; resisted by the colonists, 127.

East Indies, British dominions in the, v. 59.

Easton, Colonel, in the Northern army, viii. 187.

Easton, Colonel James, engages in the expedition for taking Ticonderoga, vii. 339.

Easty, Mary, of Topsfield, imprisoned for witchcraft, iii. 87; executed, 93.

Eaton, Theophilus, governor of the colony of New Haven, i. 403.

Ecuyer, Captain Simeon, commander at fort Pitt, v. 125; his vigorous defence against the Indians in Pontiac's war, 125, 128, 129; wounded, 129.

Eden, Robert, governor of Maryland, vi. 315, 406, viii. 77; his prudent conduct, 77; his letters are intercepted, 354; he is put under arrest on his parole, 354.

Eden, William, arrives as a commissioner to the revolted colonies, x. 122; his mission a mere farce, 123; leaves the country, 125, 151; proposes the repeal of an act oppressive to Ireland, 548.

Edes, Benjamin, a printer of Boston, one of the "Sons of Liberty," v. 310.

Edes [Benjamin], and Gill [John], printers of the "Boston Gazette," vi. 97, 98; patriotic and bold utterances of that paper, 97, 98; these utterances denounced in Parliament, 107; "Vindex" [Samuel Adams], in that paper, 247; these "trumpeters of sedition" to be "taken off," 251.

Edes, of a newspaper, v. 377.

Edge Hill, two battles at, v. 131, *note*.

Education, system of, in England, v. 48, 49; wanting to the common people, 48; the schools and universities, 49; Catholics in Ireland debarred from, 68; state of, in Boston, vi. 241; of the people urged, viii.

372; the whole people provided for in Massachusetts and Connecticut and nowhere else, ix. 270, 271.

Edwards, John, of South Carolina, resists proposals of submission to Great Britain, x. 233.

Edwards, Jonathan, his noble conception of a true history, iii. 399; recognises the law of human progress, 399; a vivid expression of his touching the divine omnipresence, iv. 151; his system of theology, 155, *et seq.*

Efficient government, the great want of the country, x. 402, *et seq.*

Effingham, Earl of, refuses to serve against the Americans, vii. 344.

Effingham, Lord Howard of, governor of Virginia, ii. 249; a mean man, 249.

Egmont, Lord, proposes the feudal system for America, v. 162; speech of, on the declaratory bill, 49.

Egremont, Earl of (Charles Wyndham), iv. 247; successor of Pitt in the ministry, iv. 412, 428; secretary of state for the colonies, 433; in the cabinet described, v. 80; secretary of state for the colonies, 96, 107; his inquiries, 107, *note*; would have included in one province Canada and all the West, 135; his zeal for taxing America, 136; the king wishes to be rid of him, 140; his unpleasant interview with the king, 140; his death, 142.

Elective franchise should be more equally diffused, v. 447; its theory, ix. 263; the privilege enjoyed under various restrictions, 263; qualifications of voters in the several states, 263; qualifications of race, of color, of age, of residence, of belief, 263; vote by word of mouth, 264; by ballot, 264; by proxy, 264; freehold and property qualifications, 264.

Eliot, Andrew, of Boston, his declaration in relation to the wishes of America, vi. 73; evidence furnished by him touching the authorship of certain papers, 119, *note*, 123, *note*; his letters quoted, 145, 205, 209, 213, 252.

Eliot, Rev. John, of Roxbury; a treatise of his condemned, ii. 73; his efforts to instruct and Christianize the Indians, 95, 96.

Elizabeth, empress of Russia, dies, iv. 434; her weak character, 434.

Elizabeth, Queen, favors English commerce, i. 80, 81; "the godmother" of Virginia, 103.

Elizabethtown, N. J., repulse of the British there, x. 374, 375.

Elizabethtown Purchase, ii. 317; whence the name, 318.

Elkhorn, valley of the, in Kentucky, first visited by white men, vi. 299, 300.

Elliot, Bernard, of South Carolina, he and others take possession of fort Johnson, viii. 90.

Elliot, British minister at Berlin, ix. 474; hires a burglar to steal Arthur Lee's papers, 474.

Elliot, George Augustus, General (Lord Heathfield), the brave defender of Gibraltar, x. 581.



- Elliot, Gilbert, his speech in Parliament, v. 245, 299, 373; his speech in the House of Commons, viii. 162.
- Elliot, Susanna Smith, presents a pair of colors to the brave defenders of fort Moultrie, viii. 413.
- Ellis, Henry, governor of Georgia, iv. 380; advises the taxation of America, v. 137.
- Ellis, Welbore, secretary of war, v. 86; gives order for the subordination of the civil to the military power, 235; brings in a bill for the extension of the mutiny act to America, 249; opposes the reception in Parliament of the petition of the American Congress, 399.
- Ellsworth, Oliver, in favor of "protection" from France, x. 173.
- Emerson, William, minister of Concord, appears in arms in defence of his country, vii. 290, 303; notes the courts of the month as among the greatest of the age, 310.
- Emigration, impulse given to it in 1763, v. 165.
- Emigration westward, vi. 33, 34, 297, 298, 471, 505, 506; Hillsborough opposes it, 225; origin of Tennessee, 377, *et seq.* (see *Regulators*); to America promoted by oppression in Europe, x. 84.
- Endicott, John, one of the patentees of Massachusetts, i. 340; his character, 340; sent over as governor, 341; rebukes the revellers at Mount Wollaston, 341; occupies Charlestown, 347; again governor of Massachusetts, and receives the regicides, ii. 35; his speech, 82; his death, 82.
- Energy of the German emperors of the Saxon line, x. 72.
- England, rise of commercial adventure in, i. 9; first American enterprise of, 10; early English voyages to America, 75, *et seq.*; a northwest passage to India attempted, 76, 77; the first act of Parliament concerning America, 77; trades with Archangel, 79; first attempt to plant a colony, 84; its condition favored colonization, 118; slavery existed in England, 162; English participation in the slave trade, 173; restrictive policy of the English government, 196, 203; navigation act of 1651, 211; England in possession of Canada, 335; jealous of New England, 406; civil war, ii. 8; two parties in Parliament, 9; execution of the king, 15; the constitution subverted, 6, 17; fruitless attempts to restore the monarchy, 18, 19; usurpation of Cromwell, 20; an English republic impossible, 17, 21; restoration of the Stuarts, 28, *et seq.*; trial and execution of regicides, 32, *et seq.*; navigation act of, 1660, 42; its oppressive character, 43, *et seq.*; injurious to the colonies and to the English, 45-48; royal commissioners for New England, 77; the English government overawed by the stern attitude of Massachusetts, 89, 90; the struggle renewed, 111, 121; the colony denies the supremacy of Parliament, 122; a *quo warranto* issued against the charter, 124; review of public affairs after the restoration, 432, *et seq.*; ministry of Clarendon, 433; his downfall, 433; the cabal, 433; Buckingham and Shaftesbury, 434; the declaration of indulgence, 435, 443; fickleness of the king, 435, 443; Danby, 435, 443; his impeachment, 436; Shaftesbury again in power, 436; again displaced, 436; the *habeas corpus*, 436; the exclusion bill, 437; public agitation, 437; liberty overthrown, 438; execution of Lord William Russell and of Algernon Sidney, 439; accession of James II., 439; the whig and tory parties, 441; the party of William Penn, 442; causes which led to the revolution of 1688, 440, *et seq.*; the revolution accomplished, 444; its aristocratic character, iii. 11, 82; Parliament claims absolute power over the colonies, 101, 105; but does not presume to tax them, 102, 383; the purpose entertained of extending Episcopacy, 102; England does not deny to the colonies personal freedom, 103; the restrictive commercial system enforced, 105, 384; wool the great staple of England, 105; colonial industry discouraged, 105; naval stores, 106; England claims the pine-trees for masts, 106; animosity between France and England, 116-118; struggle for territory in North America, 118; England triumphant in Europe, 225; dictates the treaty of Utrecht, 226; gains the assiento, 231; England becomes wealthy and powerful by the slave trade, 233; obtains extensive possessions in America, 233, 234; claims the whole of Upper Canada, 340; jealous of French encroachments, 344; claims the Five Nations as subjects, 340; colonial industry discouraged, 384; the interests of New England sacrificed; of the Carolinas promoted, 385; English legislation promotes slavery in the Southern colonies, 402 (see *Slaves and Slavery*); severity of English laws concerning property, 418; number annually imprisoned for poverty, 418; England to promote a contraband traffic, declares war with Spain, 438; its varied success, 439, *et seq.*; the mother of the language and laws of the colonies, iv. 15; relation to her, of the colonies, 15; did not intend her colonies to be free, 56; encouraged the slave trade, 63; her relations with France in America, 67, *et seq.*; dissensions in the cabinet, 86, 87; threatening attitude of France in America, 93; state of England in 1752, 98; did nothing to repel French encroachment, 102, 103, 113; the New-castle administration, 159; its imbecility, 164, 165; and indecision, 168; taxation of the colonies proposed, 167, 172, 176; fruitless negotiations with France, 176; Braddock sent to America, 170, 177; the government incline to enforce the authority of the parent state, 179; alarm felt at the rapid increase of colonial population, 214; uncertain attitude of England towards France, 216, 217; urges Russia to inter-

fere in the affairs of Germany, 219; tries to paralyze the power of Prussia, 219; refunds in part the military expenses of the northern colonies, 227; act for quartering soldiers on the inhabitants, 230; declaration of war against France, 233; England seizes enemy's property in neutral ships, 234; prohibits the commerce of the Netherlands in naval stores, and declares the whole coast of France in a state of blockade, 234; end of the Newcastle administration, 247; Pitt for a short time prime minister, 247-250; England humiliated in America, 267; and in Europe, 270; rights of the colonies denied by British officials, 269, 270; England without a ministry, 273; Pitt forms a cabinet, 274; important successes in America, 296, 305, 311; in Africa and the West Indies, 316; shall Canada be given up? 363, *et seq.*; the design to remodel the American provinces, and crush the spirit of liberty, 370; the decision to tax America, 381; accession of George III., 382; court intrigues, 383; character of the young king, 386, 387; negotiations with France, 393; their ill success, 395, 396; demands of Spain, 401; the ultimatum of England, 402; a general thirst for conquest, 403; urges the slave trade upon the colonies, 421; England and Spain at war, 432; offers Austria acquisitions in Italy, 433; pusillanimous endeavors to procure peace, 433, 434; perfidy towards Prussia, 435; deserts Prussia, 436; reorganization of the cabinet, 438; negotiations for peace, 439; treaty of peace, 452; large accessions to England of territory and of power, 452; a standing army to be kept in America after the peace, 454; England gains Canada, but loses America, 460, 461; its social and political condition in 1763, v. 32, *et seq.*; the asylum of independent thought, the home of freedom, 32; loyalty to law, and stability of customs and institutions, 33; a monarchy limited by law, 33; an aristocratic republic, 34; the church subordinate to the state, 34, 35; the church never in conflict with the ruling power, 36; the House of Lords sitting by hereditary right, but constantly replenished from the untitled ranks, 37; the House of Commons representing the land of England, but not the men, 38; the king reigned, but did not govern, 43; a free press governed the entire administration, 44; English literature unfettered, and the free expression of the public mind, 45; scepticism existed, but had not penetrated the masses, 46; philosophy rebuked its own excesses, 47; courts of law, 47, 48; system of education, independent of rank, 49; the common people not able to write or read, 48; life in the towns, 50; the interests of trade uppermost, 50; life in the country, 50; predominance of the aristocracy, 51; severity of the game laws, 52; manufactures, as yet limited and imperfect, 44, 55; benefits of the English constitution,

56; the people proud of it, 57; her ministry, 79, 89; plans for taxing America, 87, *et seq.*; loyalty of the colonies to her, 90; enforcement of the English navigation acts, 92, 157, *et seq.*; new taxes for England herself, and opposition thereto, 93; a triumvirate ministry, 95, 96; solidity of the English constitution, 97 (see *Grenville*); the British oligarchy at its culminating point, 265; public opinion fluctuates with regard to America, 363, *et seq.*; English love of liberty sustains America, 366; merchants and manufacturers alarmed, 364, 367; effect of the death of the Duke of Cumberland, 367; debate in Parliament in relation to affairs in America, 368, *et seq.*; arguments against the repeal of the stamp act, 369; the ministry undecided, 381; meeting of Parliament, 382; great speech of Pitt denying the competency of Parliament to tax America, 383-387, 391-395; repeal of the stamp act, 436; the declaratory bill introduced into the House of Commons, 444; Pitt speaks against it, 444; it passes, 445; in the House of Lords, 446; Camden earnestly opposes it, 446-448; it passes, 449; final repeal of the stamp act, 450; protest against the repeal by the Duke of Bedford and his adherents, 451, 487; a second protest by Earl Temple and his friends, 453; its people, in 1767, talk much about America, vi. 56; great pains to irritate them against America, 64; they complain that America is exempt from taxation, 64; discussion in the House of Lords on American affairs, 65, 66; corruption of the body-politic, 94; the ministry changed, 109; they determine to crush the spirit of liberty in America, 110, *et seq.*; extreme measures proposed, 130; the profligacy and corruption of Parliament, 137; the ministry misled by Hutchinson and others, 153; troops and ships of war ordered to Boston, 153; the cause of England more injured by its own servants than by all others, 154, *note*; the ministry and the people incensed against Boston, 173, 199; the law officers of England can find no treason in the proceedings of Massachusetts, 206, 233; troops sent to Boston find no enemy there, 207, *et seq.*; a weak and incapable ministry, 215; determines to trample down the colonies, 216; has spies in all foreign ports, 236; supports a restrictive commercial system, 258, 259; the ministry restrained in measures against America by the English constitution, 265, 266; repeal of the revenue act refused, 274; the real question at issue in the controversy, 318, 319; all parts of the British empire have a common cause, 319; the people of England long for freedom, 319, 320; reform proposed by Chatham, 320; the proposal fails, and the new tory party controls the government, 327; yet popular liberty constantly gains ground, 359; great joy at the revival of American trade in 1770, 367; the king orders measures to be

taken preparatory to closing the port of Boston, 367; dispute with Spain concerning the Falkland Islands, 387; war averted, 388; "slaves cannot breathe in England," — the celebrated decision by Lord Mansfield in 1772, 415, 416; list of grievances suffered by America from England, 432, 433; England grows weary of the strife, 434; and loses heavily by it, 434; great commercial distress of the East India Company arising from the refusal of the Americans to receive tea, 457, 458; Englishmen abuse Franklin, 492, 493; a great clamor against America, 493; but it is found that America has law on its side, 503, 513; gross calumnies and misrepresentations of America, 511; the Boston port bill passes the House of Commons, 511, 512; and the House of Lords, 518; other stringent acts passed, 525-527; decline of liberty in Europe, 527; the House of Commons essentially corrupt, 528; state of public opinion there in 1774, vii. 24; seeks Indian allies against the Americans, 118; no English precedents for the measure, 118; her power defied by Massachusetts, 123; the fourteenth Parliament, 174; the elections carried by utter misrepresentation, and gross venality, 174; the French minister purchases a borough, and thus obtains a vote, 174, 175; the true spirit of England on the side of America, 203, 204; plans of the ministry, 217, 218; instructions to Gage to call out the savages, and to excite a servile insurrection, 222; war declared against America, 227; England excludes New England from the Newfoundland fisheries, 240, 253; a majority of the people abhor the proposal of going to war with their brethren in America, 241; England's arrogant demand on Holland, 246; news arrives in England of the bloodshed at Lexington and Concord, 342; the effect thereby produced, 342; expressions of sorrow, 343; funds raised for sufferers at Lexington and Concord, 344; expectations in England, 406; solicits the aid of Indian tribes against the colonists, viii. 55; sorrow felt there on receiving news of the battle of Bunker Hill, 100; England supposed to be a match for France and Spain united, 102; insult offered to the French minister, 102; question at issue between England and her colonies, 122-129; England has nothing to gain by the strife with America, 131; but the king is not opposed in his plans, 132; the king's savage proclamation, 132, 133; exasperation of party spirit caused thereby, 144; loyal addresses, but no enlistments, 145; the king's speech, 160 (see *George III.*); changes in the ministry, 165; a ministry the weakest and lowest in principle of the century now assume power, 165; their policy not in accordance with the true spirit of England, 167; England at variance with herself, 359; the ministry are determined to reduce the colonies to absolute submission,

360; friends of liberty despondent, 361; tax on newspapers, 361; state of parties there, ix. 71; by the declaration of independence America lost many friends, 71, 72; the government stronger than before, 72; England does not now claim the right to tax her colonies, 72; but still claims power over charters, 73; the declaration of independence unites England against the Americans, 140, 141; the policy of the ministry sustained by Parliament, 144; unsatisfactory accounts received from America, 144; no hatred of England long retained in America, 258; her overbearing conduct towards Holland, 292; the English ambassador remonstrates against assistance furnished by France to the United States, 291, 297; vigorous efforts to gain recruits for military service, 313; threats to capture American sailors, 313; proceedings to obtain soldiers in Germany, 313-318; enlistments of royalists in America, 320; number enlisted, 320; the king and ministry give orders for the employment of savages, 321, 322; letters of marque issued against American vessels, 323; finances of England, 324; England inconsistent with herself, 325; employs savage Indians in the war against her own children, 363, 371, 376-383; many English officers believe the Americans cannot be subjugated, 435; England cannot obtain further supplies of troops from Germany, 475; session of Parliament opened, 477; the king still insists on reducing the American states, without regard to cost, 477; speech of Chatham, 477; Lord Amherst says that an additional army of forty thousand men is needed, 480; the king will not suffer Lord North to flinch, 481; news arrives of the treaty of France with the United States, 482; Lord North's conciliatory bills, 484; Hartley's attempt with Franklin, 485; Franklin's reply, 485; war between England and France, 486; Lord North desires to have Chatham in the ministry, 486; the king's violent anger at the proposal, 487, 488; England indirectly proposes to acknowledge independence on conditions, 497; the offer refused, 497; a political manœuvre, 497; condition of, in 1778, x. 36; weakness, of the administration, 36; state of parties, 37; theory of the supremacy of Parliament carried to excess, 38; this theory becomes an instrument of despotism, 38; is in conflict with the principle of individual right, 39; the struggle between the two leads to the American revolution, 39; a new liberal party had arisen under the influence of the elder Pitt, 39; Frederic of Prussia will not aid England, 108; she obtains aid from Anspach and Hesse, 114; is ruled by an aristocracy, 117; the sentiment of loyalty and affection for England disappears in her late colonies, and why, 140; in England, Americans become more respected, 141; her ablest men are for giving up the contest, 142, 143; invasion of England threat-



- ened by France, 163, 249; shameful action of England in counterfeiting the American currency, 168; no progress made in the recovery of America, 178; war with France, 116; how commenced, 116, 117; when commenced, 145; war with Spain, 246; ravages of England on neutral commerce, 264, 270, 427; arrogant tone of England, 264, 423; is willing to exchange Gibraltar for Porto Rico, 451; three parties in England, in 1782, 531, 532; she recovers the dominion of the sea, 545; the American contest felt in England to be hopeless, 529; change of ministry, 531; she becomes reconciled to the idea of peace, 545; her ministry anxious to get out of the war, and invite proposals for peace, 546; the treaty signed, 591.
- English barbarity. (See under *British*.)
- English constitution held by the colonies in high esteem, iv. 16; rights of Englishmen, how far claimed by the colonists, 15; more powerful than the will of the reigning monarch, v. 97.
- English language more generally diffused by the American revolution, iv. 13; destined to possess the North-American continent, 456.
- English liberty, how affected by the revolution of 1688, iii. 4.
- English ministry, their perfidious conduct towards Holland, x. 427, 429, 431, 433, 436; they, in time of peace, order a general attack on the commerce and possessions of Holland, 438; change of the ministry, 531; the outgoing ministry characterized, 531; the new ministry, of whom composed, 534. (See *Shelburne*.)
- English perfidy, x. 427, 439.
- English plan for the conquest of the Southern States, x. 283.
- Enos, Roger, lieutenant-colonel under Arnold, in the expedition against Quebec, viii. 190; abandons the enterprise, 193.
- Episcopacy and the common prayer excluded from the Massachusetts colony, i. 350; established by law in Virginia, 155; introduced into Massachusetts, ii. 427; in North Carolina, ii. 150, iii. 21; in South Carolina, 18; in Maryland, 32; in New York, 58; no bishops allowed, and why, iii. 102; in America supposed to be essential to the royal authority, iv. 38, 39; American feeling against, vi. 54, 516.
- Epsom, in New Hampshire, sends a body of armed men to the scene of conflict, vii. 314.
- Equality, natural, of man declared, iv. 12, 13.
- Erie, lake, visited by La Salle, iii. 162; first vessel on its waters, the "Griffin," built for him, 164.
- Erie tribe of Indians exterminated by the Five Nations, iii. 144, 146.
- Ernest, Duke of Saxony, refuses to aid England, x. 94.
- Erskine, Sir William, his advice to Cornwallis at Trenton, ix. 245; in the expedition to Danbury, 346; covers the retreat at Sangatuck, 348.
- Essex County, little regiment came thence to Bunker Hill, vii. 418.
- Etchemins, Indian tribe in Maine, iii. 237.
- Etherington, Captain George, commands at Mackinaw, v. 122.
- Europe, the crisis of revolution in, foreboded, iv. 4; of the middle ages, men are tired of it, 278; sufferings of, during the seven years' war, 455; state of, in 1774; vii. 25, *et seq.*; great expectation there excited by the contest in America, 287; effects of the day of Lexington and Concord there, 342, *et seq.*; curiosity excited in, by the king's application to Russia for troops, viii. 155; political and social corruption of, 364; the worship of humanity general, 364; the age refuses to look beyond the senses, 364; a blind, unreasoning conservatism, 365; general scepticism, 365; Hume's philosophy, 366; state of opinion there in the winter of 1776, ix. 226; the American cause regarded as hopeless, 226; the powers of Europe favor the United States, 497.
- Eutaw Springs, battle of, x. 493; two engagements there, 494; great loss of the Americans, though victorious, x. 494.
- Ewing, Colonel, on the Delaware, ix. 224.
- Excesses of the royalists in South Carolina, x. 310, 312, 342.
- Existence of a western continent suspected in ancient times, i. 6.
- Existence of God not known to the Indians, iii. 285, 286.
- Expedition against Louisburg, iii. 458, *et seq.*; of what composed, 459; the armament arrives, 459; the fortress surrenders, 463.
- Experience confirms by induction the intuitions of reason, viii. 117.

## F.

- Fairfax county, in Virginia, adopts a series of patriotic resolutions, vii. 74; a military organization recommended, 297.
- Fairfield, in Connecticut, destroyed by British troops, x. 227.
- Falkland Islands, dispute concerning, vi. 287, *et seq.*
- Falmouth, now Portland, disturbance at, vi. 31; burned by Mowat, viii. 113.
- Faneuil Hall, the place for town meetings in Boston, vi. 241; convention of Massachusetts at, 198, 203; British troops occupy it, 209; town-meeting there the day after the massacre, 341; town-meeting there to appoint a committee of correspondence, 427; meeting there to hear the report, 432; the cradle of American liberty, vii. 35; meeting there of nine committees from as many towns, 35; decides that the tea shall not be paid for, 36; proceedings there, 61; a meeting there of delegates from three counties, 109, 110.
- Fanning, David, a British officer, his extreme cruelty, x. 560.



- Fanning, Edmund, attorney and register of deeds, greatly obnoxious to the people in North Carolina, vi. 36; his misdeeds, 36, 184; cal's out the militia, 186; his rash proceedings, 188; chastised by the people, 382.
- Farewell of Sir William Howe to the American contest, x. 119; of the English commissioners to America, 151; its ferocious character, 151.
- "Farmer's Letters," by John Dickinson, vi. 106; complained of by the British crown officers, 128; republished in England, 148; translated and circulated in France, 149; a reply to them by George Grenville, 258.
- Faucitt, Colonel William, agent of George III. for procuring troops on the continent, viii. 101, 255, *et seq.*; his mission to Brunswick, 255-258; to Hesse Cassell, 259, *et seq.*
- Fayette. (See *Lafayette*.)
- Fellows, brigadier of Massachusetts troops, ix. 119.
- Fendall, Josias, deputy in Maryland for Lord Baltimore, i. 233; his equitable administration, 263; tries to make an insurrection, ii. 241.
- Fenwick, John, purchases West New Jersey for the Quakers, ii. 355; conducts a colony of Quakers to the Delaware, 355.
- Ferdinand, Prince, afterwards Duke of Brunswick, his vile character, viii. 256, 257; agrees to furnish troops to England against America, 257; his family sorrows, 259; the overthrow of Prussia in the campaign of Jena due to his incompetence, 259.
- Ferguson, Major Patrick, forcibly enrols Carolinians in the British army, x. 310, 332; is sent for this purpose to the highlands of Carolina, 332; encounters the backwoodsmen at King's Mountain, 336-338; is killed there, 339.
- Ferguson, of South Carolina, resists proposals of sedition, x. 293.
- Fernandez, Francisco, discovers Yucatan, i. 34; is killed, 35.
- Feudal aristocracy of Europe in 1774, vii. 26.
- Feudalism, all that was beneficent in it had died out, vii. 27.
- Fielding, Admiral, fires on a Dutch squadron in time of peace, x. 275.
- Finance, system of, adopted by Congress, viii. 57, 58.
- Financial embarrassments, x. 397.
- Finland, emigrants from, settle on the Delaware, ii. 283.
- Finley, John, of North Carolina, a trader and pioneer, vi. 222, 298.
- Fish, Major, at Yorktown, x. 520.
- Fisher, Mary, a Quaker, arrives in Boston, i. 452; goes to Adrianople to enlighten the Grand Turk, 452.
- Fisheries of Newfoundland, beginning of, i. 16; their great increase, 24, 76, 80, 87, 111; importance of, to France and to Massachusetts, iii. 178; New England to be deprived of them, vii. 239, 240, 253; discussions respecting them, x. 210, *et seq.*, 215-218; the right to them insisted on by New England, 218, 351; four Southern States threaten to secede if the demand be not yielded, 218, 351, 352; discussions at Paris respecting them, 576, 579, 588; the subject disposed of, 590.
- Fitch, Thomas, governor of Connecticut, favors the execution of the stamp act, v. 316, 318, 351; his outrageous utterances, 351.
- Fitzgerald, Lord Edward, x. 494.
- Fitzgibbon, in the Irish House of Commons, opposes the American war, viii. 169.
- Fitzherbert, British minister at Paris, x. 556; 567; takes part in the negotiations for peace, 588.
- Fleming, Captain, of Virginia, killed at Princeton, ix. 248.
- Fleming, Colonel William, a valiant commander in the battle of Point Pleasant, vii. 168, 169.
- Fletcher, Benjamin, royal governor of Pennsylvania, iii. 37; governor of New York, 56; his character, 56; his imperious conduct, 58; endeavors to obtain control of the militia of Connecticut, 67; his disappointment at Hartford, 68.
- Fleury, Andrew Hercules de, cardinal and prime minister, his pacific policy, iii. 325; opposes a war with Austria, 449.
- Fleury, Colonel, his gallant behavior at Stony Point, x. 229.
- Fleury, Major Louis de, a French officer at Brandywine, ix. 399; tenderly waits on Donop, 431; his skill and courage at Fort Mifflin, 433, 434; promoted, 435.
- Florida Blanca, prime minister of Spain, ix. 304; his character, 305; his public policy, 305; his vanity, 305; his influence on Charles III., 306; wishes to avoid war with England, yet aids America secretly, 310; prime minister of Spain, x. 158; his weaknesses, 161, 165; averse to America, 159, 164; wishes England to keep possession of Canada and Nova Scotia, 182; wishes Spain to take part in the war, 185; but makes extravagant demands as the price of interference, 185; will not consent to a peace without the cession of Gibraltar, 186, 189, 191; his dissimulation, 188; his plans baffled by the backwoodsmen of Virginia, 193 *et seq.*; and of North Carolina, 339, 340; accedes to the Russian declaration of neutral rights, 427; repents of having advised this measure, 441; is afraid that the example of the United States will encourage the Spanish colonies to revolt, 539.
- Florida discovered, i. 33; whence the name, 33; claimed for Spain, 33; Spaniards undertake its conquest, 39; invaded by Ferdinand de Soto, 44; peaceful mission to Florida fails, 59; the country abandoned, 60; colonized by Huguenots, 61, *et seq.*; character of the colonists, 65; their sufferings, 65; massacred by Spaniards and their settlement broken up, 70; the slaughter terribly avenged, 72; divided, and why,

- v. 163; the Spanish people remove to Cuba, 167.
- Floyd, John, a pioneer settler of Kentucky, vii. 366; his character, 366.
- Floyd, William, delegate in Congress from New York, in favor of complete separation from Britain, viii. 369.
- Folsom, Nathaniel, of Exeter, brigadier-general of the New Hampshire troops, vii. 325.
- Forbes, General Joseph, iv. 294; his tedious march to fort Duquesne, 308, *et seq.*; enters that fort, and gives to the place the name of Pittsburgh, 311.
- Ford, Colonel, of Maryland, x. 486; is wounded, 487.
- Fordyce, Captain, his desperate courage, viii. 227.
- Foreign correspondence, committee appointed by Congress for, viii. 142.
- Foreign troops, engaged by Great Britain, viii. 255-270.
- Forest, an American officer at Trenton, ix. 233.
- Forster, Captain, from Detroit, with a body of Indians, makes an attack on the Cedars, viii. 427; takes the fort, 427; inhumanity towards the prisoners, 742.
- Fort at Sandusky taken by the Indians, v. 118.
- Fort at St. Joseph's river taken by the Indians, v. 118, 119.
- Fort at Venango taken by the Indians, v. 123.
- Fort Carillon, at Ticonderoga, built by the French, iv. 212, 238, 251 (see *Ticonderoga*).
- Fort Clinton taken by the British, ix. 413; abandoned, 429.
- Fort Duquesne, commenced by the Ohio company, iv. 108, 112, 116; occupied by the French, 117; captured by the English, 311; named Pittsburgh, 311; an enduring monument to the great commoner, 311.
- Fort Edward built, iv. 208; Indians refuse to attack it, 209; attacked, 210, 260; Webb is there doing nothing, 266.
- Fort Frontenac (now Kingston), Canada, taken by Colonel Bradstreet, iv. 306.
- Fort Independence, on New York Island, ix. 166; evacuated, 180.
- Fort Johnson, on James Island, in South Carolina, taken possession of, viii. 90; burned, 95; occupied by the Americans, 407.
- Fort Le Bœuf, visit of Washington, iv. 110; taken by the Indians, v. 123.
- Fort Lee, on the Jersey side of the Hudson, ix. 167; it is hastily abandoned with great loss of cannon, tents, and stores, 195.
- Fort Lendorm, built in the Cherokee country, iv. 243, 267; its surrender, 355.
- Fort Ligonía threatened by the Indians, v. 120; assaulted, 125.
- Fort Mercer on Delaware river, ix. 422; the fort described, 430; attack by Count Donop repulsed, 430, 431; great loss sustained by the attacking party, 431; the fort evacuated, 435.
- Fort Miami taken by the Indians, v. 120.
- Fort Mifflin on Delaware river, ix. 422; suffers a heavy cannonade, 433; is ably defended, 434; is evacuated, 434.
- Fort Montgomery taken by the British, ix. 413, 414; abandoned, 429.
- Fort Moultrie, on Sullivan's Island, so named, viii. 414; battle of, 401, *et seq.*
- Fort Ouatanon, taken by the Indians, v. 121.
- Fort Pitt threatened by the Indians in Pontiac's war, v. 119; assaulted, 126; again attacked, 128, 129.
- Fort Stanwix, congress of Indians at, vi. 227; treats with them, 227.
- Fort Washington on the Hudson, ix. 81; the British repulsed from it, 179; danger of its capture, 185; Washington wishes to have it abandoned, 186; Greene insists on its being kept, 188; Howe summons the fort, 189; Magan's reply, 189; the fort attacked on four sides by greatly superior numbers, 190; is gallantly defended, 191; it surrenders, 193; the loss on both sides, 193.
- Fort William Henry, built by Johnson, iv. 213; attempt of the French to surprise it, 252; siege of it by Montcalm, 259, *et seq.*; its surrender, 265; massacre, 255, 256; utterly demolished, 266.
- Foster, Edmund, minister of Littleton, vii. 304.
- Fox, Charles James, incurs the severe displeasure of George III., vi. 504; is dismissed from office, 504; his character, 504; joins the opposition, 505; is despondent at bad news from Massachusetts, vii. 116, 117; denounces Lord North as incapable and false, 218; vindicates the whole course of the Americans, 223; his speech against coercive measures, 253; rebukes Lord North, viii. 162; defends American principles as the safeguard of the British constitution, 172; his noble reply to Lord North on the application of the word "rebel," 212; his character, 361; supports the Americans, ix. 141; his noble speech in their defence, 143; the speech applauded by Gibbon and Burke, 144; another speech, 146; character of Fox, 146, *et seq.*; his speeches, 148; his skill in attack, 149; a master in debate, 149; great only as a speaker, 149; he failed as a statesman, from want of fixed principles, 149, 150; disapproves the war with America, 324; condemns the employment of Indians, 365; is willing to concede independence to America, 478, 497; speaks against the American war, x. 142; another speech in Parliament against the war, 481; rejoices at the capitulation of Yorktown, 524; supports Conway's motion for peace, 529; denounces Lord North, 530; the king dislikes him, 533; becomes a member of the Rockingham ministry, 534; seeks a quarrel with Lord Shelburne, 539, 547; his insincerity, 542; becomes foreign secretary under Rockingham, 541; his letter to Franklin, 542; his instructions to Grenville, 546, 547; his artful proceedings, 546, 547; threatens to

- quit office, 548; averse to a reform in Parliament, 549; accepts the declaration of neutral rights, 550; misrepresents Lord Shelburne, 552; makes a bitter speech in Parliament, 553; withdraws from the ministry, 554.
- Fox, George, visits Carolina, ii. 154; visits Maryland, 237; his humble origin and early life, 331; his struggles of mind, 332; the inner light, 333, 337; he exalts this above the light of revelation, 334; will yield no deference to authority, 334; his enthusiasm, 335; his fame, 335; his vast plans, 336; his visions, 351; his dangers, 354; visits the American colonies, 355; his death, 402.
- Fox, Henry, first Lord Holland, iv. 45, 159; his inquiry about secret service money, 160; leader of the House of Commons, 170; secretary of state, 220; recalls Shirley from America, 228; leaves the cabinet, 246; takes office under Pitt, 274.
- Fox Indians, or Ottagamies, iii. 151, 155; determine to burn Detroit, 224; are repulsed and compelled to surrender, 224.
- France, early French voyages to North America, i. 16; of Verrazzani, 17, 18; of Cartier, 19, *et seq.*; of Roberval, 23; first French settlement in America, 27; colony of Huguenots in Florida, 61; their reception by the natives, 64; character of the colonists, 65; their sufferings, 65; destruction of the settlement by the Spaniards, 70; the massacre avenged, 72, 73; French colony at Mount Desert, 148; broken up, 148; France loses Quebec, 334; loses Acadia, 445; persecutes the Huguenots, ii. 174-183 (see *Huguenots*); war with the Iroquois, 417-424; monarchy of France, its character, 465; commercial rivalry of France and England, iii. 115; other causes of animosity, 117, 118; struggle for territory in North America, 118; New France, 119; the Hundred Associates, 119; religious zeal of French colonists, 119 (see *Missions*); wide extent of French outposts in North America, 136; farther extension of French influence, 152; a French colony in Texas, 171; the encroachments of France array her neighbors against her, 176; population of French colonies in America, 177; principal French posts, 177; Indian allies of France, 177; claims of France to American territory, 178, 202; excludes England from Louisiana, 203; exhausted condition of, 208; decline of her power, 225, 226; loses large possessions in America, 233; claims the Kennebec as her western boundary, 338; fortifies Crown Point and Niagara, 341; claims the entire West, 343; and the whole valley of the Ohio, 345; the Mississippi scheme, 349, *et seq.*; infatuation of the people, 351; the unhappy results, 357; engages in the war of the Austrian succession, 450; misses her opportunity in Hindostan, 453; her ill success in America, 462, 463; attitude of, in 1748, iv. 30; boundary claimed by her in America, 30, 31, 37; boundary claimed in Maine, 72; and in Vermont, 74; her claims opposed by Halifax, 70; excites the Indians against the English, 89; yet disclaims hostile intentions, 90; begins hostilities in the Ohio Valley, 94, 95; seeks Indian alliances, 169; negotiations with England, 176; exasperation against England, 218; unwilling to engage in war with her, 169; France and Austria suspend their ancient rivalry, 278; the liberal thought of France on the side of Prussia, 280; French army defeated by Frederic at Rosbach, 285, 286; France loses the battle of Minden, 317; loses Canada, 325-338, 361; desires peace, 392; negotiations for peace, 393; Choiseul, prime minister, a great statesman, 392-394; Belle Isle taken, 400; the family compact, 403, 404; special convention between France and Spain, 404; it secured in advance aid to America in its struggle for liberty, 404; France loses Martinico, 436; peace concluded, 452; erroneous policy of France towards her colonies, 458; her social condition in 1763, v. 19; character of the people, 19, 20; high cultivation, severe science, elegant taste, vanity, frivolity, licentiousness, 19, 20; cheeks on the royal power, 20; decay of faith, 21; scepticism, 21; influence of Voltaire, 22, 23; agriculture depressed, 25; influence of Rousseau, 30, 31; surrenders to England the left bank of the Mississippi, 164, 336, 340; speculations of her statesmen touching the controversy between Britain and her colonies, vi. 79, 96, 180, 236, 255; their wakefulness, 237, 255, 310; her condition at the opening of the American revolution, vii. 25; increase of monarchical power, 25; the most powerful state of continental Europe, 25; the people poor and ignorant, but all free, 25; they formed one compact nation, 26; owned the land they tilled, 26; degeneracy of the nobility, 26; they escape military service and taxation, 26; a burden on the State, 27; the king master of the treasury and of the army, 28; the Church subordinate to the State, 28; scepticism universal, 29; degradation of the monarchy, 30; its arbitrary rule, 30; rising importance of the people, 31; the cabinet of Louis XVI., 86, *et seq.*; disordered state of the finances, 91; abuses in the revenue system, 91; distress of the people, 92; Turgot plans reform, 92; France leans to the American colonies, 93; her traditional policy of regarding England as her natural enemy, 93; views of the French cabinet regarding the controversy between England and her colonies, 190; orders given to British naval commanders not to annoy French colonies, 240; attention of France fixed on the struggle in America, 351; state of opinion there, 351; an emissary sent to America to watch the progress of affairs, 352; her minister insulted by the British secretary of state viii. 102; wishes not to repossess Canada, 102; mutual attraction of France and the



colonies, 215; secret communications between the French ministry and Congress, 216; their great importance, 217; the French ministers divided in opinion, 329; cautious policy adopted, 330; France should assist America, but secretly, 333, 334; France advances a million of livres to assist America, 343; opens her ports to American commerce, ix. 63; Vergennes advises a war with England, 68; many French officers seek to enter the American army, 70; Marquis de Lafayette, 70; plan of a treaty, 132; commissioners appointed by Congress, 133; effect produced by Franklin's arrival in Paris, 287; the public feeling in favor of America, 287; the American commissioners wait on Vergennes, 288; they present to him a request for ships of war, cannon, and muskets, 289, 290; answer of the king, 290; he can afford no direct aid, 290; but will grant secret succor, 291; Americans may trade in the ports of France and Spain, 291; money secretly advanced, and ships freighted with warlike supplies, 291; contract for tobacco, which procures further supplies, 291; war in disguise, 293; the king expresses no sympathy with America, 293; influence of philosophy, 293; supplies continually furnished to the United States, 297; England remonstrates, 297; American privateers admitted to French harbors, 298; France prefers to act in concert with Spain, 301; account of Burgoyne's surrender brought to France, and received with joy, 478, 479; Vergennes desires a treaty with America, 478, 479; boundaries of the United States, 478, 479; the fisheries, 478, 479; the king determines to acknowledge and support American independence, 480; aid in money promised, 480; convoys promised for American ships, 480; treaty of alliance between France and the United States, 481; its conditions, 481; French right to the fisheries acknowledged, 481; free ships make free goods, 482; mutual guarantees, 482; France avows to England her treaties with America, 485; war between England and France, 486; the American commissioners presented to Louis XVI., 489; France demands of the United States no preference, 497; despatches a fleet to the aid of America, and an ambassador, 499; causes of the alliance between France and America, 499, 500; spirit of free inquiry, 502; its bewildered and perverse course, 502; state of public mind in, 40; the king in theory is absolute, earnest longings for liberty, especially in Paris, 41; war between the philosophers and the Church, 41; French sentiment averse to the American cause, 42, 43; the king has no sympathy for the Americans, 46; splendor of the French court and capital, 46; France more liberal in its policy than England, 116; many of its people held rights in the soil, not so in England, 116; the treaty with France received in the United States with great rejoicing, 117; though America

had already substantially achieved her independence, 139; wavering policy of France, 160; she waits for the active co-operation of Spain, not yet promised, 161; hence the most favorable chances are thrown away, 162; frivolous, indecisive conduct of France and Spain, 163; a French army collected for the invasion of England, but nothing done, 163, 250; splendid condition of the French navy, 163; indecisive action of the two hostile fleets off Quessant, 162; who was to blame, 163; little done towards carrying on the war, 187; moderation of France, as compared with Spain, 184, *et seq.*; yet France insists on the recognition of American independence, 189; French minister endeavors to persuade Congress to accept the unworthy terms proposed by Spain, 215, 218, *et seq.*; an invasion of England attempted, but fails, 249, 250; France has need of peace, 441, 444; its heavy debt, 445; urges a more perfect union of the United States, 398.

Francis, Ebenezer, of Beverly, Massachusetts, colonel of the eleventh Massachusetts regiment, his gallant conduct at Hubbardton, Vt., ix. 369; his heroic death, 369.  
Franciscan missionaries in Maine, iii. 135, 137.

Franklin, Benjamin, works at his brother's press in Boston, iii. 375; goes to Philadelphia, 376; gains respect and influence there, 376; his electrical experiments, 377; his character, 378; inclined to materialism, 380; advocates a paper currency, 388, 390; the champion of popular rights, 395; devises a military organization for Pennsylvania, 456; proposes a union of the colonies, iv. 91; meets a council of Indians at Carlisle, 108; his plan of union proposed at Albany, 122, *et seq.*; the proposed constitution a compromise, 123; its details, 124; advises colonizing the great West, 126; his predominant influence in Pennsylvania, 140; a vessel sent by his advice to discover a north-west passage, 141; his objections to Shirley's plan of union, 172, 173; supplies Braddock with horses and carriages, 184; his statements concerning the rapid growth of the colonies, 213, 214; is placed in charge of the frontier of Pennsylvania, 225; goes to England as agent of Pennsylvania, 254; hears new doctrine touching the king's supremacy over the colonies, 256; advises to retain Canada, 366; and why, 367, 368; foresees the future growth of America, 367; corresponds with David Hume, 368; never admitted to the presence of Pitt, 376; prefers a royal to a proprietary government, v. 218; sent to England to defend the liberties of Pennsylvania, 220; his interview with George Grenville, 230; is made a stamp-officer, 250; believes that the stamp-act will be carried into effect, 306, *note*; his letter to Charles Thomson correctly printed, 306, 307, *note*; listens to the debates in Parliament, 405; his examination



before the House of Commons, 428, *et seq.*; his determined spirit of liberty, vi. 6; appointed agent for Georgia, 149; apprehends a breach between Britain and America, 166; Choiseul's opinion of him, 180; Chatelet's opinion of him, 238; the great Bostonian, 240; his advice to the ministry disregarded, 318; chosen agent of Massachusetts, 374; his sentiments on government and on the controversy with England, 375; Hutchinson opposes him, 376; he favors the colonization of the great West, 377; foretells a bloody struggle, 406; reproaches England for prosecuting the slave-trade, 416; negotiates with the lords of the treasury for a large tract of western lands, 421; discovers the secret letters of Hutchinson and Oliver, 435; sends them to the speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, 436; he concurs with Samuel Adams, 469; delivers the address of Massachusetts for the removal of Hutchinson and Oliver, 490; appears before the privy council, 492; is abused in every company, 492; is harassed and threatened, 493; is shamefully vilified and misrepresented by Wedderburn, 496, 497; the immediate consequences, 497, 502; Franklin and Wedderburn contrasted, 499; Franklin and the Lords of Council contrasted, 499; Franklin always a conciliator and still pursues that policy, 496, 500; is turned out of his office as postmaster-general in America, 500; his character as drawn by Washington, 499; the king wishes him arraigned for treason, vii. 58; is exposed to great danger in England, 174; the friends of America wish him to stay, 174; sees no safety for his country but in total emancipation, 177, 178; the ministry ask him what terms will satisfy America, 179; his answer, 180; his firmness, 180; presents the petition of the continental Congress to the king, 186; the ministry negotiate with him through Lord Howe, 188; they offer terms of high preferment to him if he will concur in their measures, 189; he points out the only basis for conciliation, 189; his proposals rejected, 189; is introduced by Chatham into the House of Lords, 196; admires Chatham's speech, 203; Chatham's warm encomium on him, 221; his letters quoted, 177, 178, 219, 222, 247; Lord North again tries to negotiate with him, 224; Franklin's heroic firmness, 224; he is once more consulted by Lord North, 241; ample rewards offered him, but he abides in his former position, 242; he counsels Massachusetts not to begin hostilities without the advice of Congress, 247; he also counsels firm courage, 247; his interview with Garnier, the French minister, 262; his interview with Edmund Burke, 263; sails for America, 263, 264; his sadness at the prospect of a separation from the mother country, 263; his perfect sincerity in his intercourse with men in power, 264; his remarkable ability in all his dealings with

the British government, 265; he retains the confidence of Chatham and other liberal statesmen, 265; arrives in Philadelphia, and the next morning is unanimously elected to Congress, 333; meeting of Congress, 353; becomes decided in his wishes for independence, 354, 377, 378; his message to Strahan, viii. 37; proposes a confederation of the colonies, 53; organizes a post-office, and is the first postmaster-general, 57; one of a committee of Congress to visit the camp at Cambridge, 111; feels that a separation from Britain is inevitable, 112; Greene's opinion of him, 112; friendship between Franklin and Washington, 112; encourages Thomas Paine to write in favor of independence, 140; brings forward his plan of a confederacy, 245; is outvoted, 245; his great confidence in general Lee, 281; refuses the oath of allegiance to the king, 315; wishes for a declaration of war, 320; one of the committee to prepare a declaration of independence, 392; is sent to Canada as commissioner from Congress, 423; Lord Howe writes to him, ix. 42; Franklin's reply, 42, 43; his plan of a confederation contrasted with Dickinson's, 49, 50; insists that each state shall have votes in proportion to the number of its inhabitants, 53; is elected one of a committee to meet Lord Howe, 112; the interview, 116, 117; elected commissioner to France, 133; arrives in Paris, 223, 285; allows in the legislature only one assembly, 265; marked effect of his arrival in France, 286; his high reputation there, 287; waits on Vergennes and Aranda, 288, 289; his sagacity, 289; the commissioners ask Vergennes for ships of war and military appliances, 289, 290; in answer promises of indirect aid given, and supplies furnished, 292; treaty with France, 481; his interview with Voltaire, 484; his reply to Hartley, 485; is presented to the king, 489; his dress, 489; presented to the queen, 490; not awed by birth or station, 490; his mental tranquillity, 490; why he was frugal, 491; his moral greatness, 491; his manners, 491; he wins universal respect, 491; eulogized by John Adams, 491; by D'Alembert, 492; the impersonation of a true democracy, 492; excited no jealousy in the privileged classes, 492; his secret of statesmanship, 492; used his fame for his country's good, 493; superior to envy, 493; is esteemed by the best men in England, even by Lord North, 493; his reply to Hartley, seeking some favor for England from America, 497; Franklin and Voltaire at the French Academy, 499; dissuades from wooing Spain, 166; great confidence reposed in him by the French cabinet, 166; is appointed sole envoy to France, 167; his proceedings, 261, 262; his letter to Lord Shelburne, 535; Shelburne's answer, 536; his rejoinder, 540; his interview with Oswald, the British negotiator, 540; he excludes Spain from the negotiation, and why, 540, 541;

- receives Grenville at Paris, 542; prefers Oswald, and why, 543; his great discretion, 547; will not accept independence at second hand, 542; his knowledge of parties, in England, 554; states to Oswald conditions of peace, 555; his able arguments with the British plenipotentiaries, 555; labors to hasten the treaty of peace, 575; his letter to Lord Grantham, 575; his sound judgment, 575; he and Jay unite in the negotiations, 580, 584, 585; Franklin, Adams, and Jay meet the British commissioners, 589; the treaty signed, 591; America owes to him this treaty, 558.
- Franklin, James, prints the "New England Courant," iii. 375; censured and punished for a libel, 376.
- Franklin, William, becomes governor of New Jersey, iv. 440. viii. 71; negotiates with the Six Nations, vi. 227; his malignant letters are intercepted, and he is placed under arrest, 245, 442; he is kept under guard, 443; his fiendish advice, 175; wishes to employ the savages to crush the rebellion, 222.
- Franklin, William Temple, grandson of Dr. Benjamin Franklin, presented by him to Voltaire, ix. 484.
- Fraser, Lieutenant Alexander, visits the Illinois Indians, v. 337; and pacifies them, 337.
- Fraser, a Highlander, brigadier under Burgoyne, ix. 362; moves upon Ticonderoga, 367; marches in pursuit of the army of St. Clair, 367; overtakes the rear-guard, 369; overwhelms it by superior numbers, 370; in the Battle of Bemis's Heights, 409, 415; is mortally wounded, 416; his last moments, 418; his burial, 419.
- Frazer, General, in command at Three Rivers, viii. 430.
- Frederic II., king of Prussia, conquers Silesia, iii. 452; asserts the freedom of the seas, 466; insists that "free ships make free goods," iv. 233; England hires Russia to hold him in check, 221; the bulwark of Protestantism and free thought, 279; regarded as such in the New England colonies, 280; makes war on Austria and Saxony, 281; takes Dresden, and compels the Saxon army to surrender, 281; a strong confederacy of Catholic powers against him, 281; invades Bohemia, gains the Battle of Prague, but loses the Battle of Colin, 282; his retreat and reverses, 283, 284; gains the Battle of Rosbach, 285; suffers reverses in Silesia, 286; his animating address to his soldiers, 287; gains the Battle of Leuthen, 288; Prussia is saved, 289; his magnanimity in refusing cessions of territory, 397; his firmness, 434; perfidy of the English ministry towards him, 435; his alliance with Russia, 435, 454; concludes a glorious peace, 455; an absolute monarch, yet tolerant of opinion, v. 7; his philosophy at variance with the political constitution of his kingdom, 7; is disgusted with the hiring of troops in Germany for the British army, ix. 316, 318; forbids their passage through his dominions, 474; his policy towards the United States, 473, 474; his great character, 97; now old and infirm, x. 98; the friend of his people and of civil liberty, 98; hopes well of republics, and of the new republic of America, 99; detests the Tory policy in England, 100; indignant at the oppression of the colonies, 100; justifies the American revolt, and predicts its success, 102, 106; yet, in the interest of Prussia, declines taking part in the war, 103; foresees the intervention of France and Spain, 104; refuses an alliance with England, 108, 241, 242; thinks the situation of England critical, 108, 241, 242; regards her efforts against America hopeless, 109; exacts indemnity from England for Prussian ships taken, 256; watchful against Austria, 110; proposes an alliance of France, Prussia, and Russia against that power, 111; his sympathy for America increases, 114; forbids the passage of Hessian troops through his dominions, 114; promises that he will ere long recognize American independence, 115; his answer to an American envoy, 240; opposes the designs of Austria, 242; contrasted with Joseph II. of Austria, 244; Prussia joins the armed neutrality, 264, 274.
- Frederic, landgrave of Hesse Cassel, viii. 260; his character, 260, 261; George III. of England applies to him for troops, 261; his sordid avarice, 261; his exorbitant demands, 261; he gets the troops ready, 265; his letter to Voltaire, 270; Frederic of Prussia despises him for selling his subjects like cattle, 270; he disgraces Germany, 271.
- Frederic Augustus, Elector of Saxony, refuses aid to England in the American struggle, x. 96.
- Frederic Barbarossa, acquiesces in the supremacy of the pope, x. 69.
- Frederica, Ga., founded by Oglethorpe, iii. 430.
- Freedom, progress of, in America, v. 269, 270; the Bible for, 289; the idea of it, founded on universal principles, vii. 21; it had always been cherished in America, 22; it was essential to the full development of the British colonies, 24; in America, movement for it irresistible, vii. 21.
- Freedom of the seas, unknown to barbarians, x. 255; first asserted by the Dutch, 255; when first stipulated by treaty, 255; recognized by England in its full extent, 256; violated by England, 256; reasserted in the treaty of Utrecht, 256; indemnity for capture of Prussian ships exacted by Frederic II., recognized by the Rockingham ministry, 256; France protects neutral ships, 261; England ravages neutral commerce, 264; the Dutch complain, 264; Denmark complains, Sweden also, and Prussia, 264; England's insolence, 264; the armed neutrality, 277, *et seq.*

"Freeman" of New York exposes the fallacy of the arguments used to justify parliamentary taxation of America, v. 280, *et seq.*

Free schools in New England, i. 458.

"Free ships make free goods," this principle how and when introduced, iii. 230; the principle asserted by Frederic II., 466; England disregards it, 467.

Free-trade allowed to Ireland, x. 455.

French army assembled for the invasion of England x. 163, 249, 250; French brigantine seized in time of peace, iv. 73; the French obstruct the progress of English colonization, 89; begin hostilities on land, 94, 95; their encroachments on Virginia to be resisted, 102; a powerful force proceeds from Canada to occupy the Ohio Valley, 106, *et seq.*; the Indians admonish them not to proceed, 107; French ships seized by the English without a declaration of war, 217; French power in America extended, 267; French successes in Germany, 317; French losses in America and elsewhere, 452; fleet arrives in the Delaware, x. 145; enters New York Bay, 145; appears off Newport, 146; indecisive action, 147; the fleet almost wrecked in a storm, 148; in the West Indies, x. 382; suffer a great defeat, 545; ministry, their views of the American struggle, viii. 102, 330, *et seq.*; neutrals of Acadia, hard conditions imposed on them, iv. 46; cruel treatment of that people, 199-206; officers embark for America, 285, 286; French women favor America, 296; French ports are open to American privateers, 297, 298; system of law restored in Canada, vii. 157, 158.

Friends (see *Quakers*).

Frivolous conduct of France and Spain, x. 163.

Frobisher, Martin, attempts a north-west passage to the Indies, i. 81; reaches Labrador, 82; enters Hudson's Straits, 85; perils of the voyage, 85.

Frontenac, Count, governor of Canada, iii. 162, 179; endeavors to win the Iroquois to the French alliance, 182; sends three expeditions against the English provinces, 182; succors Montreal, 184; and Quebec, 185; invades the country of the Five Nations, 189, 190; humbles, but not subdues, that warlike people, 191.

Frontenac, Fort, now Kingston, Canada, granted to La Salle, iii. 162; his journey thither on foot from Illinois, 166; this fort a principal French post, 177; evacuated and razed, 179, 340.

Frye, Colonel James, a detachment from his regiment in the Battle of Bunker Hill, vii. 408.

Fuller, Rose, opposes the Boston Port Bill, vi. 513, 514; moves the repeal of the duty on tea, 519.

Fur-trade in Canada commenced, i. 25; continues, iii. 136.

## G.

Gadsden, Christopher, of South Carolina, iv. 348, 426; his character, v. 293; procures the adhesion of South Carolina to the proposal of union, 294; delegate of that colony to the Congress, 333; his noble utterances, 335, 343, 425: an enthusiast in the cause of liberty, vi. 42, 386; sends rice for the poor of Boston, and advises not to pay for the tea, vii. 62; elected to the first continental Congress, 81, 127; utterly denies the power of Parliament to legislate for America, 133; proposes an attack on Gage at Boston, 142; proposes to export rice, 205, 206; escapes capture by British cruisers on the way to Charleston, viii. 312, 313; arrives and receives thanks, 345; assumes command as senior military officer, 346; is decidedly for independence, 346; takes part in the defence of Charleston, 403, 407; in Charleston, x. 293; suffers barbarous treatment, 329.

Gage, General Thomas, commander-in-chief in America, v. 209, 210; advises the extension of the mutiny act to America, 249; would enforce the stamp act by military power, 314; his power as commander-in-chief, 331; is thought not to be a man of capacity, 331; is compelled to yield to the people in New York, 357; his liability to mistake, vi. 68; demands quarters for troops in Connecticut, 51; and in Boston, 201; the demand refused, 201; his false representations of Boston, 200, 203; orders the landing of troops in Boston, 208; comes to Boston in person, 210; indicted for slander, 314; visits England, his false representations there, 501; his contempt for Americans, 501; returns to Boston as civil governor of Massachusetts, and with four additional regiments to enforce submission, 523; arrives in Boston as governor and commander-in-chief, vii. 37; his vacillating character, 38; stands in dread of Samuel Adams and other leading patriots, 38; negatives thirteen councillors, 47, 48; refuses to appoint a fast, 48; removes the legislature of Massachusetts to Salem, 61; refuses to receive the address of the council, 61; dissolves the assembly, 64; his intrigues, 67, 68; his unwise proclamation, 69, 70; finds himself unable to execute his threats, 70, 71; dreads the town meetings, 71; issues a proclamation against "hypocrisy and sedition," 83; alarmed at the high spirit of the people, 110; embarrassed at every step, 112; seizes the powder of the province at Somerville, 114; remains inactive, 115; wants more troops, 117; desires a body of Canadians and Indians, 117, 136; his want of pity, 119; he is disheartened and appalled, 136; meets everywhere with determined resistance, 137; dares not meet the legislature of Massachusetts, 138; accuses Franklin, 174; his statements touching the colonies, 177; advises the repeal of the obnoxious acts, 177; sug-



- gests that it may be well to give independence to America, 177; denounces the provincial Congress as an unlawful assembly, 182; is instructed to arrest and imprison the leading patriots, 218; has spies at work, their report, 230; is denounced in Parliament as a coward, 244; his confidence of success, 281; is ordered to pursue violent measures, 284; sends an expedition to Concord, 288; the troops vigorously repulsed, 299-309; his army shut up in Boston with scanty supplies, 318; mortification of the British officers, 318; Gage permits some of the people to leave Boston, 320; he refuses the mediation of Connecticut, 321; proscribes by name Samuel Adams and John Hancock, 391; proclaims martial law throughout Massachusetts, 392; calls for large re-enforcements from England, 392; wishes for Indian auxiliaries, 392; endeavors to terrify the Americans, viii. 66; his ill treatment of prisoners, 66; his foolish insolence, 66; dares not venture beyond his lines, 67; fears for his own safety, 67; declines the offer of battle made by Washington, 67; cuts down the Boston liberty-tree, 68; sends orders to employ against the patriots of Carolina the savages on their borders, 87, 88; is superseded in his command, 100; embarks for England, 111.
- Gage, Thomas, a lieutenant-colonel in Braddock's expedition, iv. 187; his indecision lost the day, 188; sent to command at Niagara, 322; his dilatory conduct, 322.
- Gallican church subordinate to the state, vii. 28; the clergy inclined to scepticism, 28.
- Gallican party in Congress, x. 216, 217.
- Galloway, Joseph, of Pennsylvania, a royalist, v. 219; favors the stamp act, 328; elected to Congress, vii. 83; a volunteer spy for the British government, 126; proposes sending a committee to the British court, unites with the rest in a pledge of secrecy, 131; his insidious plan for retaining the colonies in subjection, 140; loses his influence, 141; and his seat in Congress, 141; declines to serve in the Second Congress, 211; exercises great influence in the legislature, viii. 73; declines an election to Congress, 73; deserts the American cause, ix. 199.
- Galvez, minister of Spain for the colonies, ix. 306.
- Gama, Vasco da, his voyage to Hindostan, i. 12, 14.
- Game laws of England, their severity, v. 52, 53.
- Gansevoort, in the New York convention, ix. 33.
- Gansevoort, Lieutenant-Colonel, commands at Fort Stanwix, ix. 378.
- Garay, Francisco de, discovers the mouth of the Mississippi, i. 35.
- Gardner, Isaac, of Brookline, slain by the British troops, vii. 309.
- Gardner, Thomas, representative of Cam-
- bridge in the General Court of Massachusetts, vi. 284; his intrepid and guileless heart, 285; his patriotic utterance, 456; his energetic words, vii. 100; is mortally wounded on Bunker Hill, 433.
- Gareau, Leonard, a Jesuit missionary, embarks for the Far West, iii. 146.
- Garnier, the French minister, purchases a seat in Parliament, vii. 174, 175; his letter to Vergennes about it, 175; other letters of his quoted, 178, 186, 210, 219, 244, 248, 262, 342.
- Garth, agent of South Carolina, his letter quoted, v. 186, *note*; his interview with Mr. Grenville, 230; a member of Parliament, 237, *note*.
- "Gaspee," British armed schooner, burned in the waters of Rhode Island, vi. 419; the British ministry are bent on revenge, but fail in their efforts, 441, 450, 451.
- Gates, Horatio, questioned by the British ministry, iv. 168; elected adjutant-general by Congress, viii. 30; his character, 30; is elected major-general, and appointed to the command of the Northern Army, 432; claims equality of rank and command with Washington, ix. 58; his meanness, 58; his correspondence with the traitor Lee, 209; brings a re-enforcement to Washington, 223; his wilful disobedience of orders, 228; shameful neglect of duty, 228; finds fault with Washington, 228; his greediness, 336; his intriguing character, 339; refuses to serve under Schuyler, 339; Congress appoints him to the command of the Northern Army, 339; he assumes undue authority, 339; his intrigues, 339, 342; his insubordination, 341; appeals to Congress against Washington, 341; is removed from his command, 341, 342; his speech to an Indian council, 360; his advice to St. Clair, 361; supersedes Schuyler in the command of the Northern Army, 386; superiority in point of numbers and strength, 405; his inactivity, 406; advances to Stillwater, 406; spirit of the army, 407; his unfitness for command and want of personal courage, 407; Battle of Bemis's Heights, 409; Gates not on the field, 410; he and Arnold quarrel, 412; is constantly re-enforced, 414; does not appear on the field of battle, 418; surrender of Burgoyne, 420; cause of this great result, 421; what Gates should have done, 421; he fails to send re-enforcements to Washington, 432; detains his troops at Albany, 432; his disrespect to Washington, 432; praises Conway, 457; complains to Congress, 457; his utter incompetence as a general, 463; denies being implicated in a plot to supersede Washington, 464; commands the Southern Army, x. 316; how it happened, 316; powers given him, 316; marches on Camden, 317; his favorable prospects, 318; his proclamation, 318; misses his only opportunity, 319; his delay, 319; his undue haste and carelessness, 320; his utter defeat at Camden, 322; his unsoldierly flight from the field, 324.



Gates, Sir Thomas, wrecked on Bermuda, i. 137; arrives in Virginia, 140; brings additional emigrants, 144; returns to England, 149.

General assembly of the towns in Massachusetts proposed, vi. 195.

General Court, the first in America, i. 359.

"General Mifflin," privateer, x. 257.

Generous conduct of the Americans, x. 340.

George I., king of England, his bad character, iii. 322; iv. 163.

George II., ruled by his mistress, iv. 70; dislikes the Duke of Bedford, 70, 87; a mean prince, swayed by his prejudices and his mistress, 97, 98; decides concerning the Valley of Ohio, 101; thinks English notions of liberty very singular, 162; hates Pitt, 249; dismisses him from office, 250; death of George II., 381.

George III. described when a boy, iv. 98; lived in seclusion and idleness, 99; full even then of high notions of kingly power, 99, 162; Pitt and Prince George become allies, 162, 244; the prince becomes of age, 244; determines to have the free choice of his servants, 245; is anxious lest free-thinking and scepticism should spread in America, 257; his accession to the throne, 381; his first speech to the privy council, 383; the speech amended by Pitt, 384; a general welcome to the throne, 385; his ruling passion a love of authority, 386; his self-will and obstinacy, 386, 387; uses as his instrument the Earl of Bute, 387; despises and hates popular opinion, 389; his relations with Prussia, 389; from an old grudge dismisses William Legge, 390; wishes to leave Prussia to ruin, 397; his marriage, 405; accepts Pitt's resignation, 409; his rupture with the great Whig lords, 446; is not dazzled with victory, 451; readily concludes a peace, 452; finds himself overruled in his designs about governing England, v. 97; is dissatisfied with the "triumvirate ministry," 139; his interview with Halifax and Egremont, 140; wishes to be rid of Egremont, 140; hates Pitt, 142; yet invites him to enter the ministry, 143; his unsatisfactory interview with Pitt, 144; his insanity, 248; the affair kept secret, 248, 253; he proposes a regency bill, 253; his want of confidence in his ministers, 254; his mother excluded from the regency, 255; he is displeased at this, 255; wishes Pitt to take office, 256-263; Pitt refuses, 262, 263; the king complies reluctantly with Grenville's terms, and Grenville continues in office, 264, 265; his wounded pride, 295; frowns on his ministers, 295; Bedford's interview with him, 296; the king resolves on a change, and sends for Pitt, 296; his interview with Grenville, 300; his mind unsettled with regard to America, 363; is provoked by the riots in New York, 368; is disappointed by the unwillingness of the House of Commons to enforce the stamp

act, 424; is willing to have the act modified, 427; gives his assent to its repeal, 454; is dissatisfied with the repeal of the stamp act, vi. 3; invites Pitt to form a new administration, 19; his interview with Earl Temple, 20; talks much about America, 56; is afraid of the increasing spirit of liberty, 55, 56; dislikes the Earl of Shelburne, 21, 55; dislikes George Grenville, 60, 99; wishes to preserve the Townshend ministry, and also to humble the aristocracy, 81; his influence baneful to liberty in both hemispheres, 83; is enabled to govern as well as to reign, 88, 94; procures the expulsion of Wilkes from Parliament, 148; is bent on trampling down the colonies, especially Boston, 230; will not bear their petitions, 234; insists on retaining the duty on tea, 277; and thus is singly responsible for the revolt of the colonies, 277, 278; the system of taxing America would have been abandoned but for him, 353; his good and bad qualities, 354; the great founder of the modern conservative party, 354; makes a beginning of martial law in Massachusetts, 367; hates Boston and Massachusetts, 367; is brought into contempt by his own representative, 368, 405; tempts the patriotism of John Hancock, 407; steadily pursues the system of concentrating in himself all power over the colonies, 402, *et seq.*; forbids the discontinuance of the slave-trade, 413, 457; makes the judges in Massachusetts dependent on his pleasure, 420, 421; is weary of Hillsborough, 421; and soothes his fall by giving him a British earldom, 421; his cordial understanding with Louis XV., 422; his selfish aims, 424; approves the conduct of Hutchinson, 444; is determined on coercion, 457; rejects the petitions from Massachusetts, 459; "the king means to try the question with America" by sending tea thither, 465; the tea sent by the East India Company, 465; after the destruction of the tea, the king's heart more hardened than ever, 501; he sees nothing to blame in the letters of Hutchinson, and rejects the petition of Massachusetts for his removal, 501, 502; his infatuation, vii. 24; is determined to coerce the colonies at any cost, 24; appoints mandamus councillors for Massachusetts, 58; orders Gage to arrest the leading patriots, and to tire on the Boston people at his discretion, 58, 59; is greedy for information concerning Boston, 71; eagerly questions Hutchinson, 71, 72; cherishes pleasing delusions touching America, 72; is confident of the success of the measures against the colonies, 72; assents to the "regulating act," 94; and thus tramples under foot the affections, customs, laws, and privileges of Massachusetts, 96; wishes to employ the savage Indians in the impending war, 118; dissolves Parliament, 135; will listen to no terms of conciliation with America, 145, 146; has no thought of concession, 174, 177, 179; declares New England in a

state of rebellion, 177; forbids the export of arms to America, 183; raves at Chatham's speech in the House of Lords, 201; calls him "the trumpet of sedition," 201; calls the proceedings of the patriots of Massachusetts "the acts of a rude rabble," 218; gives orders to arrest and imprison the chief patriots, 218; his heart is inflexibly hardened against America, 227; is confident of success, 252, 253, 286; throws on the city of London, 282; his extreme arrogance, 282; will not allow Lord North to resign, 241, 346; will not receive the address of the citizens of London, 282, 346; applies for Russian troops, 348; is specially desirous to arm the negro slaves and savage Indians, 349; his senseless complacency at the state of affairs in America, viii. 99; his undue animation on receiving news of the Battle of Bunker Hill, 100; he will have twenty thousand regular soldiers in America in 1776, 100; the secretary at war tells him it is impossible, 100; "the most obstinate prince alive," 104; he will not see Richard Penn, the bearer of a humble petition from Congress, 131; is determined to force the Americans to submission, 131; scorns to dissemble, 131; insists on proclaiming the Americans rebels, 131; has no misgivings that he may be in the wrong, 131; his irrevocable proclamation for suppressing rebellion and sedition, aimed not only at the Americans, but at their friends in England, 132; its bearing on Chatham, Rockingham, Camden, Barré, and the like of them, 133; he is compared to Charles the First, 134; his courage and fortitude in difficulties, 145; his pertinacity, 145; he wishes to obtain from Holland the Scottish brigade, 148, 250; but does not, 148, 250; writes for troops to Catharine of Russia, 148, 149; the letter, 149; the empress absolutely refuses, 151, *et seq.*; she gives him friendly advice, 150; he is surprised at the refusal, but bears the disappointment with firmness, 157; he thinks he is fighting the battle of Parliament, 159; his speech at the opening of Parliament, 160; he calls the Americans rebels, and wholly misrepresents the affair, 160, 161; he is sustained by Parliament, 161; his policy not in harmony with the true spirit of England, 167; he prefers to lose America rather than to recognize American principles, 171; he could not carry on the war with British troops only, 250; applies to Holland and Germany, 250, 254, *et seq.*; his negotiations with Brunswick and Hesse Cassel for troops, 255, *et seq.*; expects important aid from the Iroquois and other Indians, 301; gives peremptory orders to employ the savage Indians, ix. 321, 376; he still, 1777, insists on reducing the colonies whatever it may cost, 477; persuades Lord North to remain in the administration, 478; will not suffer him to flinch, 481; will not have Lord Chatham in the ministry, 486; will sooner risk his crown, 487; his violent anger at

the proposal, 487, 488; his exultation when Lord Chatham was struck with death, 495; is determined on the conquest of America, x. 240, *et seq.*; his interview with his ministers, 247; his resolution falters, 142; flatters Catherine II., 273; notwithstanding constant ill success, as obstinate as ever, 525; wishes to continue the war, 533; wishes Shelburne to form an administration, 533; hates Charles Fox, 533; consents to the independence of America, 534; pledges his word that he will consent to it, 558; wishes for delay, 578.

Georgia, traversed by Spaniards, i. 46; its colonization proposed, iii. 417; Oglethorpe obtains a charter, and arrives with a colony, 419, 420; treaty with the Indians, 420, 421; Protestant emigrants from Salzburg arrive, 425; grievances of the colonists, 426; slavery prohibited, 426; Moravian emigrants arrive, 427; Spanish hostility, 432; the colony protected by its Indian allies, 433; invasion by the Spaniards and their repulse, 444-446; slavery at length permitted, 448; population in 1754, iv. 129, 130; its social and political condition, 130, 131; colony of, send no delegates to Congress, but promise adhesion to its measures, v. 328; refuses compliance with the billetting act, vi. 81; great prosperity of, 149; spirit of liberty there, 149; chooses Franklin its agent in England, 149; approves the proceedings of Massachusetts and Virginia, 247; its liberties invaded by the ministry, 410; accession of a part of, to the measures of Congress, vii. 206; population of, in 1775, 337; number of the Indians along her borders, 337; she unites with the other colonies, 337; accedes to the union, viii. 54; provincial Congress of, 83; its measures, 83; movements of the people, 84; Georgia is for independence, 391; its civil constitution, ix. 262; only one legislative assembly, 265; invaded and lost, x. 284, *et seq.*; recovered, 563.

Gerard, first minister of France to the United States, ix. 499.

Gerard de Rayneval, the French minister, arrives, x. 147; urges on Congress an acceptance of the terms proposed by Spain, 215, *et seq.*

Germain, Lord George, proposes to subvert the liberties of America, vi. 517; delivers the message of the Commons at the bar of the Lords, vii. 225; becomes secretary of state for the American department, viii. 165; his character and previous history, 166 (see *Sackville, George*); his reply to Burke, 169; his interview with a Mohawk chief, 301; insists on unconditional submission from the Americans, 301; compliments Lord and General Howe, ix. 149; defends the policy of the ministry, 143; his gloomy forebodings, 145; tries to exculpate himself, 145; his merciless cruelty in stirring up the Indians against the Americans, 152, 163; loses hope, 235; his merciless order, 253; conduct of the war on the

- side of Canada left to him, 312; urges the employment of the savages, 321, 322; wishes to remove General Howe, 323; gives him new instructions, 332; his disingenuousness, 332; cannot furnish the re-enforcements called for, 332, 333; expects much from Indian alliances, 334; his vengeful spirit, 349; longs to hear that Boston is in flames, 349; gives orders to "distress and destroy," 350; is determined on employing Indians, 376; in a fit of anger resigns his position, x. 40; determines on a cruel and destructive war, 123; proposes to rouse and employ the savages against the Americans, 124; approves and sanctions the massacre of Wyoming, 138; resolves to encourage devastation and murder, 138, 141; defends the ferocious proclamation of the English commissioners, 151; orders the invasion of South Carolina, 155; his plan for a southern campaign, 283, 284; approves of the horrid outrages of the British troops in South Carolina, 328; applauds breaches of faith in British generals, 329; encourages the complot of Arnold and Clinton, 378; approves of the invasion of Virginia by Cornwallis, 484; earnestly favors that campaign, 509; extravagantly praises Cornwallis, 510; retires from office, 520.
- German empire in 1763, v. 11; its political constitution faulty, 11, 12; a mere shadow, 12; it has a pompous and stupid nobility, 12; its princes venal and pensionary, 12; degradation of the people, 12.
- German literature on the side of America, ix. 475; Goethe, 475; Lessing, 475; Schiller, 475; Kant, 475; Price on Liberty translated into German, 475.
- Germantown, the village described, ix. 423; encampment of Howe, 423; Chew's stone house, 423, 425; the battle begins, 425; attempt to take Chew's house, 426; tardy arrival of Greene, 426; his mismanagement, 426; the battle is lost, 427; the reason why, 428; the effect of the engagement, 428.
- Germany, emigrants from, iii. 319, 370; attacked by Indians, 320; a recruiting ground, viii. 148; orders issued to raise recruits there, 169; disordered state of Germany, 253; war made a profitable trade, 253; military adventurers, 253; George III. has scruples about accepting their offers, 254; he contracts for German troops, 254; in violation of the laws of that empire, 254; his success, 254; Germany dishonored by the proceeding (see *Brunswick* and *Hesse Cassel*); recruits thence obtained for the British army, ix. 313-315; public opinion strongly against it, 315; several German princes protest against the practice, 316; discontent of the enlisted men, 316; a meeting, 316; zeal of the margrave of Anspach, 317; whole number of recruits obtained, 317; all from Protestant states, 317, 318; opposition of the Catholic princes, 318; Frederic of Prussia ridicules the policy of the British government, 473; and prevents new treaties for troops to be furnished by German powers, 474, 475; address of Mirabeau to the people and soldiers of Germany, 476; its early history, 61; origin of the people, and character of the language, 61; never wore the Roman yoke, 62; early conquests of its people, 62; Christianity diffused among its tribes, 63; Charles Martel, 63; Charlemagne, 64; under him a united Germany, 64; crosses the Alps, and is made emperor of Rome, 64; confusion and misery existing under his successors, 66; this is removed by Henry the Fowler and the Saxon emperors, 66; Otho the Great crowned at Rome, 67; Italy annexed to Germany, brought many advantages, but infinite sorrows, 67; long and furious contests between pope and emperor, in which the pope gains and maintains the superiority, 68; reasons for this, 68; Gregory VII. compels the emperor to abject submission, 68; alone in Switzerland was liberty preserved, 70; the free imperial cities, eighty in number, had places in the German diet, and upheld the spirit of free inquiry, 71; energy of the emperors of the Saxon line, succeeded by apathy and inaction, 72; the pope claims supreme power over all princes, 72; can elect, if he please, a German emperor, 72; may even substitute a falsehood for a fact in history, and has done this, 72; these high claims at length wrought their own ruin, 73; the Reformation, 75, *et seq.*; circumscribed at home, it extends to distant lands, 79; the Thirty Years' War, a religious, not a civil, war, — a war to restore the old superstition, 83; its baleful effects, 83; this war drove multitudes of Protestants to America, 84; the Seven Years' War, directed against Protestantism and Prussia, worked for freedom, 86; the later German philosophy and literature, 86-92.
- Gerry, Elbridge, of Marblehead, vi. 427, vii. 388, 389; entreats Warren not to expose his life, 417; supersedes Cushing as delegate to Congress, viii. 243, 308; in Congress, votes for limiting Washington's powers, ix. 433; his action in Congress, x. 173, 217; his decisive action in respect of the fisheries, 215, 216, 217; anticipates the capture of Cornwallis, 516.
- Gibbon, Edward, expecting soon that Russian troops would be obtained, proposes to visit their camp, viii. 157; favors the American cause, x. 140.
- Gibraltar, Spain is determined to recover it, x. 186, 191; attack on it by the French and Spanish fleets, 581; gallant and successful defence by the garrison, 581.
- Gibson, Edmund, bishop of London, his opinion concerning slavery, iii. 409.
- Gilbert, Raleigh, son of Sir Humphrey Gilbert, conducts a colony to the Kennebec, i. 268.
- Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, proposes a north-west passage, i. 81; his character, 88; ob-



- tains a patent, 88; his first voyage, 89; takes formal possession of Newfoundland, 90; lost on the passage home, 91.
- Gist, Christopher, explores the Ohio Valley, iv. 76-82; visits the Wyandots, the Delawares, and other Indian tribes, 77, *et seq.*; is charmed with the country, 81; returns, 82; his second tour, 93; his plantation beyond the mountains, 106; guides Washington on his mission, 109, 111; joins him on his march, 118.
- Gist, Colonel Nathaniel, in the action at Edgehill, ix. 454; his expedition to the south-west, 467.
- Gist, General, of Maryland, commands a brigade at Camden, x. 321.
- Gladwin, Major, commands at Detroit, v. 115; suffers Pontiac to escape, 116.
- Glen, governor of South Carolina, iv. 38, 75, 113, 193.
- Gloucester, Duke of (William Henry, brother of George III.), his sympathy for America, vii. 349; visits the strong fortress of Metz in France, 350.
- Gloucester, Mass., its patriotic utterance in response to the Boston circular, vi. 440, 484; the men of this place repel the attack of Captain Linzee, viii. 65.
- Glover, Jesse, embarks for Massachusetts with a printer, i. 415; dies, 415.
- Glover, John, colonel of a regiment of Massachusetts fishermen, ix. 98; he and his men manage the boats in the retreat from Brooklyn, 103; successfully engages the British advance, 177; is with Washington at the Battle of Trenton, 230; as brigadier-general is sent to re-enforce the Northern Army, 374.
- Glover, William, deputy-governor of North Carolina, iii. 22.
- Godfrey, Edward, governor of Maine under George I., 434.
- Godyn, Samuel, and others, purchase a tract of land near Cape Henlopen, ii. 281; and at Cape May, 282.
- Goethe, John Wolfgang, in sympathy with America, x. 91.
- Goffe, William, a regicide, arrives in Boston, ii. 35; fruitless search made for him, 35; the saviour of Hadley, 104.
- Gomez, Stephen, examines the coast of New England, and discovers Hudson river, i. 38.
- Good, Sarah, accused of witchcraft, iii. 85.
- Goodwin children supposed to be bewitched, iii. 75.
- Gordon, William, historian of the American Revolution, vi. 428, *note*; his errors, how accounted for, 429, *note*; his character as a historian, ix. 123; not always to be trusted, 123; Washington's letter to him, 463; his opinions on slavery, x. 501.
- Gorgeana, in Maine, made a city, i. 429.
- Gorges, Robert, obtains a patent for a portion of Massachusetts, i. 326.
- Gorges, Sir Ferdinando, his attention first drawn to Maine, i. 115; engages in the scheme of colonization, 119, 267, 270; a royalist, 267, *note*, 429; befriends the Pilgrims, 320; his perseverance, 328, 337; obtains a grant of a large tract of land, 328, 337; his public spirit, 331; appointed governor-general of New England, 337; makes laws for his province, 338; befriends the Massachusetts company, 340; complains of them, 405; his pecuniary losses, 428; his visionary schemes, 429; his death, 430; his claim superseded, 430; purchased by Massachusetts, ii. 113.
- Gorges, Thomas, deputy of Ferdinando, i. 428.
- Gorges, William, governor of Western Maine, i. 337.
- Gorton, Samuel, his case, i. 419; intercedes for Miantonomoh, 423; in England obtains an order of Parliament in his favor, 439.
- Gosnold, Bartholomew, discovers and names Cape Cod, i. 112; visits Buzzard's Bay, 112; active for the colonization of Virginia, 118; dies there, 127.
- Gourgues, Dominic de, avenges on the Spaniards in Florida their massacre of the Huguenots, i. 72.
- Gove, Edward, his severe treatment, ii. 117.
- Government, views of Otis on its theory and practice, v. 202-205.
- Governments of every form contain two opposite tendencies, that of centralization and that of individuality, viii. 119; opinions of John Adams on government, 370, 371.
- Governor, how chosen, ix. 267; property qualification, 267; term of service, 268; a conditional veto allowed him, 268.
- Governors, royal, of America, their bad character, iv. 20.
- Gower, Lord, becomes president of the council under the Bedford ministry, vi. 109; opposes the repeal of the revenue acts, 277; his speech against America, vii. 202, 221.
- Graftenried, Count de, leader of the German colonists in North Carolina, iii. 319; a captive among the Indians, 319; released, 320.
- Grafton, Duke of (Augustus Henry Fitzroy), v. 257; secretary of state under the Rockingham administration, 302; praised by Gray, 303; wishes to repeal the stamp act, 365; advises the king to send for Pitt, 396; the king refuses, 396; Grafton has a conversation with Pitt, 397; his wishes are thwarted, 398; offers in Parliament a resolution contrary to his declared opinions, 402; resigns office, vi. 4; becomes first lord of the treasury under Pitt, 20; his two interviews with Lord Chatham, 82; is left in the position of prime minister, 83; approves the oppressive measures inaugurated by Charles Townshend, 88; consents to the displacement of the Earl of Shelburne, 213; moves in cabinet for the repeal of the revenue acts, 276; resigns the office of prime minister, 326; keeper of the privy seal, a l-



- vices concession and reconciliation, viii. 159; his remonstrance unheeded, 160; he complains to the king of the rash measures taken, 160; he tells the king all his efforts will fail, 160; resigns office, 165; once more pleads for conciliation, 301.
- Grand Bank, fisheries there, i. 87; number of vessels employed, 87.
- Grant, —, in Parliament, ridicules the Americans, and says they will not fight, vii. 223.
- Grant, General, commands a portion of the British force on Long Island, ix. 87, 88, 92; commands in New Jersey, 215; his atrocious order, 215; his confidence of success, 216; his fancied security, 225; his opinion of Washington's army, 225; sent to intercept Lafayette, x. 119; fails in the attempt, 120.
- Grant, Major James, is shamefully beaten by the French and Indians, iv. 309; attacks the Cherokees, 351; leads another expedition against them, 423; saved from ruin by the Virginia troops, 426; his arrogant demeanor, 426.
- Grantham, Lord, foreign secretary, x. 553, 575, 577.
- Granville, Earl of (John Carteret), president of the privy council, iv. 216, 245, 247, 255; tells Franklin that the king's instructions to the governors are the laws of the colonies, 256; often guilty of inebriation, 273.
- Granville, Earl of Temple, iv. 243, 249; brother-in-law of Pitt, 359; stands alone with Pitt, 407, 408; sullen, 442, 443.
- Grape Island in Boston Bay, affair at that place, vii. 362.
- Grenville, George, his deep hatred of America, vi. 57, 78, 80; combines with Bedford and Rockingham against Lord Chatham, 59; has in the king a mortal enemy, 60, 99; proposes arbitrary and oppressive measures for America, 78, 79; wishes the colonies reduced to submission by force, 80; his violent language, 80; Choiseul esteemed him by far the ablest financier in England, 99; Bedford forsakes him, 103; his mortification and despair, 109; advises to chastise America, 130; and to prohibit to them the fisheries, 130; advocates a reform in Parliament, 216; condemns the conduct of the ministry in requiring Massachusetts to rescind her resolves, 232; opposes Lord North, 253, 274; his reply to the "Farmer's Letters," 258; retorts on Lord North, 274; assumes the responsibility of the stamp act, but throws on the king the responsibility of the taxation of America, 253; the king's aversion to him, 355; he inclines to liberal sentiments, 359, 360; his death in 1770, 389; his friends join the ministry of Lord North, 389.
- Grattan, Henry, his high character, x. 454; his influence in favor of free-trade, 454.
- Graves, Admiral Samuel, arrives in Boston, vii. 70; his mean character, x. 514; his mismanagement, 515; his squadron worsted in an encounter with the French, 515.
- Graves, Thomas, erects a "great house" in Charlestown, i. 347.
- Gravier, Jesuit missionary, in Illinois, iii. 195; reduces the language to order, 196; his death, 197.
- Gray, John, of Boston, affray at his ropewalk, vi. 334.
- Gray, Samuel, of Boston, a victim at the Boston massacre, vi. 339, 340.
- "Gray's Elegy," part of it repeated by Wolfe the night before his death, iv. 333.
- Grayson, Colonel, of Virginia, statements respecting him, ix. 105, 106, 107; aide-de-camp of Washington, 196.
- Great Bridge, near Norfolk, Virginia, occupied by British troops, viii. 222; they are compelled to retreat with heavy loss, 227.
- Great Britain should have offered independence to her colonies, vii. 23; extreme haughtiness of her people, 25; proceedings of the Fourteenth Parliament, 178, *et seq.* (see *England and Parliament*); second address of Congress to the people of, viii. 38; Thomas Paine's reasons for a separation from, 238, *et seq.*; the separation resolved on, 459 (see *England*).
- "Great Swamp Fight" in 1675, ii. 105.
- Greaton, Colonel, his visit to Long Island, in Boston harbor, viii. 47.
- Green, Roger, leads a company of Non-conformists from Virginia into North Carolina, ii. 134.
- Green, Timothy, publisher of the "New London Gazette," an ardent patriot, v. 353.
- Greene, Christopher, lieutenant-colonel under Arnold in the expedition against Quebec, viii. 191, 192; his heroic efforts to carry that place, 209; is taken prisoner, 210; his gallant defence of Fort Mercer on Red Bank, ix. 429.
- Greene, General Nathaniel, of Warwick, in Rhode Island, vii. 325; commands the forces of that colony near Boston, 325; his parentage, early history, and character, 325, 326; elected brigadier-general, viii. 31; his high character, 31; commands at Brooklyn, ix. 82; his command assigned to Sullivan, 83; advises to burn the city of New York, 110; in the action near Manhattanville, 127; at Fort Lee, 167; his rash confidence, 174; elated by success, 180; complains of Washington, 180; re-enforces Fort Washington, 184; proceeds in direct opposition to Washington's intentions, 183; his want of vigilance, 189, 195; his disingenuousness, 193; is responsible for the loss of Fort Washington, 193; his neglect of orders, 194, 195; resulting in a hasty evacuation of Fort Lee, and great loss of cannon and stores, 195; expresses full confidence in the success of the American cause and in the ability of Washington, 222, 223; greatly assists Washington, 224; in the crossing of the Delaware and at Trenton, 230; is sent to Philadelphia, 339; attacks a body of the enemy on the Raritan, 354, 355; leads the

- advance at Brandywine, 396, 398; commands the left wing at the battle of Germantown, 424; is behind time, 425; his bad disposition of his troops, 426; loss of the battle in consequence, 427; incurs the frown of Washington, 428; elected quartermaster-general, 469; repels the British at Monmouth, x. 132; defeats a British force at Quaker Hill, 149; in 1779 requests the Southern command, 239; repels an invasion of New Jersey, 375; his administration of the quartermaster-general's department, 406; his integrity, 407; appointed to command the Southern Army, 407; takes command, but subject to the control of Washington, 456; Washington's opinion of him, 457; his humanity, 457, 458; his enforcement of discipline, 459; his difficulties, 460; his retreat through North Carolina before Cornwallis, 472; Washington applauds it, 473; his sufferings and those of his soldiers, 473; turns on his pursuers, 474; battle of Guilford Court-House, 475, errs in the arrangement of his forces, 476; the repulse of the North Carolina militia, 476; brave stand made by the Virginia brigade, 477, 478; British troops driven back, 478; Greene faints from extreme exhaustion, 479; great loss of the British, 479; the field left to the British, 479; but the British Army ruined, 481; Greene pursues Cornwallis, 481; the virtual defeat of Cornwallis confessed in Parliament, 481; Greene's operations in South Carolina, 485; encamps near Camden, 486; battle of Hobkirk's Hill with Rawden, 487; force on each side, 487; Greene's able dispositions, 487; after nearly routing the enemy, he is forced to retreat, 488; is compelled to raise the siege of Ninety-Six, 490; at Eutaw Springs, is at first victorious, 494; in a second engagement is defeated, 494; his remarkable career at the South: sometimes defeated, but always gained the object for which he fought, 495; complains of the condition of the army, 565.
- Green-Bay, mission at, iii. 153; visited by La Salle, 164, 167.
- Green Mountain Boys of Vermont, promise support to the cause of liberty, vii. 271 *a*; renounce the government of New York, and virtually their allegiance to the king, 280; agree to seize Ticonderoga, 280; the deed is accomplished, 340.
- Green Springs, action at, x. 508.
- Greenwood, John, hanged in England for not promising to go to church, i. 291.
- Gregory VII., Pope, compels the emperor to submit, x. 68.
- Grenada, impost levied on, v. 211; taken by the French, x. 295.
- Grenville, George, iv. 160, 163; retires from office, under Newcastle, 220; takes office under Pitt, 248; again, 274, remains in office after Pitt's retirement, 412; is secretary of state for foreign affairs, 438; is first lord of the admiralty, 446; in the cabinet of George III. v. 80; not the prime originator of the stamp act, 89, *note*; his zeal for taxing America, 91; urges the rigid enforcement of the navigation laws, 92; his measures adopted, 92; his defence of the excise on cider, 93; succeeds Bute as chancellor of the exchequer, 95; his character as a public man, 98; his love of money and of office, 98, 99; his personal department, 99; Walpole's dislike of him, 99, *note*; his private character, 100; his self-conceit, pride, and obstinacy, 100, 102, 105; has a rival in Charles Townshend, 103; his good intentions, 106, 107; strongly favors the protective system, 106; his colonial policy, 107; hates the Duke of Bedford, 142; complains to the king of his private griefs, 145: "Mr. Greenville," 145; union with the Duke of Bedford, 147; the responsible author of the stamp act, 152, 156; determines to enforce the navigation acts, 158, 159; his theory of the connection between the colonies and the parent state, 160; triumphs in Parliament over his opponents, 169; has the entire confidence of the House of Commons, 169; refuses his support to an American civil list, 176; takes no part in the schemes to subvert the colonial charters, 177; his course with regard to the affair of Wilkes, 178, 179; reluctant to propose a stamp tax, 179; though he doubted not the power of Parliament, 180; finds many objections in the way, 181, 182; postpones the tax one year, 183; offers bounties for colonial hemp, but disallows the manufacture of linen, 184; favors the trade in rice, 184; encourages the New England whale fishery, 184, 185; the most liberal act of his administration, 185; Grenville as chancellor of the exchequer, 186; opens the annual budget with American taxes, 186, 187; no person in Parliament controverts the right to tax America, 187, 191; the system of colonial taxation openly inaugurated, 188; his interview with colony agents, 189; his "tenderness" towards the colonists, 189; allows the colonies no power to tax themselves, 190; his artful attempts to mislead, 190; his vanity gratified, 191; brings forward the stamp act on the general ground of the authority of Parliament, 229; Parliament echo his words, 229; offers bounties as offsets to taxation, 230; his interview with Franklin and other agents of the colonies, 230; moves in Parliament for a stamp tax, 236; formally introduces a stamp bill, 243; which passes, 247; promises relief if the measure prove severe, 250; his unpleasant interview with the king, 254; the king compelled to submit, and to continue him in office, 265; the king resolves to be rid of him, 296; end of the Grenville ministry, 300; the king never liked him, 98, *note*; Grenville thinks he could have carried the stamp act through, 363; is in favor of crushing America, 372; blames the lenity of the Rockingham administration, 373; is blamed as the author

- of all the trouble, 373; replies to Pitt, and justifies himself, 388-390; Pitt's crushing reply to him, 391-395; he moves to enforce the stamp act, 423; the motion rejected by a majority of two to one, 424; solicits aid from Bute, 427, 428; opposes the repeal of the stamp act, 435; hissed by the people, 436; his Whig principles, viii. 124; his colonial policy, 124.
- Grenville, George, the younger, his eulogy of Lord Chatham, ix. 483.
- Grenville, Sir Richard, commands Raleigh's fleet, i. 95; takes a Spanish prize, 97; conveys more settlers to North Carolina, 103.
- Grenville, Thomas, is sent to Paris by Fox to act in his behalf, x. 542; his mean character, 542; singularity of the case, 542; his interview with Vergennes, 542; with Franklin, 543; weakness of his character, 543, 546; his thoughtless behavior, 547.
- Grey, Major-General, defeats Wayne, ix. 402; action between his troops and Morgan's riflemen, 454; burns the shipping at New Bedford, x. 149; his merciless career in New Jersey, 152.
- Gridley, Jeremiah, attorney-general of Massachusetts, argues in favor of writs of assistance, iv. 414, 415.
- Gridley, Richard, an officer in the expedition against Louisburg, iii. 462; as engineer draws the lines for the redoubt on Breed's Hill, vii. 409; leaves the scene of action, 410.
- "Griffin," the first vessel built on the upper lakes, iii. 164; lost, 165.
- Griffin, General, at Mount Holly, ix. 224; repulsed by Donop, 223, 228.
- Griffin's Wharf (Liverpool Wharf since 1815), where the tea was destroyed in December, 1773, vi. 480, 486.
- Grigsby, Hugh Blair, important statement by him, x. 423, *note*.
- Grijalva explores the coast of Mexico, i. 35.
- Grimaldi, minister of foreign affairs for Spain, promises to share the expense of aiding America, viii. 342, 343.
- Griswold, Fort, its garrison massacred by Arnold, x. 500.
- Grotius, Hugo, vindicates the freedom of the sea, i. 214, ii. 325; opposes, the colonization of America, ii. 234; his imprisonment, 277.
- Guadaloupe, taken by the English, iv. 316, 317; shall it be retained? 363, 365.
- Guilford Court-House, battle of, x. 475.
- Gunby, Colonel, commands a regiment of Marylanders at Guilford, x. 478; and at Hobkirk's Hill, 486; his unwise conduct, 487.
- Gunning, British ambassador to Russia, viii. 107; asks for Russian troops, 107; courteous reply of the empress, 107; deceives himself and misleads his government, 107; is directed to ask for twenty thousand men, 149; coolness of the empress, 150; she gives good advice, and recommends lenity and concession, 150; he is thus put on the defensive, 150; makes a direct request for the troops, 151; the request refused, 152; will be content with fifteen thousand, 152, and even with ten thousand, 155; both requests are declined, 153, 155; a question of veracity between the king and the empress, 151; she refuses to see Gunning, 153; the matter of sending troops discussed in council, 153; the dignity and policy of Catharine combine against granting the troops, 153; her sarcastic reply to the king, 154; Gunning takes leave of the empress, 156.
- Gustavus Adolphus, king of Sweden, favors colonization in America, ii. 284, 285; slain at Lutzen, x. 82.
- Gyles, Thomas, killed by the Indians at Pemaquid, iii. 181.

## II.

- Habersham, James, of Georgia, his patriotic words, v. 290.
- Habersham, Joseph, and others, obtain possession of the royal magazine in Savannah, vii. 337; makes Sir Joseph Wright prisoner, viii. 246.
- Haddrell's Point, near Charleston, occupied as a military post, viii. 90, 396, 398; Armstrong commands the defenses there, 399, 403; an attack on it intended, 406.
- Hadley, Mass., in the Indian war, saved by the sudden appearance of Goffe, the regicide, ii. 104.
- Hadley, Samuel, slain at Lexington, vii. 214.
- Hakluyt, Richard, one of the assigns of Raleigh, i. 107; favors commercial voyages to New England, 113; promotes the colonization of Virginia, 119.
- Haldimand, Colonel, at Oswego, iv. 321.
- Hale, Captain Nathan, his excellent character, ix. 130; his cruel treatment, 130; hung as a spy without trial, 130.
- Half-king of the Mingoes or mixed tribe of Indians in the Ohio Valley, why so called, iv. 82; at variance with the French, 94; opposes their occupation of the Ohio Valley, 107; attends Washington in his journey to Fort Le Boeuf, 110; solicits help from Washington, 117.
- Halifax, Earl of, becomes head of the Board of Trade and Plantations, iv. 36; his character, 36, 37; finds France encroaching in America, and the colonies tending towards independence, 37, 38; is resolute against the spirit of freedom, 41; seeks to confine French encroachments by a colony on the Ohio, 42; the French anticipate the movement, 42, 43; Halifax zealous for restraining the colonies, 57; his pride and ambition, 70; disagrees with Bedford, 70; plan of union of the colonies proposed by him, 165, 166; takes charge of American affairs, 92; inquires "who is Mr. Washington?" 190; wishes a tax on the colonies, 223; takes office under Pitt, 274; continues to cherish



- designs against the liberties of America, 299; his licentiousness, 380; is "earnest for bishops," 380; is settled in the decision to tax the colonies, 381; sent as lord lieutenant to Ireland, 392; becomes first lord of the admiralty, 438; secretary of state, 446; in the council, v. 80; secretary of state, 96; one of the triumvirate ministry, 96; his unpleasant interview with the king, 140; secretary of state for the colonies, 148; defeated in some of his plans, 177, 178; his conduct in regard to the regency bill, 254, 255; is strongly on the side of Bedford, 263.
- Halifax, town of, in Nova Scotia, founded, iv. 45, 46.
- Halket, Sir Peter, a brigadier in Braddock's expedition, iv. 185; killed, 190; his remains interred three years afterwards, 312.
- Hall, Lyman, chosen delegate to the continental Congress from Georgia, vii. 207; is admitted to their body, 337, 358.
- Hallowell, Benjamin, comptroller of the customs at Boston, vi. 156; sent to London as the emissary of Bernard and Hutchinson, 161; his representations there, 174.
- Hamblin, John, has been confounded with John Hampden, i. 412, *note*.
- Hamburg, senate of, promote the embarkation of continental troops, viii. 101.
- Hamilton, Alexander, of New York, his early history and first appearance in public, vii. 79, 80; he writes in defence of liberty, 212-216; his artillery company, viii. 440; serves a battery on the Raritan, ix. 201; at the battle of Trenton, 230; made secretary to Washington, 335; is sent to Philadelphia, 401; is sent to Gates to demand re-enforcements, 432; his character, x. 409; his leaning to authority, 409; admires the English constitution, 409; did not fully appreciate the character of Washington, 410; earnestly desires a vigorous confederation and a strong government, 411, 412; defects of his plan, 412; is full of hope for his country, 413; advises to raise colored troops, 291; leads a storming party at Yorktown, 519; his gallant behavior at that time, 520; testifies to Lee's inactivity at Monmouth, 131, *note*; leaves the army, and studies law, 569; favors a stronger government, 570; elected to Congress, 570; comparison of him with Madison, 570.
- Hamilton, Andrew, of Philadelphia, his triumphant defence of popular liberty, iii. 393, 394; governor of West New Jersey, iii. 47.
- Hamilton, Lieutenant-Governor of Detroit, excites the Indians against the Americans, vii. 279; promises the assistance of the Indians against the Americans, ix. 151; sends out parties of Indians against the American frontiers, 377, x. 197; gives rewards for scalps, 198; excites the Indians against the settlers, 198, 199; is taken prisoner with his garrison, 301.
- Hamilton, William, of Philadelphia, viii. 387.
- Hamilton, William Gerard, one of the Board of Trade, iv. 237, 375.
- Hampden, John, did not embark for America, i. 411, 412; the maxim of his life, 412, *note*.
- Hampshire county courts are broken up, vii. 103; volunteers from this county march towards Boston, 120.
- Hampton, in Virginia, blockaded by Dunmore, viii. 221; he intends to destroy the town, but is successfully resisted, 221.
- Hampton Court, conference at i. 295.
- Hanau, zeal of the hereditary prince to obtain recruits for the king of England, viii. 266; his meanness, 266; his imperfect English, 266, 267.
- Hanbury, John, and his associates obtain a large grant of land in the Ohio Valley, iv. 42.
- Hancock, John, sends a valuable ship to sea without stamped papers, v. 374; chosen representative from Boston, vi. 7, 284; seizure of his sloop "Liberty," 155; elected to a convention of the people, 198; arrested by the crown officers, 213; Hancock in Faneuil Hall, 309; one of a committee to demand the removal of the troops, 343; his zeal for liberty abates, 403; the king hopes to win him to his side, 407; disapproves of committees of correspondence, 425; refuses to serve on the committee, 429; denounces Hutchinson and Oliver, 461; his share in the affair of the Boston tea-party, 473, *et seq.*; moderator of town meeting called in reference to the expected arrival of tea, 474; is willing to spend fortune and life in the cause of liberty, 479; his brave speech on the fifth of March, 508; commands the Boston cadets, vii. 37; Gage is required to seize him, but dares not attempt it, 37; Gage revokes his commission, 101; is elected president of the provincial Congress, 153; one of the committee of safety, 153; Gage hopes to seize him at Lexington, 288, he retires to Woburn, 292; is chosen president of the second continental Congress, 378; proscribed by Gage, 391; president of the continental Congress, viii. 392; a vain, negligent man, x. 501; vetoes an important act of the legislature, 571.
- Hand, colonel of riflemen, retires before Cornwallis, ix. 84; retreats from Long Island, 103; guards the causeway at Frog's Neck, 175; his successful attack, 178; is with Washington in the battle of Trenton, 230, 234; and at the battle of Princeton, 249.
- Hand, Edward, lieutenant-colonel of a Pennsylvania regiment, viii. 64.
- Hanoverian troops taken into British pay, viii. 101; they are sent to Gibraltar and Port Mahon, 160.
- Hansford, Thomas, the first American martyr for liberty, ii. 231.
- Harcourt, Lieutenant-Colonel, takes General Lee prisoner, ix. 210.
- Hardwicke, Earl of, invited to enter the cabinet of George III, v. 139; his refusal, 139.



- Hardwicke, Earl of (Philip Yorke), lord chancellor, admits the power of Parliament to tax the colonies, iv. 33, 34; places the military in the colonies above the civil power, 229; joins with Newcastle and others against Pitt, 408.
- Hardy, Sir Charles, governor of New York, iv. 222; governor of New Jersey, 440; in command of a powerful British fleet, fails to engage the enemy, x. 249.
- Haring, of the New York provincial assembly, viii. 439.
- Hariot, the historian of Raleigh's expedition to North Carolina, i. 96; describes the natives, 98.
- Harnett, Cornelius, of North Carolina, he and others burn Fort Johnston, viii. 95; president of the provincial Congress, 98; is excepted by Sir Henry Clinton from pardon, 358.
- Harrington, Caleb, slain at Lexington, vii. 294.
- Harrington, Jonathan, slain at Lexington, vii. 294.
- Harris, James, earl of Malmesbury, British envoy at St. Petersburg, x. 242, 257, 266, 268; his interview with Prince Potemkin, 268, 274; and with the empress Catharine, 269; his vain endeavor to detach her from the northern alliance, 273, 274; is outwitted by Russian diplomacy, 278.
- Harrison, Benjamin, a member of the first continental Congress, vii. 130; his imprudent speech, 130; he opposes the measures of resistance advocated by Washington and Patrick Henry, 273; his resolute spirit, vii. 38; one of a committee of Congress to visit the camp at Cambridge, 111; member of a committee of correspondence, 142; member of a committee sent to New York, 279; his speech on opening the ports, 314; for independence, 320; one of the committee for treaties with foreign powers, 393; ix. 52; objects to encroachment on Virginia, 56.
- Harrison, Joseph, collector of the port of Boston, vi. 156; reports a general spirit of insurrection, 160.
- Harrison, lieutenant-colonel in the American army, ix. 329.
- Harrod, James, a pioneer settler of Kentucky, vii. 366, 367; his character, 367.
- Harrod, William, a captain of backwoodsmen, x. 195.
- Hartford settled, ii. 283; sends relief to the suffering people of Boston in 1774, vii. 73; treats with great respect the delegates from Massachusetts, 106.
- Hartley, David, in Parliament opposes the employment of German mercenaries, viii. 269; member of Parliament, sends information to Franklin, ix. 485; Franklin's reply, 485; his attempt with Franklin in behalf of Lord North, 497; Franklin's reply, 497.
- Hartshorne, Thomas, slain at Haverhill, iii. 215.
- Harvard College founded, i. 415, 459; liberality of the people towards it, 459.
- Harvey, Sir John, governor of Virginia, i. 197; unfriendly to the privileges of the colonists, 198; deposed and impeached, 201; resumes his government, 201; superseded, 202; his administration unfairly described, 201-203.
- Haslet, Colonel, of Delaware, his successful attack, ix. 178; at White Plains, 181; slain in the battle of Princeton, 248.
- Havana captured, iv. 444-446; exchanged for the Floridas, 451.
- Haverhill, Mass., destroyed by Indians, iii. 215; savage scenes enacted there, 215, 216.
- Haviland, Colonel, leads a party from Crown Point to Montreal, iv. 360.
- Hawes, Colonel, commands a regiment at Hobkirk's Hill, x. 486, 487.
- Hawkins, Sir John, arrives in Florida, i. 65; his kindness to the French colonists there, 66; first English slave-trader, 172.
- Hawley, Joseph, of Northampton, Mass., his pure life, vi. 38; representative of the town, 38; denies the right of Parliament to legislate for America, 38, 39; his great influence, 39; his bill to compensate sufferers from the stamp act, 40; his report to the assembly, 420; assists Samuel Adams with his sound legal knowledge, 448, 467; his brave spirit, 507; the great patriot, his energetic words to the delegates of Massachusetts, vii. 102; with New England only he would resist the whole force of Great Britain, 125; advises independence, and a national parliament of two houses, viii. 136.
- Hawley, William, governor of Carolina, ii. 130.
- Hawthorne, Major William, of Salem, makes a patriotic speech, ii. 82; counsels resistance to prerogative, 88.
- Hayes, Colonel, hanged in violation of a parole, x. 458.
- Hayne, Colonel Isaac, hanged by order of Lord Rawden, ix. 492; the execution illegal, 492.
- Haynes, John, arrives in Boston, i. 364; goes to Connecticut, 397.
- Haynes, Josiah, of Sudbury, eighty years of age, in the field at Concord, vii. 304; he is slain, 306.
- Hayward, James, of Acton, slain while pursuing the British from Concord, vii. 306.
- Hayward, John, the historian of Tennessee, vi. 381, *note*, 401.
- Heard, Colonel Nathaniel, of New Jersey, disarms the Tories on Long Island, viii. 276.
- Heath, Sir Robert, has a patent of Carolina, ii. 130.
- Heath, William, of Roxbury, Mass., member with Adams and Cushing of a select committee, vi. 469; elected brigadier-general, viii. 31; ordered to New York, 303; commands at Kingsbridge, near New York, ix. 101; his dishonesty, 118; marches to

- White Plains, 178; with Washington at the Highlands, 187; is placed in command there, 187; disregards the assumed authority of Lee, 204, 206; his bombast at Kingsbridge, 252; his disrespect to Washington, 337.
- Heister, lieutenant-general of Hessian troops, viii. 235; his character, 265; re-enforces the army of Howe on Long Island, ix. 85; encamped at New Rochelle, 178; marches on White Plains, 189; he is at Middlebush, N. J., 352; retreats to Amboy, 354; is recalled for his humanity to his troops, 314; dies of wounded feeling, 314.
- Hemp and flax, colonial, Grenville grants a bounty on, v. 183, 184.
- Hendrick, chief of the Mohawks, iv. 89, 122; slain at Lake George, 210.
- Hendricks, captain in a Pennsylvania regiment, viii. 64; his noble aspect, 64; joins the expedition against Quebec, 191; slain in the assault on that place, 210.
- Henley, Robert (Lord Northampton), becomes lord chancellor, iv. 274.
- Henley, Thomas, of Charlestown, in Massachusetts, slain, ix. 131.
- Hennepin, Louis, joins La Salle, iii. 163; traverses the Illinois region, 165; ascends the Mississippi to the Falls of St. Anthony, 166; his captivity among the Sioux, 167; enters the English service, 202; his false statements, 202, 203.
- Henry VIII., a pope in his own dominions, i. 275; enforced the doctrines of the Romish church, 276; his inexorable severity, 276.
- Henry, Alexander, his "Travels in Canada," quoted, v. 121, *note*.
- Henry the Fowler, his successful reign, x. 66.
- Henry, Patrick, his early history, v. 172; his first case in court, 173; his plea against "the parsons," 174; gains the case, 175; as a member of the colonial assembly, he reports a series of patriotic resolutions, 275; his daring speech, 277; his earnest disapproval of slavery, vi. 416, 417; advocates the plan of inter-colonial committees, 455; an austere patriot, vii. 52; compared to Demosthenes, 85; a member of the First Continental Congress, 127; his speech on the manner of voting, 129; thinks a new government should be instituted, 131; predicts war, 152; his opinion of Washington, 153; he moves that the colony of Virginia be put in a posture of defence, 273; supports his motion by an energetic speech, 273, 274; a member of the second continental Congress, 353; made provincial commander-in-chief in Virginia, viii. 80; in the Virginia convention, 378, 436; elected governor, 437; is consulted respecting the occupation of the north-west, x. 194.
- Henshaw, Colonel, of Massachusetts, at the battle of Long Island, ix. 86, 89.
- Herder, John Godfrey, sees the rising glories of America, x. 89.
- Herkimer, General, rouses the militia of Tryon County to the relief of Fort Stanwix, ix. 378; falls into an ambuscade, 378; is mortally wounded, 379; the "hero of the Mohawk Valley," 381; first turned the tide of success in the northern department, 381.
- Hertel de Rouville, leads an attack on Salmon Falls, iii. 182; and on Casco, 183; and on Deerfield, 212; and on Haverhill, 214; his savage cruelty, 215.
- Hesse Cassel, the prince of, offers a regiment to George III., viii. 147; his meanness, 148; the Hessians a nation of soldiers, 260; the landgrave, Frederick II., 260; his coarseness and voluptuousness, 260, 261; life at Cassel, 261; the prince sells his subjects to George, 261; drives a hard bargain, 261, 262; a double subsidy, 262; an onerous affair to England, 262; the landgrave's meanness, 263; he gains on the killed and wounded, on the sick, and on the clothing, 263; and in other ways, 264; number of troops furnished and their character, 264, 265; the men reluctant to go, 264, 265; character of the officers, 265; the troops are got ready, 265; delay of England in providing transports, 265; transports badly fitted up, 266; frauds of contractors, 266; the treaty under debate in Parliament, 268, 269; number of Hessians sent to America, 270; almost every family in mourning, 270; Frederic II. of Prussia is indignant, 270; furnishes recruits for the British army, ix. 313, 314; men impressed for the service, 474.
- Hessian barbarity, x. 227.
- Hessian troops land on Long Island, ix. 83, 85; attack the Americans, 91; their great success, 92; their cruelty, 92; their trifling loss, 95; they take possession of New York city, 120; at the battle of White Plains, 178-181; in the attack and capture of Fort Washington, 185, 190-193; and of Fort Lee, 195; at Rhode Island, 200; in New Jersey, 215; their rapacity, 216; their defeat and surrender at Trenton, 232-235; the Hessian troops greatly wasted by the campaign, 314; forbidden to pass through the Prussian dominions, x. 114; two regiments taken prisoners at Yorktown, 523.
- Heth, William, lieutenant in Morgan's rifle company, viii. 63; joins the expedition against Quebec, 191; and in the assault on that place, 209; a prisoner there, 210.
- Hewes, Joseph, of North Carolina, viii. 95.
- Higginson, Francis, one of the earliest ministers of Salem, i. 345; his affecting farewell at losing sight of England, 346; his death, 359.
- Higginson, John, minister of Salem, his argument from Genesis, ii. 428.
- Highland settlement at Darien, Georgia, iii. 427, 431; bravery of the settlers, 445.
- Highlanders in America, iv. 250; their bravery at Louisburg, 295; and at Ticonderoga, 303; in the expedition against

- Fort Duquesne, 308, 309; in the Cherokee country, 351; in North Carolina, viii. 92; their large number, 93; are invited to rise against the colonists, 94; the measure defeated, 96; Highlanders of the Valley of the Mohawk, 272; they rally to the king's standard, 272; they are overpowered, 273; Highlanders in North Carolina rise in arms, 284; their military operations, 285-288; are defeated with loss by Caswell, 288, 289; are disarmed and crushed, 290.
- Hill, John, brigadier-general, has command of a land force for the reduction of Canada, iii. 221.
- Hillsborough, Earl of (Willis Hill), comes into office, iv. 220; first lord of the Board of Trade, v. 148; disapproves of taxation of the colonies by Parliament, 181; an Irish, after 1772 a British, peer, opposes the colonization of the Mississippi Valley, and why, vi. 33; department of the colonies assigned to him, 109; his colonial policy, 110; his interview with W. S. Johnson, agent for Connecticut, and the able defence by Johnson of the rights of that colony, 111-115; Hillsborough's purpose to abrogate colonial charters, 116; his duplicity towards Massachusetts, 116; his circular letter to American governors, 143; he requires Massachusetts to rescind its resolutions against taxation, 144; is totally misled by Bernard and Hutchinson, 152; orders troops and ships of war to Boston, 153; takes his opinions from Bernard, 171; his duplicity, 172; his arbitrary conduct, 216; wishes to prevent the colonization of the West, 222, 225; defeated in his plans against American liberty, 235, 236; his interview with the agents of the colonies, 238; confesses the revenue acts to be unwise and wrong, yet determines not to have them repealed, 238, 239, 245; intends to deprive Massachusetts of chartered rights, 249; his blind adherence to the counsel of Bernard, 318; is denounced in the House of Commons, 362; perseveres in the fixed purpose to subvert the charter of Massachusetts, 371; forbids the legislature of that province to tax the commissioners of customs, 404, 409; infringes the liberties of Georgia, 410; is compelled to resign office, 421; moves an address in the House of Lords denunciatory of Massachusetts, vii. 178; insists on the submission of the Americans, viii. 301; attacks the Duke of Richmond in Parliament, ix. 482.
- Hinckley, Thomas, governor of Plymouth, ii. 447.
- Hingham, Mass., disturbance at, i. 435; the disturbers punished, 436.
- Historian should be unbiassed, viii. 118.
- Historic candor and love of truth, viii. 116; it is possible, and why, 118.
- History, its criterion, iii. 397; need of diligent research, 397; need of impartiality, 398; may be established as a science, and how, 398; a record of truth, and of Divine Providence, 398; emancipated from the dictates of authority, iv. 4; records the progress of the human race, 8, 9; therefore the most cheering of all pursuits, 10; must not conceal faults, or neglect the influence of principles, viii. 116, 117.
- Hitchcock, General, brings aid to Washington at Princeton, ix. 239, 249.
- Hobart, John Sloss, in the New York Convention, ix. 33.
- Hobkirk's Hill, battle of, x. 487.
- Hog Island, in Boston harbor, skirmish there, vi. 363.
- Holderness, Earl of, succeeds Bedford as Secretary of State for the colonies, iv. 87; transferred to the Northern Department, 160; his imbecility, 93, 164; retires from office, 391.
- Holland and the United Provinces, engross the carrying trade of the world, i. 215 (see *New Netherlands*); severe struggle against England and France, ii. 323; heroic conduct of the Dutch, 323; commercial system of, iii. 115.
- Holland, her sovereignty invaded by England, iv. 234; in 1763, no longer a great maritime power, v. 13; political relations, 13; liberty enjoyed, 13; champion of the freedom of the seas, 13; menaced by England, vii. 246; application is made to, for the Scottish brigade, viii. 148, 250; origin of the brigade, 251; arguments for granting the request, 251; arguments against it, 251, 252; the connection with England an injury to Holland, 251; the free republic of Holland should not war on free America, 252; unwillingness to offend England, 252; the request refused, form of the refusal, 252, 253; menaced with war by England, ix. 292; spirited conduct of the States General, 293; its long-continued sufferings for liberty, x. 58; ungenerous treatment from England, 59; maintains the freedom of the seas, 59; has strong sympathies for America, 60; disregards an American overture, 261. (See *Dutch and Netherlands*.)
- Holland, Lord (see *Fox, Henry*).
- Holls, Thomas, foresees the approaching independence of America, iv. 450; waits on Rockingham with threatening accounts received from America, v. 341, 342; expects American independence, vi. 166; his letter to Eliot quoted, 230.
- Holmes, Admiral, commands part of the fleet in the attack on Quebec, iv. 331.
- Holmes, Obadiah, severely whipped, i. 450.
- Holstein or Holsten river in Tennessee, petition of the inhabitants to the Virginia Convention, viii. 376.
- Holt, John, his printing office in Norfolk plundered by Dunmore, viii. 220.
- Hood, Samuel (afterwards Lord Hood), at Boston, vi. 161, 210, 247, 312.
- Hood, Zachariah, distributor of stamps at Annapolis, flees to New York for safety, v. 315.
- Hooker, Rev. Thomas, arrives in Boston, i.



- 365; his character, 365; goes to Connecticut, 396; settles at Hartford, 397.
- Hooper, John, Bishop of Gloucester, a Puritan, i. 289; a martyr, 280; his firmness, 281.
- Hooper, William, of North Carolina, viii. 97; introduces into the Provincial Congress Franklin's plan of a confederacy, 97; drafts an address to the people of Great Britain, 98; as delegate in Congress from North Carolina, is averse to independence, viii. 245; his house burned by Governor Martin, 358; wishes to see slavery pass away, ix. 52; his high encomium on Washington, 256.
- Hopkins, Commodore Esek, censured for misconduct in an action with the "Glasgow" frigate, ix. 134.
- Hopkins, Samuel, an eminent American divine, his doctrine of disinterested love, vi. 425; writes against slavery, viii. 322; addresses a memorial to Congress respecting it, 322.
- Hopkins, Stephen, of Rhode Island, at Albany, iv. 122; favors a tax by Parliament, 179; governor of Rhode Island, v. 217; his patriotic sentiments, 271, 286, 290; chief-justice of Rhode Island, his opinion on the proceedings of the schooner "Gasppee," vi. 418; asks advice of Samuel Adams, 441; his brave conduct in the affair, 451; a member of the first continental Congress, vii. 127; contends that each colony have one vote, ix. 54, 55.
- Hormansden, chief-justice of New York, advises the abrogation of charters, vi. 451, 452.
- Horry, Peter, colonel, takes part in the defence of Charleston, viii. 402, 413.
- Hosmer, Abner, of Acton, slain at Concord, vii. 303.
- Hotham, Admiral, with his squadron, covers the landing of troops on New York Island, ix. 119.
- House of Commons, on what its power rested, iv. 19; how was itself governed, 160; able men in it, 160; impatient of its subordination to the lords, 161; denies the right in a colonial assembly to raise and apply public money, 255; claims control over American legislation, 255; how constituted, v. 38; inequality and imperfection of the elective franchise, 39, 40; its exclusive character, 40, 41; subordinate to the aristocracy, 40, 41 (see *Parliament*); its debates on the points in controversy with the colonies, vii. 179; its unrelenting spirit against America, 217; altercations among its members, 218; refuses to receive Franklin's petition, 218; declares Massachusetts in rebellion, 222 (see *Parliament*); animated debate on the king's speech denouncing the Americans as rebels, viii. 161, 162; its strong vote for coercive measures, 161; debate on the treaties with Brunswick and Hesse for the supply of troops against American liberty, 268; debate on the policy of the ministry, ix. 142-144.
- House of Lords, angry discussions in it, on the defiant attitude of Massachusetts and New York, vi. 65, 66, 245, 246, 497, 518; vehement debate on the disobedience of Massachusetts, vii. 178; debate on Chatham's motion to remove the troops from Boston, 196, *et seq.*; fierce debates on the controversy with America, 220, 226, 261, 262; Franklin's contempt for this body of hereditary legislators, 222; supports the coercive measures of the ministry, viii. 163; debate on the treaties with Brunswick and Hesse, 269; debate on making peace with America, ix. 477, 482, 494.
- Howard, John B., colonel, of Maryland, commands a regiment at Cowpens, x. 463, 464.
- Howard, Lord, of Effingham (see *Effingham*).
- Howard, Martin, chief-justice of North Carolina, his bad character, vi. 184.
- Howe, Captain, in the "Dunkirk," captures the "Alcide" and the "Lys," iv. 183.
- Howe, General Robert, of North Carolina, his patriotism, viii. 92; takes possession of Norfolk, 228; his plantation ravaged by Cornwallis, 358; and himself excepted from pardon by Clinton, 358; arrives in the vicinity of Charleston, 396; follows Lee into Georgia, ix. 158.
- Howe, General Robert (American), commands at Savannah, x. 285.
- Howe, Lord, his excellent character, iv. 294; slain in a skirmish before Ticonderoga, 300, 301.
- Howe, Lord, and General Howe, sent as commissioners to America, viii. 360; powers conferred on them, 360; Lord Howe wishes well to the Americans, 361; insists on the power of acting alone, 361.
- Howe, Lord (Richard Howe), negotiates with Franklin in behalf of the ministry, vii. 188; he again sees Franklin, and proposes terms of conciliation in behalf of Lord North, 242; appointed admiral and commander of the naval forces on the American coast, 245; sent out also as a pacificator, 245; a descendant of George I., ix. 37; his character, 37; confidently expects peace, 38; does not perceive how limited are his powers as a commissioner, 38; arrives at Staten Island, 38; his declaration, 38; seeks intercourse with Washington as a private man, 39, 41, 42; Washington declines the intercourse, 39, 41, 42; Howe's circular letters, 39; letters to individuals, 39; he writes to Franklin, 42; Franklin's reply, 42; his disappointment, 44; Lord Howe once more proposes Lord North's plan of conciliation, 82; the proposal not received, 82; amount of the naval force under his command, 85; furnishes the land forces with powder at the battle of Long Island, 92; he sends Sullivan to Congress, 108; Congress appoint a committee to meet him, 112; interview of Lord Howe with the committee, 116; the interview leads to no good result, 117; his declaration, 128; his proclamation of par-



- don to those who would submit, 199; its effect, 199; Lord Howe and his brother differ from Germain as to the conduct of the war, 331; Germain gives them new instructions, 332; Lord Howe's fleet in the Delaware, 429; his reputation, x. 145; appears off Rhode Island, 147; is superseded by Byron, 149; relieves Gibraltar, 581.
- Howe, William** (afterwards Sir William), lieutenant-colonel of light infantry in Wolfe's army, iv. 325; at the siege of Havana, 444; elected to Parliament from Nottingham, vii. 176; appointed commander-in-chief in America, 188, 244; his incapacity, 244; his inconsistency with former professions, 245; lauds in Boston with re-enforcements, 362, 379, 389; lands in Charlestown to attack the Americans there, 413; requests that Charlestown may be burned, 422; his first attack on the American line, 422; second attack, 425; both attacks repulsed with great slaughter, 426; Howe is left almost alone, 426; escapes unhurt, 432; his attack on Bunker Hill censured, viii. 25; takes command of the army in Boston, 111; disapproves the expedition to the Carolinas, 282; finds himself surpassed in skill by the American officers, 296; his position in Boston rendered untenable, 296; proposes an attack, 297; he finds himself compelled to evacuate Boston, 298; his false pretences, 300; his precipitate retreat, 302; leaves behind him ample supplies for the American army, 302; remains several days in Nantasket Roads, 356; with a powerful fleet and army arrives at Sandy Hook, 459; on Staten Island, sends his adjutant-general to the American camp, ix. 42, 45; agrees to an exchange of prisoners, 46; receives re-enforcements, 82; lands a powerful force on Long Island, 83; amount of his force, 85; his plan of attack, 87; defeats the Americans, 90-94; refuses to storm the redoubt at Brooklyn, 95; his character and aspect, 99; connected with the royal family, 99; lethargic and slow, 99; addicted to pleasure, 99; wanting in every great quality, 99. his boastful exaggerations, 109; prepares to land on New York Island, 118; takes possession of the city, 120, 121; is complimented by Germain, 140; demands of the ministry large re-enforcements, 145; sails up the Hudson, and lands at Frog's Neck, 175; marches for White Plains, 177; ventures not to attack Washington, 180; but sends a division to attack McDougal at Chatterton Hill, 181; the attack at first not successful, 182; removes to Dobbs's Ferry on Hudson River, 184; takes Fort Washington on New York Island, 190-193; joins Cornwallis at Brunswick, 201; his slowness saves Washington, his army, and Philadelphia, 202; supposing New Jersey conquered, returns to New York, 215; refuses to see Lee, 215; Howe and his mistress in New York, 227; his high reputation there and in Europe, 226, 227; the king honors him, 227; his sluggishness, 242; invested with the Order of the Bath, 241, 251; small success of the British troops, 254; Howe sustained by Lord North and the king, 312, 323; he wishes no foreign officers, 314; is less hopeful of conquering America, 327, 333; calls for large re-enforcements, 327, 332; he and Lord Howe attempt to negotiate with Washington, 328, 329; the overture rejected, 329; Howe's final plan, 333; his letter to Carleton, 333; misses favorable opportunities, 334; wastes time at New York, 345; refuses to countenance the employment of Indians, 350; is supported by Lord North, 350; his dilatory movements, 350; prepares to march on Philadelphia, 351; amount of his force, 351; Washington outgenerals him, 351; he retreats to Brunswick, 354; to Amboy, 355; and to Staten Island, 356; thus finally evacuating New Jersey, 356; embarks for Philadelphia, 391; enters the Chesapeake, 391; strength of his army, 392; lands at the Head of Elk in Maryland, 393; begins his march, 394; his feint at Milltown, 394; Washington again outgenerals him, 394; Howe's personal courage, 400; his plan of battle fails, 400; is detained from the pursuit of Washington's army, 400, 401; crosses the Schuylkill, 403; takes possession of Philadelphia, but fails in the great object of the campaign, 404; his camp at Germantown, 423; is surprised there, 425; his troops repel the attack, 427; he fortifies himself in Philadelphia, 429; offers his resignation of his command, 432; plans an attack on Washington, 452; his first advance, 453; its failure, 453; second advance, 453; fears to attack, 454; returns to Philadelphia, 454; his unsuccessful attempt to entrap and capture Lafayette, x. 119, 120; his character, 120; his want of enterprise, fondness for pleasure, 121; his lack of military skill and judgment, 121; his farewell to the American shore, 119; thinks the contest hopeless, 141.
- Huddy, Joshua**, murdered by loyalists, x. 562.
- Hudson, Henry**, endeavors to discover a north-east passage to China, ii. 265; explores the American coast, 266; enters the harbor of New York, 267; sails up the North river, 268; returns to Europe, 269; is detained in England, 273; his last voyage, 273; enters Hudson's Bay, 274; his death, 274.
- Hudson river** discovered, i. 38.
- Hudson's Bay** discovered, i. 82, 274; hostile operations there, iii. 178, 179, 199.
- Huger, General Isaac**, of South Carolina, x. 316.
- Hugenots**, in Canada, i. 26, 28; in Florida, 61; massacre of, 70; emigrate to South Carolina, ii. 174-183; their condition in France, 175; excluded from office, 176; "dragooned," 177; forbidden to emigrate, 177; enormities suffered by them, 178;

- their steadiness under suffering, 179; multitudes emigrate, 179; to New England, New York, especially to South Carolina, 180; whole number of emigrants, half a million, 180; sufferings of Judith Monigault, 180; descendants of Huguenots, their services, 182; in South Carolina enfranchised, iii. 14, 17.
- Humanity of American officers and soldiers, x. 340, 362, 364; of Sir Guy Carleton, 363; of General Leslie, 365.
- Human race, unity of the, iv. 5, 6; progress everywhere manifest, 8, 9.
- Human sacrifices offered by Indians, iii. 289.
- Hume, David, his tribute to the memory of the Puritans, i. 291; the correspondent of Franklin, iv. 368; character of his mind and of his history, viii. 173; his sentiments touching the American controversy, 173; his philosophy, 366; advises England to give up the war with America, ix. 74.
- Humphrey, John, one of the patentees of Massachusetts, i. 340; remains in England, 355; defends the colony, 405.
- Humphreys, John, lieutenant in Morgan's rifle company, viii. 63; joins the expedition against Quebec, 191; taken prisoner there, 210.
- Hundred Associates, The, obtain a grant of New France, iii. 119; they resign the province to the king, 143.
- Hunt, Robert, i. 118; his eminent services to the colony of Virginia, 125.
- Hunter, James, general of the regulators of North Carolina, vi. 394, 395, proscribed by Tryon, 396.
- Hunter, Robert, Governor of New York, iii. 64; his contest with the assembly, 64, 65.
- Huntington, Jedediah, colonel of a Connecticut regiment on Long Island, ix. 88; at Danbury, Conn., 346.
- Huron-Iroquois. (See *Wyandots*.)
- Hurons visited by Champlain, i. 29; Jesuit mission among them, iii. 122, *et seq.* (see *Missions*); exterminated by the Iroquois, 138-140; some of them incorporated with their conquerors, 142, 177, 244; peace made with them, 211.
- Husbands, Herman, of Orange County, North Carolina, his advice to an oppressed people, vi. 35; is arrested, 183; is insulted and harassed, 188; representative of Orange in the Assembly, 382; is expelled without good cause, and kept in prison, 383; bail refused him, 383; a price set on his head, 396.
- Huske, Ellis (son of Ellis Huske, of Portsmouth, N. H., educated at Boston), v. 170; advised the stamp tax, 170; betrayed his native land, 170, 171; his speech in Parliament, 170, *note*; wishes for delay, 183, 188.
- Huske, John, his letter quoted, v. 179, *note*.
- Hutcheson, Francis, a British writer, asserts the right of America to independence, iv. 181.
- Hutchinson, Ann, the leader of the Antinomians, in Massachusetts, i. 383; exiled, 391; her opinions compared with those of Descartes, 391; goes to Rhode Island, 393; removes to the Dutch territory, 394; she and her family slain by Indians, 394, ii. 220.
- Hutchinson, Thomas, his inaccuracy, i. 443, *note*; at Albany, iv. 27; his character, 27, 28; sordid, selfish, unprincipled, 23; advises the coercion of the colonies, 29, 32; proposes the displacement of the paper currency by coin, 51; drafts a pusillanimous state paper, 269; appointed chief-justice of Massachusetts, 379; as such heard arguments on the question of granting writs of assistance, 414; his subserviency to the British ministry, 418, 429; holds too many offices, 431; threatens in his posthumous history to take vengeance on those who opposed him, 449; elected agent in London for Massachusetts, v. 176; is excused, 176; remonstrates against parliamentary taxation of the colonies, 205, *et seq.*; utterly denies the right, 206; his pusillanimity, 209; his history published, 228; its great merit, 223; his letters quoted, 248; he defends the stamp act as legally right, and admonishes the people to obey, 272; is baffled in the endeavor to disperse the patriotic movements of the people, 310, 311; universally distrusted, 312; his furniture and papers destroyed, 313; flees to the castle, 314; is compensated for his losses on account of the stamp act, vi. 40; his hypocrisy unmasked, 41; date of the revolt as assigned by him, 41; usurps a seat in council, 50, 70; deceives the liberal statesmen of England, 69; appointed on a committee to settle the boundary with New York, 54, 55; obtains a grant from Massachusetts, 116; wishes troops sent to Boston, 133; fails of an election to the council, 151, 152; a pensioner of England, 152; a falsehood of his, 152; he wishes Samuel Adams "taken off," 192, while admitting his unsullied purity, 192; his treacherous recommendations to the British ministry, 249, 250; recommends "an abridgment of English liberties," 250; his letters quoted, 250; is busy in getting evidence against Samuel Adams, 251; succeeds Bernard as governor, 303; brief sketch of his previous life and character, 303, *et seq.*; his duplicity, 304; his sympathy with Bernard, 303, 305; a trimmer and time-server, 305; his servility to great men, 305; his complicity with those who sought the utter subversion of colonial liberty, 306, 307 (see *American Letters*); yet wishes to keep in the dark, 307; his sons recreant to freedom, 308; their names recorded as infamous, 311; he advises the ministry to deprive Boston, his native town, of its municipal government, 312, 313; orders a new supply of tea for his sons, 313; is a large importer of it, 329; prorogues the Massachusetts Assembly, 328; his altercation with the merchants about tea, 329, 330; he capitulates, 330; his cringing servility, 330, 331; is despised

and taunted with his old frauds and days of smuggling, 333; insulted by the press, 333; tries to evade the demand for the removal of the troops, 342; is overawed by Samuel Adams, 344, 345; and yields, 346; is governed by the advice of Bernard, and thereby involved in needless difficulties, 358, 359; convenes the legislature at Cambridge, 359; tells a lie about it, 359; overacts his part, 364; delivers up Castle William to the king's troops, 369, 370; flees for safety to the castle, 370; advises the abrogation of the charter of Massachusetts, 372; opposes Franklin, 376; vetoes a tax-bill, because it imposed on the royal commissioners equal burdens with other people, 404; and his thanksgiving proclamation in 1771, 408; his shameful conduct, 409; wishes Americans carried to England for trial and punishment, 251, 373, 419; refuses to answer the inquiries of the town of Boston, 427, 428; ridicules the efforts of the patriots, 431; his secret letters discovered and sent to Massachusetts, 435, 436; challenges the legislature of the province to discuss with him the supreme power of Parliament, 445; answer of the council, 448; answer of the House, 448, 449; the governor foiled at his own weapons by Samuel Adams, 450; disputes with the House on the salaries of the judges, 452; claims that Massachusetts is a feudatory of the crown of England, 453; wishes the ministry to coerce the province, 453, 454; his letters are published far and wide, and prove him to be a consummate villain, 462, *et seq.*; his extreme dejection, 463; ruin of all his prospects, 463; his testimony to the exalted character and controlling influence of Samuel Adams, 469, *note*; his pusillanimity, 476; orders the great meeting at the Old South Church to disperse, 479; the order received with derision, 479; he finds he can do nothing, 487; address to him on his leaving Massachusetts, vii. 46; he embarks for England, 56; is hurried into the royal presence, and gives false information, which misleads the king, 71; becomes a favorite of the monarch, 72; his confident promises to the ministry, 282; sinks into neglect and insignificance, 342; advises to close the port of Boston, his native city, viii. 127.

Hutchinson, Thomas and Elisha, sons of Governor Hutchinson, importers of tea contrary to the non-importation agreement, vi. 311; violate their agreement, 329; refuse to resign their appointment as consignees of tea, 474.

Hyde, Edward, Earl of Clarendon (see *Clarendon, Earl of*).

Hyde, Edward (Lord Cornbury), governor of North Carolina, iii. 22, 23; of New Jersey, 48.

## I.

Iberville, Lemoine d', dispossesses the English of their ports in Hudson's Bay, iii. 179, 180; takes part in the attack on Schenectady, 182; captures Pemaquid, 189; victorious again in Hudson's Bay, 199; leads a colony to the lower Mississippi, 200; builds a fort on its bank, 203; his death, 205; state of Louisiana at his death, 205.

Icelandic voyages to North America, i. 5; the story discredited, 5, iii. 313.

Illicit trade practised, iv. 85, 147, 376, 377; on the coast of Spanish America, x. 48.

Illinois country, French officers in, v. 118; passes into the hands of the English, 336; the Indians threaten war, but are pacified, 337; white and black population of the valley of the Illinois, 338; plan for colonizing it, vi. 32, *et seq.*; to be the home of the free, 33; its scanty population in 1768, 223; the Indians there mostly exterminated, 297, 298; the settlers oppressed by the British government, 411; they set up a government of their own, 412; they persist in the affair notwithstanding the frown of the British government, 471, 472; their indignant protest, 472; infested by the Iroquois, iii. 151; visited by Jesuits, 155; traversed by Marquette and Joliet, 161; and by La Salle, 165, 167; held by the French, 177, 195; missions there, 195, 196; first permanent settlement, 195.

Illinois river, military operations thereon, x. 198, *et seq.*; that country permanently secured to the United States, and how, 202.

Illinois tribe of Indians, iii. 146, 165, 177, 241.

Impartiality in history, how to be maintained, viii. 119; always wins sympathy and belief, 120; with regard to men and States, 120; British writers have failed in it with regard to America, and why, 120, 121; haughtiness their prevalent error, 121; why Americans can more easily be impartial, 121; citizens of a republic less likely to speak ill of princes than men of rank, and why, 122; Americans discriminate between the English people and a transient ministry, 122.

Importation of British goods decided against, vi. 98, 103, 150 (see *Non-importation*).

Importations from England into the colonies, great increase of, v. 429; merchants of New York resolve to discontinue them, 351, 352.

Improvement the universal desire, iv. 10; its successive steps, 11.

Incarnation, Mary of the, iii. 127.

Independence, Fort (see *Fort Independence*).

Independence, legislative, claimed by the colonies, iv. 3, *et seq.*; tendency to independence in 1748, 25; the opening scene in the struggle for independence, 35; right of America to independence, 181; principles of independence disavowed, 269; Governor



Pownall predicts independence, 297, 369; Pratt (Lord Camden) predicts it, 389; Thomas Hollis predicts it, 450; the independence of the British colonies a matter of course on the cession of Canada, 460, 461; in prospect, v. 193, 194; broadly hinted at, 289; the desire for it disavowed, vi. 73; but foreseen by discerning men, 26, 67, 84, 95; Samuel Adams distinctly aims at it, 192, 253, 449, 469; French statesmen foresee it, 214; the prospect brightens, 464; Samuel Adams the first person that openly declared for independence, 469, *note*; increasing spirit of, 505, 506; the independence of America advocated by Josiah Tucker and John Cartwright, 514-516; the idea disclaimed, vii. 82; foreshadowed, 84; foreseen by Vergennes, 90; not yet desired, 138, 150; the idea scarcely entertained till the battle of Lexington and Concord, 301; becomes the desire of some leading men, but cannot immediately be declared, 354; the desire for it disclaimed by the provincial Congress of New York, 392; independence declared by the county of Mecklenburg, North Carolina, 372, 373; virtually included in the plan of confederation proposed by Franklin, viii. 54; proposed by James Warren of Massachusetts, 136; Joseph Hawley sees in independence the only solution of existing difficulties, 136; George III. of England the real author of American independence, 175; Washington's mind fully made up for independence, 235; opinion of Greene, 235; change of popular opinion in favor of it, 236; Paine's pamphlet "Common Sense," 236-241; the pamphlet opportune and widely circulated, 242; moderate men opposed to independence, 242, *et seq.*; New Hampshire hesitates, Portsmouth in particular, 243; yet progress was continually made toward independence; it came of necessity, 247; sprang from the people, was the dictate of common sense, 248; a virtual declaration of independence, 323; North Carolina the first colony to vote an explicit sanction to independence, 352; Virginia convention instructs its delegates in Congress to propose a declaration of independence, 378; resolutions for independence moved and seconded in Congress, 389; independence not sudden; it had been amply discussed, 434; the colonies had severally instructed their delegates on the subject, 449; Congress declares the United Colonies to be Free and Independent States, 459; state of the vote, 459; its immediate effects, ix. 31; proclaimed to the army, 34; the act of the people, 37; its aspect on the nations of Europe, 37; the declaration signed by every member of Congress, 41; first celebration of the declaration, 357; of the United States, decided in part by the sympathies of foreign powers, x. 36; many true friends of liberty in England reluctant to grant it, 40; French statesmen averse to

it, 42; Spain averse to it, 50, 157, *et seq.*, 164, 181, *et seq.*, 190; Denmark disinclined, also Austria, 53, 56; Holland desires it, 60; warm sympathy for the American cause entertained by Frederic of Prussia, 102, 106, 114, 115; the spirit of independence remains firm in America, 177, 506; France insists on American independence, 189; Fox, Powuall, Conway, Barrington, and other British statesmen favor it, 142, 143, 246; Congress insists on independence, 214, 220; acknowledged by France, 117; by Holland, 527; by Spain, 527; independence steadily conceded by England, 546, 547, 553, 557, 560, 576, 578; formally acknowledged by treaty, 591.

Independence, Mount (see *Mount Independence*).

Independents, to be distinguished from the Puritans, i. 283; cruelly persecuted, 290; many went into exile, 290; party of the Independents in England, ii. 9, *et seq.*; represented by Vane and Cromwell, 11; sustained by the army, 12; army seizes the king, 14.

Indiana, its settlement begun, iii. 346.

Indian mission and village at Ogdensburg, iv. 31; Indians in Nova Scotia, 47.

Indians carried off as slaves, i. 16, 36, 54; harsh treatment of, 45, 47-50; Indians in Virginia, 179; their inconsiderable numbers, 180; their ignorance and simplicity, 181; are taught the use of fire-arms, 181; massacre the whites, 182; a second massacre, 208; disappear from the soil, but their memory remains in the names of rivers and mountains, 209; friendly relations with the colony of Massachusetts, 363; Pequod war, 398-402; Pequods reduced to slavery, 402; number of Indians in 1675, ii. 93; efforts of Eliot to christianize the Indians, 94; of Mayhew, son and father, 97; inquisitive spirit of the Indians, 95, 96; the Bible in the Indian language, 95; the "praying Indians," 97; Indian war of 1675, its causes, 98, 99; jealousy of Philip, 100; commencement of the war accidental, 100; the colonists surprised and appalled, 101; prognostics of the conflict, 102; horrors of the war, 103; "great swamp fight," 105; distress of the Indians, 105; of the colonists, 106, 107, 109; losses sustained by the colonists, 109; Indian war in Virginia, 215, 216; Indian war against the Dutch in New Netherland, 288, *et seq.*; Indian ravages, 290; peace restored, 293; friendly relations between the Quakers and Indians, 353; the Iroquois, or Five Nations, 415 (see *Iroquois*); missions prosecuted by the Jesuits among the Indians (see *Missions*); instances of Indian ferocity, iii. 134, 137-141, 145, 179, 180, *et seq.*; cannibalism of the Indians, 134, 145; cruelties of the Indians at Deerfield and Haverhill, 212-216; bounty offered for Indian scalps, 217; estimated Indian population, 253; Indian languages, 254, *et seq.* (see *Languages*); the ancestors of the Indians must have



been like themselves, 265; manners and customs, 266; Indian habitations, 266; marriage, its limitations, 267; how contracted, 267; existence of polygamy, 267; divorce permitted, 267; childbirth easy and speedy, 268; love of mothers for their children, 268; children, how treated, 269; how educated, 269, 270; employments of the men, 270; of the women, 270; the Indian's wife his slave, 271; the calendar of the Indian, 271; lives by the chase, 271; and on maize, 272; Indian hospitality, 272; indulgence at festivals, 272; suffering from famine, 273; treatment of the sick and the aged, 273; clothing of the Indian, 273, 274; ornaments, 274; political institutions, absence of law, 275; every man his own protector, 275; revenge frequent and severe, 276; the family, 276; the tribe a union of families, 276, 277; succession of chiefs, how determined, 277; the authority of the chief, how limited, 277; councils, how conducted, 279; the calmest of peace, 280; war the Indian's delight, 280; how conducted, 282; captives, how treated, 283; scenes of unutterable horror, 284; cannibalism, 284; religion, no conception of a supreme, spiritual, self-existent Deity, 285; every mysterious influence deified, 286; worship never paid to living or deceased men, 287; but spirits are everywhere, 287; the Manitou, 287, 288; sacrifices offered, 288, 289; human sacrifices, 289; gifts of tobacco, 289, 290; Indian penances, 290; vows of chastity, 290; Indian fasts, 291; atonement for sin, 291; guardian angels, 291; the medicine man, 291; faith in his power, 292; no sacred days or places, 293; faith in dreams, 294; belief in a future state, 295; provision made for the departed, 295; the world of shades, sometimes visited by the living, 296; the sitting posture in burial, 297; animals believed to be immortal, 298; the Indian paradise, 299; bones of the dead collected by the Hurons, 299; veneration for the dead, 299; in natural endowments the Indians like other people, 300, 301; but deficient in imagination, the reasoning faculty, and the moral qualities, 302; there is an inflexibility of character which has resisted the efforts of benevolence for their improvement, 303, 304; peculiar physiognomy and bodily organization, 305; yet improvement has begun among the Cherokees and other south-western tribes, 306; the origin of the American Indian cannot be made out from the mounds of the west, 307; nor from tradition, 309; nor from analogies of language, 310; nor from similarity of customs, 311, 312; nor from the knowledge of astronomy, 314; neither Israelites, 311, nor Carthaginians, 312, nor Chinese, 313, were the ancestors of our Indians; resemblance of the American and Mongolian races, 317; in the Congress at Albany, iv. 28, 88, 122; Indians of the Ohio valley friendly to the English, 41;

protest against the claims of France, 43; Indians in Nova Scotia protest against the English claim, 47; Indians beyond the Alleghanies receive Girt, 77; their jealousy of the English, 93, 94; friendly to the English, 96, 97; protest against French occupation of Ohio, 107, 109; Mingo Indians attack the French, 118; Indians make war on the English, 169; defeat the army of Braddock, 188, *et seq.*; southern Indians friendly to the English, 193; northern Indians join with the French, 202, 210; ravages of Indians in Virginia, 224; they drive the white people wholly out of the western valley, 224; while the Six Nations are in general neutral, the Oneidas take part with the French, 259 (see *Cherokees*); their inroads and horrid barbarities, 137; praised for this by Lord Germain, secretary of war, 138; British treasury provides their scalping-knives, 152; Indian massacre at Wyoming and Cherry Valley, 137, 152; again employed by British agents, 195, *et seq.*; Tryon, William Franklin, and other refugees advise their employment, 222; congress of, at Fort Stanwix, vi. 227 (see *Cherokees*); British governors threaten to employ them against the colonists, vii. 117; they have full authority to employ them, 118; Chat-ham and Burke protest against the measure, 118; the horrors of Indian warfare described, 129; murders perpetrated by them, 164; the backwood-men take revenge, 165; great battle with the Indians in West Virginia, 168, 169; the king and ministry give orders to Gage to employ them against the Americans, 222; measures taken to avert their hostility, 279, 280; George III. specially desirous to rouse them against the colonists, 349; no English precedents for employing Indians in war, 118; a few of the Stockbridge tribe in the American army, viii. 43; British authorities excite the savages to war against the colonies, 55, 88; they join Carleton and forsake him, 186; he will not allow them to ravage the frontier, 186; Indians not employed by the American authorities, 418; an Indian council, 418; they agree to remain neutral, 419; Indians under Foster attack the fort at the Cedars, 427; their savage cruelty to prisoners, 427; promise of their aid against the Americans, ix. 151; Indian war in the mountains of Carolina and Georgia, 159, *et seq.*; the Indians totally defeated, 161, 162; the king gives peremptory orders to employ savages, 321; Sir William Howe never encouraged the employment of savages, 350; Burgoyne's speech to a congress of savages, 363, 364; the reply, 364; his regulation about scalping, 364; murder of Jane McCrea, 371; Burgoyne's opinion of the Indians, 371; yet resolves to employ them, 371; the king and Germain bent on employing them, 376; a large Indian force accompanies St. Leger

- against fort Stanwix, 377; they waylay General Herkimer, 378; a terrible conflict, 379; they are repulsed with severe loss, 379; torture and kill their captives, 379; cannibalism, 380, *note*; Indians cannot be controlled, 381; description of them by a Brunswick officer, 382; Indians sent in Baum's expedition, 383; to be employed against the revolted colonies, x. 123, 151, 284.
- Indians of the South, peace made with them, v. 167.
- Indians of the West, uneasy at the presence of the English in 1763, v. 111; conspiracy formed for their expulsion, 111; the tribes engaged in it, 112; the forts taken by them, 118, *et seq.*; ravages committed, 123; end of the war, 164; treaty of peace, 211; Indians of Illinois and Missouri threaten war, 333, 337.
- Indies, East, war in, iii. 452.
- Indiscretion of Howe, 121; of Sullivan, 148.
- Individual right as opposed to the supremacy of Parliament, 39.
- Industry may follow the bent of its own genius, iv. 13; of Ireland repressed by law, v. 73; and of America, 266, 287, 288.
- Influence of American ideas on Europe, x. 35.
- Informers tarred and feathered in Boston, vi. 313.
- Ingersoll, Jared, of Connecticut, agent in England for that colony, his interview with Mr. Grenville, v. 230; he reports Barre's great speech, and sends it to America, 241; is a stamp-master, and comes to Boston, 308; roughly handled in his own colony, and compelled to resign, 316-320.
- Ingles's Rebellion, i. 254.
- Inglis, Charles, rector of Trinity Church, New York, a royalist, flatters Dickinson, viii. 324.
- Ingoldsby in New York, iii. 53.
- Inheritances, English law of, excluded from the colonies, iii. 392.
- Inhumanity of British officers and soldiers (see *Barbarity*).
- Inquisition in Spain, ix. 303, 304, 503, 504.
- Insurrection in Virginia, its causes, ii. 216, 218; its leader, Nathaniel Baun, 217; suppressed, 229; its unfortunate results, 233; the truth concerning it long unknown, 233.
- Intelligence, a supreme, governs the material universe, viii. 117.
- Intercolonial correspondence, v. 200.
- International law has become humanized and softened, iv. 13.
- Invasion of England threatened by France, x. 163, 249; of New Jersey by Knyphausen, 372; of Virginia by Cornwallis, 484; by Arnold, 497.
- Iowa early visited by Jesuits, iii. 157.
- Iowa tribe of Indians, visited by Le Sueur, iii. 204.
- Ipswich in Massachusetts, patriotic utterance in response to the Boston circular, vi. 440.
- Iredell, James, of North Carolina, viii. 95.
- Ireland and America treated alike, iv. 439.
- Ireland, contribution from it to relieve the distress of Philip's war, ii. 109; emigrants from, iii. 370; conquest of, by the English oligarchy, v. 61; its Parliament from the first unfairly constituted, 61; severe laws passed, 61, 62; establishment of the Protestant Church by law, 62; bad character of the Protestant clergy of Ireland, 63; no Parliament for twenty-seven years, 63; escheats to the crown and manifold extortions, 64; rebellion of 1641 followed by large forfeitures, 64; sufferings of the people, 65; state of things after the restoration, 65; after the revolution of 1688, 65; proportion, respectively, of the Catholics, of the Anglican churchmen, and of the Presbyterians, 66; Roman Catholics excluded from all places of honor and of power, 67; various other disabilities, 67, 68; laws prohibiting their education and worship, 68, 69; restrictions on their industry, holding land, and keeping arms, 70-72; the Irish treated as a conquered people, 73; rise of the patriot party of Ireland, 74; Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, 64, 75; they too are oppressed and in large numbers emigrate to America, 76, 77; their posterity retain the spirit of liberty, 77.
- Irishman, Lord, opposes in Parliament the treaties with Brunswick and Hesse for troops to be sent to America, viii. 268.
- Iron manufacture in the colonies prohibited, iii. 384; forbidden, iv. 63; indignation thus awakened, 64.
- Iroquois, or Five Nations of Indians, attacked by Champlain, i. 23; treaty with, ii. 255; names of these nations, 415; their political and social condition, 415; wide extent of their power, 416; their wars with the French in Canada, 417; friendly to the Dutch of New Netherland, 311; and to the English of New York, 315, 418; treaty with the English at Albany, 419; specimens of Indian eloquence, 420, 421; the Iroquois a bulwark against the French, 422; a party of chiefs entrapped and made slaves by the French, 423; and restored, 424; the Iroquois secure to New York its northern boundary, 424; their attack on Montreal, 449; hinder the access of the French to Upper Canada, iii. 132; Jogues a prisoner among them, and tortured, 133; human sacrifices, 134; peace with the French, 135; exterminate the Hurons, 138; supplied with fire-arms by the Dutch, 141; their extreme cruelty, 134, 138-141, 145; Jesuit mission among them, 143; renewed hostilities with the French, 145; exterminate the Eries, 146; invade the Illinois region, 151; inspire terror on the banks of the Ohio and Mississippi, 159; attack La Salle's fort on the Illinois, 167; attack the French at Montreal, 179; are claimed as subjects of England, 192; five Iroquois sachems have an interview with Queen Anne, 219; unite in an attempt on Canada, 221; their mili-

- tary strength and political importance, 244; their extensive dominion, 244, 245; estimated population, 253; the Iroquois confederacy cede lands to Virginia, 455, iv. 210, 233; deny their subjection to any European power, 31; in council, addressed by Burgoyne, ix. 362, 363; are inclined to neutrality, 377; roused by Butler, join the expedition of St. Leger, 377; they hastily abandon it, 381.
- Irvine, Colonel, of Pennsylvania, sent to reinforce the army in Canada, viii. 422; in the attack on Three Rivers, 429; a prisoner, 430.
- Irvine, General, of Pennsylvania, wounded and a prisoner, ix. 453.
- Isle aux Noix, in Canada, viii. 181, 182; retreat of the American troops to, 432, 433.
- Italy formerly annexed to Germany, x. 67; the results, 67; indisposed to assist the United States, 54.
- Izard, Ralph, of South Carolina, the unreceived minister to Tuscany, is presented to Louis XVI., ix. 489; his strange conduct, 493.
- J.**
- Jackson, Andrew, in youth, appears in arms against the British, x. 314.
- Jackson, Richard, quoted, v. 89, *note*; an officer of the Exchequer under Grenville, 106; his excellent character, 106; agent for Connecticut, 106; advises Grenville to abandon the idea of taxing America, 155, 181; dissuades him from founding a system of corruption in the colonies, 176; again dissuades Grenville from his plan of taxing America, 230, 231; his speech in Parliament against the stamp-tax, 238; superseded as agent of Massachusetts, vi. 41; his speech against taxing America, 77; another speech, 274.
- Jacobs, George, hanged for witchcraft, iii. 93.
- Jamaica, centre of a smuggling trade, iii. 402; offers its mediation, vii. 189; its friendly interference remembered by Congress, viii. 54; proposed to make it a republic, x. 536.
- James I., King of England, grants a charter for Virginia, i. 120; its provisions, 120-122; makes laws for the colony, 122; makes a gift of arms to the colony, 183; contends with London Virginia Company, 187; his arbitrary proceedings, 187; demands the surrender of the charter, 188; his death, 193; his ample charter to the second Plymouth Company, 272, 273; his contemporaneous reputation, 292; the weakness and vices of his character, 293; his pedantry, 296; insults the Puritans, 296; hates them, 297; his proclamation in reference to the fisheries, 325; grants a patent of Nova Scotia, 332.
- James II., King of Great Britain, sends adherents of Monmouth to Virginia, ii. 250; his character, 405; his friendship for William Penn, 395; patron of the slave-trade, 316; as Duke of York obtains grants of large territories in America, 313, 315, 325; employs Andros as his governor, 403; his instructions to Andros, 406; his cruel treatment of the Scottish covenantors, 411; his commercial cupidity, 413; his arbitrary government, 442, 443; his dethronement, 444; his usurpation, viii. 123.
- James, major of artillery in New York, a braggart, v. 332; his house sacked by the people, 356.
- Jamestown, in Virginia, founded, i. 125; deserted, 140.
- Jasper, William, a sergeant, replaces the flag shot away in the attack on Fort Moultrie, viii. 406; a lieutenant's commission offered him, 414; his heroism, at Savannah, 297.
- Jay, John, wishes not to separate from Britain, vii. 41, 42; his character, 78; his conservatism, 78, 80, 108; a member of the First Continental Congress, 127; wishes to make no change in the constitution, 131; objects to opening the proceedings with prayer, 131; believes in natural rights, 133; advocates the insidious plan of Galloway for retaining America in subjection, 141; a member of the Second Continental Congress, 353; wishes not to oppose the landing of British troops in New York, 358; proposes a second petition to the king, 360, viii. 37; member of a committee of correspondence, 142; his address to the assembly of New Jersey, 214; his prudent policy, 274; averse to separation from Great Britain, 329; his firmness and purity, 439; in the New York Convention, ix. 33, 34; advises to burn the city of New York, and retire to the Highlands, 76; entreats Washington to send aid to Schnyler, 374; first chief-justice of New York, 405; his patriotic charge to the grand jury, 406; will accept of nothing from England short of independence, 498; is willing to give up the Mississippi, x. 183; his course in Congress, 215, 217, 219; appointed envoy to Spain, 221; is hostile to slavery, 358; Franklin sends for him to come to Paris, 540; arrests the negotiations for peace, and why, 558, 560; loses his confidence in Spain, 559; disagrees with Franklin, 560; will not yield to Spain the territory east of the Mississippi, 574, 579; his interview with the Spanish minister, 579; with Oswald, the British negotiator, 580; Jay, Franklin, and Adams meet the British commissioners, 589; the treaty signed, 591.
- Jealousy between the Northern and Southern States, 348; between Clinton and Cornwallis, 506.
- Jefferson, Thomas, his childhood, iv. 136; early prepared for resistance to British aggression, v. 275, 277; his first appearance in public life, vi. 279; proposes a bill for the emancipation of slaves in Virginia,



- 413; one of the committee of correspondence, 455; in the house of burgesses, vii. 53; strongly condemns the Boston port bill, 58; denies the power of Parliament to make laws for America, 107; will no longer accept acts of repeal, 385; drafts the reply of the legislature of Virginia to the proposals of Lord North, 383; enters Congress, viii. 30; his paper adopted by Congress in reply to Lord North's proposal for conciliation, 56; his intrepid spirit, 82; his clear discernment of the issue, 143; writes the Declaration of Independence, 392; writes the preamble to the constitution of Virginia, 436; his sympathetic nature, 462; his character, 463; philosophic cast of his mind, 463; a free-thinker, 463; an idealist, 464; his mastery of details, 464; always prepared, 464; no orator, 464; free from envy, 464; his intimacy with John Adams, 464; not a visionary, 465; the draft of the Declaration wholly his own, 465; criticisms of Congress, 465; his compromise proposed in Congress by Sherman, ix. 55; protests against the assumption of power by Congress, 56; is summoned from the National Congress to assist in forming the constitution of Virginia, 280; the separation of church and state carried by his activity, 278; he is employed to revise the law of descent, 280; consulted respecting the occupation of the Northwest, x. 194; his sentiments on religious freedom, 224, 225; his opinions on slavery, 356; his forebodings, 357; governor of Virginia, 315; organizes a regiment of backwoodsmen, 332; in time of invasion invites the presence of Washington, 500; narrowly escapes capture, 505.
- Jeffries, Sir George, lord chief-justice of England, his severity towards the partisans of Monmouth, ii. 250; this severity sends many emigrants to America, 251.
- Jenkins, a noted smuggler, iii. 436; pretends to have lost his oars, 436.
- Jenkins, John, governor of Carolina, i. 161, 162, *note*.
- Jenkinson, Charles, afterwards Earl of Liverpool, iv. 234, 391; first Earl of Liverpool, v. 79; the father of the stamp act, 89, *note*, 152; becomes secretary of the treasury, 102; his rare talents, 102; his self-control, 103; thinks it absurd to charge England with ambition, iv. 234; proposes new regulations in American trade and new taxes, v. 187, 188; opposes the repeal of the stamp act, 434; is a member of the treasury board in the Bedford administration, vi. 110, 123; engages to assist Thomas Hutchinson and other enemies of Massachusetts, 110; wishes Parliament to disregard the popular voice, 320; procures a pension for Hutchinson, 116; thinks the Americans ought to submit, vii. 218, 243; his mean reply to Burke, 270.
- Jennings, Samuel, his intrepid conduct as speaker of the assembly of New Jersey, iii. 63, 64.
- Jenyns, Soame, becomes a lord of trade, iv. 221; favors colonial taxation, 223; advises the subversion of the charter of Pennsylvania, 230; a member of the board of trade, v. 231; his sophistical arguments for taxing America, 232-234.
- Jervis, John (afterwards Earl of St. Vincent), in the fleet, in the St. Lawrence, under Admiral Saunders, iv. 324.
- Jesuits arrive in "Acadia," and visit the Kennebec river, i. 27; establish themselves in Canada, i. 29, iii. 120; character and general policy of the order, iii. 120; Jesuits in Canada, their character and numbers, 122; college founded by them in Quebec, 125; Brébeuf and Daniel, 122; their sufferings, 124, 128; increase of Jesuit missionaries, 128; extended plans and labors, 128; mission to the Onondagas, 143; visit the Indians beyond Lake Superior, 145; stimulate the Indians to horrid barbarities, 187; their sway of the Indian mind, 222, 224; Jesuit mission not fruitless, 245; expelled from France, vii. 28; had been useful to Spain, x. 49; the order abolished there, 49.
- Jewett, of Lyme, in Connecticut, captain of volunteers, is slain after his surrender, ix. 93.
- Jews in New Netherland, ii. 300.
- Joachim, elector of Brandenburg, embraces Lutheranism in 1539, x. 81.
- Jogues, Isaac, a Jesuit, visits Lake Superior, iii. 131; taken prisoner by the Iroquois, 132; tortured by them, 133; ransomed by the Dutch from Albany, 134; his martyrdom, 137.
- John Sigismund, elector of Brandenburg, becomes a Calvinist, x. 81; becomes Duke of Prussia in 1618, 81.
- Johnson, Guy, royal superintendent of Indian affairs, vii. 279; the king sends a positive order to him to rouse the Six Nations against the Americans, 349; he acts in conformity with these instructions, 365; excites Indian hostility against America, iii. 55.
- Johnson, Isaac, i. 352, 354, 359; dies, 360.
- Johnson, John, and his wife, of Haverhill, slain by Indians, iii. 215.
- Johnson, Lady Arbella, i. 354; dies, 360.
- Johnson, Rev. Samuel, of Connecticut, prays for the subversion of popular liberty in New England, v. 225, 226.
- Johnson, Robert, governor of South Carolina, iii. 329; resists the popular movement, 330.
- Johnson, Samuel, the famous moralist, his ungracious utterance respecting America, vi. 278; the lexicographer, his long struggle with poverty, vii. 257; his antipathy to the Whig party, 258; he sells his pen to a corrupt ministry, 258; his "Taxation no Tyranny," 258; his abuse of Franklin, 259; his vituperations of America, 259; his unsparing ribaldry, 259, 260.
- Johnson, Sir John, defeated by Schuyler, and taken prisoner, viii. 272; breaks his parole,



- 272; stirs up Canadians and Indians against the Americans, 425; leads a party of loyalists against Fort Stanwix, ix. 378.
- Johnson, Sir Nathaniel, governor of South Carolina, iii. 211.
- Johnson, Sir William, iv. 183; commands the army destined for the reduction of Crown Point, 207; arrives at Lake George, 208; is wounded in battle, 211; his army gains the battle, but the victory was not due to him, 212; is made a baronet, 212; his inefficiency, 212; fails of taking Crown Point, 213; at Ticonderoga, with warriors of the Six Nations, 301, 302; at Niagara, with Mohawks, 320; he takes Niagara, 321; engages in a scheme for colonizing the West, vi. 32; negotiates with the Six Nations, 227.
- Johnson, Stephen, minister of Lyme, Conn., denounces the oppressive acts of England, v. 320, 321; his fervent appeal in the "New London Gazette," 353.
- Johnson, William Samuel, agent in England for Connecticut, quoted, vi. 48, 58, 64, 75; present during a violent debate on American affairs, 80; his able defence of the rights of Connecticut during a discussion with Lord Hillsborough, 111-115; his letter to Wedderburn after his return home, 406; an envoy from Connecticut to Gage at Boston, vii. 321.
- Johnston, Colonel, of New Jersey, at the battle of Long Island, ix. 86, 89; is slain, 92.
- Johnston, Samuel, of North Carolina, viii. 95; president of the provincial congress, 96; his moderation, 97.
- Johnstone, George, one of the three commissioners sent by Lord North to America, x. 122; his character, 123, 151; leaves the country, 125.
- Johnstone, governor of West Florida, v. 235.
- "Join or Die," motto of a paper at New York, v. 332.
- Joliet, Louis, discovers the Mississippi river, iii. 155; the Missouri and Ohio, 159.
- Joncaire, lives among the Senecas in Indian style, iii. 341, 344.
- Jones, John Paul, captain in the American navy, ix. 134; takes the "Serapis" and "Countess of Scarborough," x. 271; enters the Texel with his prizes, 272; the captured ships reclaimed by the British, 272; the demand refused by the Dutch authorities, 272.
- Jones, Noble Wimberly, of Georgia, elected speaker in defiance of the governor, vi. 409; with others, obtains possession of the royal magazine, vii. 337.
- Joseph II., emperor of Austria, and his mother, Maria Theresa, how they regard the struggle in America, viii. 391, 392; visits Paris, and why, x. 52, 110; his designs on Bavaria, 105; contrasted with Frederic of Prussia, 244.
- Joseph II., emperor of Germany, as a philosopher and reformer, v. 10, 11; his ill success, 11; visits Paris, ix. 297; he will have no communication with the American commissioners, 297.
- Joseph, William, deputy of Lord Baltimore, in Maryland, his high claims, ii. 244; his defeat, iii. 30.
- Judges appointed by the king, and held office at his pleasure, iv. 428, 441; independence of the judiciary subverted, 427; judges to be paid by colonial assemblies, and not by the king, vi. 452; they are required to refuse to receive salaries from the crown, 507.
- Judiciary of the colonies made dependent on the king, v. 85.
- Judiciary kept distinct from the legislative and executive power, ix. 270; appointment of judges 270; their term of office, 270; no judiciary under the confederation, 445.
- Jumonville, a French officer, killed, iv. 119.

## K.

- Kahokia, population of, in 1768, vi. 223.
- Kalb, attaches himself to the American cause, ix. 285; embarks with Lafayette, 295; arrives at Philadelphia, 389; meets a rude repulse, 389; with Washington at White-marsh, 453; to go with a winter expedition to Canada, 462. (See *De Kalb*.)
- Kalm, Peter, the Swedish traveller in America; his statement of American opinion, iii. 464.
- Kames, Lord (Henry Home), believes a political union of the American colonies impossible, vii. 107.
- Kant, Emanuel, in political science the counterpart of America, ix. 501; his philosophy, x. 87, 88; defends the American cause, 88.
- Kaskaskia, the oldest settlement in the Mississippi Valley, iii. 195, 346; why so named, 346; taken by Clark, x. 196, 199.
- Kaskaskias, population of, in 1768, vi. 223.
- Kaunitz, prime minister of Austria, at first unfriendly to America, x. 53, 245; wishes to have America represented in the peace congress, 449; favors the American cause, 450.
- Keith, George, makes a schism in the Quaker body in Pennsylvania, iii. 36; embraces Episcopacy, 37.
- Keith, Sir William, governor of Pennsylvania, iii. 345; recommends English taxation of the colonies, 383; proposes a stamp duty, iv. 58.
- Kemp's landing in Virginia, viii. 222, 226.
- Kennebec river visited by the French, i. 27; claimed by them, iii. 154; difficulties experienced by Arnold's expedition on its banks, viii. 192.
- Kennedy, Archibald, of New York, urges an annual meeting of commissioners from all the colonies, iv. 91; and a "gentle land tax," 115.
- Kennedy, Joseph, a leading patriot in North Carolina, vii. 373.
- Kennedy, Quintine, of South Carolina, iv. 424.

- Kenon, of North Carolina, joins colonel Moore with a re-enforcement, viii. 285.
- Kent, Benjamin, of Boston, vi. 483.
- Kentucky, not a white man there in 1768; vi. 222; the region explored by Daniel Boone and others, 298, *et seq.*; settled vii. 365; names of the chief settlers, 366; its first assembly, 366; the session opened, 367; spirit of liberty, 368; civil constitution and laws, 368, 369; spirit of piety, 369; and its representative, viii. 108; the wonderful richness of its soil, 108; Virginia bars it out of Congress, 108; a part of Virginia, x. 193; made a county, 194; the bold, brave men of that region, and what they did, 194, *et seq.*
- Keppel, Augustus, admiral, refuses to serve against America, vii. 343; sails in quest of a French fleet, x. 162; he fails, 163; his incapacity, 163.
- Kichline, of Pennsylvania, on Long Island, ix. 86-89.
- Kickapoos, iii. 155, 156, 242.
- Kidd, William, the famous pirate, iii. 60.
- Kieft, William, governor of New Netherland, ii. 283; claims for his country, against Sweden, the region on the Delaware, 287; a massacre of Indians by him, 289; his meanness, 291; perishes in the waves of the Atlantic, 293.
- Kings, the argument of "Common Sense" against them, viii. 236; the greater part have been bad men, 237; they have multiplied civil wars, 237; they are of no good use, 237.
- King's Mountain, battle of, x. 337; forces engaged there, 337; severe action, 338; surrender of the whole British force, 339; effect of the victory, 340.
- Kirk, Sir David, takes Canada, i. 334.
- Kirkland, Moses, of South Carolina, changes sides, viii. 87.
- Kirkland, Samuel, missionary among the Oneida and Mohawk Indians, vii. 280.
- Kittanning, a town of the Delawares, destroyed, iv. 241, 242.
- Klopstock, Frederic Theophilus, a friend to America, x. 90.
- Knowles, Commodore Sir Charles, impresses seamen at Boston, iii. 465; high excitement produced thereby, 466.
- Knowlton, Captain Thomas, of Ashford, leads a detachment of Connecticut troops to Bunker Hill, vii. 408, 414, 419; his gallant conduct, 424, 430; mortally wounded in a skirmish near Manhattanville, ix. 126.
- Knox, Henry, afterwards general and secretary of War, a witness of the Boston massacre, vi. 338, 339, 349; a bookseller of Boston, vii. 326; plans the American works in Roxbury, July, 1775, viii. 43; colonel of artillery, ix. 77; is with Washington in the battle of Trenton, 230.
- Knox, James, a pioneer of settlement in the Cumberland Valley, Tennessee, vi. 380.
- Knox, William, agent for Georgia, quoted, v. 137, 191; defends the stamp tax, 155, 189, 251.
- Knyphausen, Baron, lieutenant-general, commander of Hessian troops, viii. 265; his character, 235; lands at New Rochelle, ix. 178; removes to New York Island, 184; attacks Fort Washington, 190; it surrenders to him, 193; he supersedes Heister, 314; leads a column on the march to Philadelphia, 394; comes to the Brandywine at Chad's Ford, 395; crosses that stream, 398; defeats the American left wing, 398; x. 119, 120, 130; in command at New York, 301, 371; invades New Jersey, 372; fears to attack the Americans, and retires, 373.
- Kosciusko, Thaddeus, enters the American army, ix. 337; his great merit, 337; in South Carolina, x. 459, 490.

## L.

- Laconia, its extent, i. 328; granted to Gorges and Mason, 328.
- La Corne, his violent proceedings in Acadia, iv. 67, *et seq.*
- La Fayette, Gilbert Motier de, became interested in the American cause, vii. 350; resolves to engage in the American struggle, ix. 70; purchases and freights a ship for America, 285; embarks for America in defiance of the order of the king, 296; the women of Paris applaud his heroism, 296; arrives at Philadelphia, 389; is at first repulsed, 389; made a major-general, 389; received into Washington's family, 393; wounded at the battle of Brandywine, 397, 399; Washington's love for him, 400; routs a party of Hessians, 435; appointed to command a winter expedition to Canada, 462; the design relinquished, 463; unsuccessful attempt of Sir William Howe to circumvent and capture him, x. 119, 120; advises an attack on the British army after its evacuation of Philadelphia, 127; the attack committed to him, 128; has no support from Lee, 129; battle of Monmouth, 131; he compels Sullivan to withdraw his censure of the French officers, 148; his address to the people of Canada, 176; visits France, 187; exerts himself there in behalf of the United States, 187; commands in Virginia, 497, *et seq.*; his generous conduct, 498; refuses to correspond with Arnold, 499; retreats before Cornwallis, 504; pursues Cornwallis, 505, 507; amount and quality of his force, 507; never guilty of rashness, 507; his great vigilance and self-possession, 507; his great bravery, 508; his strong hopes of success, 512; welcomes Washington to Virginia, 516; persuades de Grasse to keep within the capes of Virginia, 517; assists in the capture of Cornwallis, 517, *et seq.*; honored in France, 524.
- Lafrénière, a prominent man in the republic of New Orleans, vi. 220, 293; hanged, 295.

- La Galissonière, governor of Canada, iv. 31; sends a colony into the Ohio valley, 43; entices the Acadians to leave English jurisdiction, 44; returns to France, 47; opposes the abandonment of Canada, 72, 73.
- La Harpe, Bernard de, claims the del Norte as the western boundary of Louisiana, iii. 353.
- Lake George, all around is a wilderness, iv. 208; battles near there, 210, 211; gathering of a large force in its vicinity, 238.
- Lakes, country on the, possession taken of it by the English, iv. 361.
- Lallemand, Gabriel, his sufferings and martyrdom, iii. 140.
- La Loutre, Abbé, missionary in Nova Scotia, iv. 44; instigates the Indians against the English colony, 47; sets fire to a church at Chiegnecto, 68.
- Lamb, Captain John, in the Northern Army, his character, viii. 183; takes part in the assault on Quebec, 208.
- Lamb, colonel of artillery, opposes the enemy at Saugatuck, ix. 347; is wounded, 348.
- Lamb, John, a Son of Liberty in New York, v. 425; a leading patriot in New York, vii. 328.
- Land, large grant of, in the Ohio valley, iv. 42, 167.
- Land Bank in Massachusetts, iii. 388, 389; depreciation of the currency, 389.
- Land-tax in England reduced, vi. 59.
- Land-tax proposed, iv. 222.
- Lands, western, speculation in, vi. 32; large cessions of, made by the Indians, 86, 227; lands for the soldiers of the French war, 379; lands granted to a company in England, 421.
- Lane, Ralph, conducts a colony to North Carolina, i. 95; massacre of Indians by him, 100; returns to England, 106.
- Langdon, Samuel, of Portsmouth, his deliverance on colonial rights, vi. 166.
- Langdon, Samuel, president of Harvard College, his prayer on the marching of the detachment for Bunker Hill, vii. 408.
- Language not a human invention, iii. 263; it springs from our very nature and cannot be essentially changed, 264.
- Languages of the American Indians, eight in number, iii. 237; distinctive peculiarities, 254, *et seq.*; free from irregularities, governed by undeviating laws, 254; no writing, knowledge conveyed by hieroglyphics, 256; poor in abstract terms, 256; copious for objects of sense, no spiritual or moral ideas conveyed, 256; synthesis pervades the entire language, 257; no generic terms, 258; no substantive verb, the verb to be always includes place and time, 258; abounds in combinations, often excessive and grotesque, 259; no distinction of gender, but only of animate and inanimate, 260; the verb the dominant part of speech, 261; peculiar use of the pronoun and adjective, 261; relations of time, how expressed, 262; the verb receives almost countless changes, 262, 263; the language, in its internal mechanism, resembles all other languages, 264.
- La Salle, Robert Cavalier de, his early history, iii. 162; obtains the grant of Fort Frontenac, 162; his vast designs, 163; builds the "Griffin," the first vessel on the upper lakes, 164; traverses lakes Erie, Huron, and Michigan, 164; penetrates the Illinois country, 165; intercourse with the Indians, 165; his strength of will, 165, 172; goes on foot fifteen hundred miles back to Fort Frontenac, 166; visits Green Bay, 167; returns to Illinois, 167; descends the Mississippi to its mouth, 168; returns to Quebec and to France, 168; his disastrous voyage in the Gulf of Mexico, 169, 170; lands a colony in Texas, 171; departs for Canada, 172; murdered by one of his men, 173; his great character, 173, 174. "Last Appeal" contemplated, vi. 407.
- Lathrop, Captain Thomas, and his company slaughtered by the Indians, ii. 104.
- Lauderdale, John Maitland, duke of, ii. 410.
- Laurens, Henry, of South Carolina, vii. 336; is opposed to independence, viii. 84, 328; is chosen vice-president of the province, 348; president of Congress, x. 173, 221; advises the arming of slaves, 291; is sent to the Netherlands to negotiate for a loan, 433; taken prisoner and confined to the tower, 433; the ministry dare not bring him to trial, 437; he is liberated from the tower, 536; his interview with Lord Shelburne, 536; goes to Holland, 537; assists in the negotiations at Paris, 589.
- Laurens, John, of South Carolina, son of Henry, his gallant conduct, ix. 426; lieutenant-colonel, assists Washington at Monmouth, x. 129, 132; serves in the Rhode Island campaign, 146, 149; in South Carolina, 292, 293; wishes to raise a regiment of blacks, 291; comes to the defence of Charleston, 292; is sent to France to procure a loan of money, 418; obtains money, but not as a loan, 447; his bravery at Yorktown, 520; in South Carolina, receives a mortal wound, 565; Washington's high encomium on him, 565.
- Laurie, Captain, has a command at the battle of Concord, vii. 298.
- Lauzun, Duke de, repulses Tarleton's legion, x. 518.
- Law, John, iii. 349; his credit system, 350; his theory of money, 350; his vast schemes, 350, 354; his bank, 350; becomes the bank of France, 354; contest between paper and specie, 354; paper made a legal tender, 355; Law becomes a Catholic, 356; and comptroller-general of the currency, 356; results of the frantic scheme, 357.
- Law, what gives it binding force, vi. 97.
- Law-courts of England, v. 47, *et seq.*
- Lawrence, lieutenant-governor of Nova Scotia, iv. 68, 182, 199, 200, 206.
- Laws of Massachusetts, early, i. 417, 418.
- Laws, common consent the only just origin of, iv. 13.



Lawson, a captive among the Tuscaroras, iii. 319; burned to death, 320.

Lead mines in Virginia, vi. 86, 225, 227.

Learned, Brigadier, in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 410, 417.

Le Caron, his early visit to Lake Huron, iii. 118.

Ledyard, John, colonel, murdered by Arnold, x. 500.

Lee, Arthur, proposed as agent in England for Massachusetts, vi. 374; the king wishes to have him arraigned for treason, vii. 58; agent for Massachusetts in England, 342; in London, is desired by Congress to ascertain the disposition of foreign powers, viii. 216; receives a promise of pecuniary aid, 344; commissioner to France, ix. 133; his character, 133; not noticed by Vergennes, 291; on his way to Madrid, 289, 306; stopped at Burgos, 308; his interview with Grimaldi, 308; he is snubbed by Prussia and Austria, 473; his papers stolen, 474; his mischievous intermeddling, 480; he is presented to Louis XVI., 489; envies Franklin, and intrigues to supplant him, 493; his ill success at Berlin, x. 104, 107, 170; his proceedings in France, 261, 262.

Lee, Charles, resolves to devote himself to the cause of American liberty, vi. 460; comes to Boston, vii. 101; his restless spirit, 101; assumes the rank of major-general, 102; opinion entertained of him in England, viii. 26; his true character, 27; his demand of indemnity for renouncing his English half-pay, 28; accompanies Washington to Cambridge, 32, 40; his letter to Burgoyne and Burgoyne's answer, 46; his secret treason, 46; he continues the correspondence, 220; inspects the harbor and fortifications of Newport, 220; his high reputation for military genius, 277, 280, 281; goes to Connecticut, 277; persuades Governor Trumbull to call out two regiments, 278; usurps authority, 278; New York offended by his interference, 278; he enters New York, 279; begs money of the New York Congress, 281; is appointed to the Southern command, 282; his arbitrary conduct in New York, 282; and in Virginia, 354; transcends his proper authority, 354; arrives in the vicinity of Charleston, 396; examines its defences, 396; proposes to abandon Sullivan's Island, 396; doubts whether Sullivan's Island can be held, 400, 401; meditates removing Moultrie from his command, 400, 401; neglects to send him powder, 409; plans the fortifications of New York and Brooklyn, ix. 76; Congress sends for Lee, 113, 159; he demands money of Congress, 158; proposes to attack East Florida, 158; his march into Georgia, 159; loses many of his men by sickness and death, 159; abandons the expedition, 159; goes to the North, 159; is eagerly expected by the army of Washington, 168; his high reputation, 168; yet utterly incompetent as a commander, 168;

his pride as an Englishman, 168; his contempt of Americans, 168; his opposition to independence, 169; his insincerity, 169; his interview with Congress, 169; clamors for a separate army, 169; advises Maryland to submit to Britain, 170; proposes a negotiation with Lord Howe on his own terms, 173; did not originate the evacuation of New York Island 175, *note*, his arrival in Washington's army, 176; attends a council of war, 176; at White Plains blames the place of encampment, 179; is ordered by Washington to join him in New Jersey, 187, 194, 196, 198, 202, 204; disregards those orders, 187, 194, 196, 198, 202, 204; his idleness, 197; his military reputation very high in Congress and among the people, 203; his wild ambition, 203; his intrigues to obtain dictatorial authority, 204, 205; meditates a "virtuous treason," 205; falsifies Washington's letter to him, 204; misrepresents and vilifies Washington, 205, 207, 209; his arrogant letter to Washington, 206; assumes authority in chief, 206; crosses the Hudson, 207; his falsehoods, 208; his self-esteem, 209; his continual disobedience of orders, 208; hopes to reconquer the Jerseys, 208; his slow progress, 208; his spleen against Washington, 209; is surprised and taken prisoner by a party of British, 210; his abject cowardice, 210; treated as a deserter, 211, 215; a letter purporting to be from him to Kennedy not genuine, 211, *note*; Lee beyond doubt a traitor, 211; put under a close guard and sent to New York, 215; Congress and Washington intercede for him, 327; volunteers to bring back the colonies to their old allegiance, 328; his request to Congress, 328; the request refused, 328; the request repeated, 330; and again refused, 330; he presents to Lord and General Howe a plan for reducing the Americans, 330; the plan rejected, 331; the opinion entertained of him in Europe, 331; his hypocrisy and treason, 331; his want of veracity, 333, *note*; put on board the "Centurion," 351; plots the ruin of the American cause, x. 127; refuses to attack the retreating British army, 128; battle of Monmouth, 129; the day nearly lost through his treachery, 129; disobeys the orders of Washington, 129; his false representations, 130; his inactivity, — does nothing, 131; Washington's anger at this, 131; his disrespect to Washington, 130, 133; is tried by a court-martial and suspended, 134; his inglorious end, 134.

Lee, Francis, of Virginia, elected to Congress, viii. 81.

Lee, Henry, major, takes Paulus Hook, x. 220, 230; lieutenant-colonel, with his legion, sent to South Carolina, 457, 477; his successful operations there, 485, 489.

Lee, Richard Henry, of Virginia, his speech against negro slavery, ix. 422; an eloquent advocate for freedom, vi. 445, 455, vii. 52; compared to Cicero, 85; a member of the



- First Continental Congress, 127; his conciliatory speech, 130; believes in natural rights, 132; sustains the Fairfax resolutions, 275; a member of the Second Continental Congress, 353; delegate of Virginia in Congress, in favor of disowning the authority of the king, viii. 320; in favor of independence, 367; introduces resolutions for independence, 389; assists in framing the constitution of Virginia, 436, ix. 59, 207; his confidence in Washington, 256; in Congress sides with the New England States on the question of the fisheries, x. 215; proposes to send a body of troops to the succor of South Carolina, 315; proposes to invest Washington with supreme power, 500.
- Lee, William, brother of Arthur, "the unreceived minister to Prussia," ix. 489; is repulsed at Berlin, and why, x. 240; is dismissed from office, 241, 253.
- Legge, William, afterwards Earl of Dartmouth, chancellor of the exchequer under Newcastle, retires from office, iv. 220; chancellor under Pitt, 248; dismissed from office, 250; London and other cities vote him their freedom, 272; the king dismisses him from office, 390.
- Legislative power, how exercised, ix. 265, 266; two legislative bodies in every state but two, 266.
- Legislature, necessity of two branches in it, viii. 371.
- Leibnitz, Godfrey William, foretells a general overturn in Europe, viii. 364.
- Leicester, in Massachusetts, its patriotic utterances, vi. 442, 483.
- Leicester House, a name for the partisans of George III. before he became king, iv. 162, 245, 275.
- Leisler, Jacob, assumes the government of New York, with the assent of the humbler classes, but opposed by the aristocracy, iii. 51; takes possession of the fort, 51; refuses possession to Ingoldsby, 53; his arrest, trial, and execution, 54, 55; has the sympathy of the people, 55.
- Leitch, Major, from Virginia, slain in a skirmish on New York Island, ix. 126-128.
- Lemoine, Charles, iii. 179. (See *Iberville*.)
- Le Moynes, a Jesuit missionary to the Onondagas, iii. 142; and Mohawks, 145.
- Lenni Lenape Indians, their location, iii. 239; Penn's treaty with them, ii. 381, 382.
- Lenox, in Massachusetts, their patriotic response to the Boston circular, vi. 442.
- Leo III., pope, claims superiority over all temporal power, x. 65.
- Leon, Juan Ponce de, his early history, i. 31, *et seq.*; discovers Florida, 33; mortally wounded, 34.
- Leonard, Daniel, of Taunton, in Mass., a member of a committee appointed by the House of Representatives, vii. 62; deceives himself, and also the governor, in regard to the spirit of the province, 62; his letters signed "Massachusettensis," published in Draper's paper in Boston, recommend submission to the arbitrary acts of the British Parliament, 231, 232; they are ably answered by John Adams, 232-238.
- Leslie, Colonel, his expedition to Salem, vii. 252; his attack on the Great Bridge near Norfolk, viii. 227; retreats to Norfolk, 238.
- Leslie, General, his movement, ix. 126; at Maidenhead, in New Jersey, 244, 250.
- Le Sueur explores the Northwest, iii. 204; succors the French settlement at Natchez, 363.
- Leuthen, great battle of, gained by Frederic II., 238, 239.
- Leverett, John, agent of Massachusetts in England, ii. 72.
- Levi, De, assists in the capture of Fort William Henry, iv. 262, 263, 265; assists in the defence of Ticonderoga, 302, 303; at Ogdensburgh, 322; attempts to retake Quebec, 358; his failure, 359.
- Lewis, Andrew, of Virginia, commands at the battle of Point Pleasant, vii. 168; his ill conduct, 169; elected brigadier-general, viii. 317; resigns, 318.
- Lewis, Charles, brother of the preceding, killed in the battle of Point Pleasant, vii. 168.
- Lewis, of the New York provincial congress, viii. 430.
- Lewisburg, the men of South-West Virginia, assemble there in arms, vii. 167; their battle with the Indians, 168, 169.
- Lexington, its people resolve to drink no more tea, vi. 237; Gage sends an expedition to that place and to Concord, vii. 288 (see *Concord*); population in 1775, 291; spirit of the townsmen, 288; they appear in arms at the approach of the British, 288; they are fired on by the troops at the command of Pitcairn, 293; seven men of Lexington slain, and one of Woburn, 294; names of the victims, 293, 294; the Lexington company join in the pursuit of the British, 305; the consequences, a general rising of the people, 310, 312, *et seq.*; the news received in London, and the effect in Europe, 342, *et seq.*
- Liberal party, a new one in England, x. 39.
- Liberties of America protected by Pitt, iv. 249, 250.
- Liberty, progress of, in Europe, vi. 29, 83, 90; held to be the inherent right of all mankind, 97; stagnant in Europe, 527; camp of, near Boston, vii. 321, *et seq.*; Dr. Richard Price's able pamphlet on, viii. 361, 362.
- "Liberty," sloop, her cruise on Lake Champlain, 364.
- "Liberty of prophesying," what, i. 284; demanded by the Puritans, 284; severely punished, 286, 289.
- Liberty of the press infringed in Boston, iii. 375, 376; infringed in New York, 393; vindicated, 394; defended by Franklin, 395.
- Liberty-tree in Boston, v. 310; Oliver hung there in effigy, 310; splendid scene there after the repeal of the stamp act, 453; public meeting there, vi. 473.

- Lillie, Theophilus, a grocer in Boston, sells contrary to the agreement, vi. 333; blood shed in consequence, 334.
- Lillington, of Wilmington, North Carolina, brings a re-enforcement to Colonel Moore, viii. 285; joins General Caswell, 287.
- Lincoln, General Benjamin, at Boundbrook, New Jersey, ix. 346; is sent to the aid of the northern army, 374; at Manchester, Vermont, 408; arrives in the camp of Gates, 414; does not appear on the field of battle, 418; his character, x. 287; takes command in South Carolina, 287; his operations there, 289, *et seq.*; besieges Savannah and fails, 296; retreats to Charleston, 298; sustains a siege there, 302; amount of his force, 302; his measures for the defence of the city, 303; his indecision, 304; he surrenders, 305.
- Lincoln minute men at Concord, vii. 298; pursuit of the British through this town, 305.
- Linzee, captain of the "Falcon," beaten off from Gloucester, viii. 65.
- Lippincott, Captain, a murderer, x. 562.
- Lisle, his patriotism, x. 313.
- Literature of England, v. 44, 45.
- Little, Colonel Moses, a portion of his regiment are in Bunker Hill battle, vii. 418.
- Livingston, Colonel James, of New York, assisted by Major Brown, captures Chambly, viii. 186; is sent to watch Maclean approaching from Quebec, 187; joins in the attack on Quebec, 206.
- Livingston, Henry, colonel of a New York regiment, ix. 409.
- Livingston, Peter Van Brugh, of New York, vii. 78, 80.
- Livingston, Philip, of New York, iv. 371; his patriotic motion, vi. 272; loses his election, 272; vii. 79, 108; member of the First Continental Congress, 131; president of the convention of New York, 283.
- Livingston, Philip, of Brooklyn, delegate in Congress from New York, ix. 60; council of war at his house, 102.
- Livingston, Robert, of New York, a stanch patriot, foresees his country's independence, viii. 179; his death, 179.
- Livingston, Robert, grandson of the preceding, opposes in Congress the resolution for independence, viii. 390.
- Livingston, Robert R., viii. 178; Montgomery marries his daughter, 178; one of the committee to prepare a declaration of independence, 392.
- Livingston, Robert R., of Dutchess County, N. Y., iv. 371; his utterances on the news of colonial taxation, v. 198; elected to the Second Continental Congress, vii. 284; present there, 353; Washington's letter to him, x. 419; proposes in Congress resolutions on maritime rights, 428; administers for Congress the department of foreign affairs, 501.
- Livingston, William, iv. 371; a popular lawyer, 429; of New York, one of the patriotic triumvirate of lawyers, vi. 141, and *note*; his impassioned appeal, 141.
- Livingston, William, of New Jersey, chosen delegate to the general Congress, vii. 83; present there, 131; in Congress, viii. 315, 328; his sympathy for Washington, ix. 198; governor, of New Jersey, is hostile to slavery, x. 358.
- Livingston family in New York, vii. 76.
- Lloyd, David, a political scold, iii. 38, 44.
- Lloyd, Thomas, a Quaker preacher, president of the council in Pennsylvania, iii. 35.
- Loan from France obtained, x. 446; absolutely necessary, 446; wrong use made of this loan, 447.
- Locke, John, his character, ii. 144; frames a constitution for Carolina, 145; landgrave of Carolina, 168; his constitution abrogated, iii. 15.
- Logan, James, secretary of Pennsylvania, calls the attention of the British government to the encroachments of the French, iii. 345; his character of Franklin, 377; complains of the rising spirit of liberty, 394, 395.
- Logan (*Tah-gah-jute*), a chief of the Cayugas, but leading the Shawanese, the friend of the white man, some of his kindred slain, vii. 165; he determines on revenge, 166; his earlier history, 166; he takes revenge, 166; his celebrated speech, not spoken, however, 170.
- London intercedes for America, vii. 232; the king frowns on the attempt, 282; address to the corporation of London from New York, 330; sorrow in London on hearing of the slaughter at Lexington and Concord, 343; address of the citizens to the king, 346; address of Congress to, viii. 39.
- London Virginia Company, the, chartered, i. 120; the charter revoked, 192.
- Long Island, the inhabitants disinclined to the cause of liberty, viii. 274; disarming of the Tories there, 276; battle of, ix. 82-96; landing of the British and Hessian troops, 83; their numbers and equipment, 85; American force, its amount, 86; their positions, 86; the Americans defeated with great loss, 92-94; British loss, 95; American loss, 95; sufferings of the American troops, 97, 98, 101; they retreat without further loss, 103, 104; erroneous account of the retreat, 105; the errors corrected, 106, 107; the retreat Washington's own measure, the design and proposal originated with him, 107.
- Lords of trade, what, iv. 17; their powers, 18; could advise, but not execute, 18.
- Loudoun, Earl of, made commander-in-chief, "viceroy," and governor of Virginia, iv. 228; clothed with despotic power, 229; his cruel treatment of Acadians, 206; his slackness, 237; his cowardice, 240; demands free quarters for his troops in New York, 240; his rude language to the mayor, 240; and in Philadelphia, 241; impresses four hundred men at New York, 256; sails

- for Halifax, 257; has a large army there, 258; accomplishes nothing, and returns to New York, 258; stays there doing nothing, 267; attempts to overawe the continent, 268; is recalled, 290.
- Louis XIV. of France, governed by Madame de Maintenon, ii. 175; revokes the edict of Nantz, 177; an absolute monarch, iii. 115; claims a large part of North America, 118; his bounty to a French colony, 171, 199; takes up arms in behalf of James II., 175; encourages the slave-trade, 187; his humiliation, 225; his last days, 323.
- Louis XV., of France, disclaims hostile intentions, iv. 90, 177; exasperated against England, 218; his licentiousness and profligacy, 280; his cordial understanding with George III., vi. 422; his arrogant spirit, 422; his oppressive rule, 423; his licentious course of life, 423; his arbitrary rule, vii. 30; his enslavement to pleasure, 30; courts the friendship of George III., 30; Madame de Pompadour rules, 30.
- Louis XVI. of France, ascends the throne, vii. 32; joy at his accession, 32; holds that the king alone should reign, 33; his character, 86; his choice of ministers determined by his aunts, 87; sends an emissary to America, 352; has confused ideas about the American struggle, and can come to no decision, viii. 329; his sluggish disposition, ix. 69; not ready for war with England, 69; has no sympathy with America, 233; his weakness, 294, 295; determines to acknowledge and support American independence, 480; he receives the American commissioners, 489; his peevishness, 490; a mere child, x. 45; his limited understanding, 46; his weakness, 445.
- Louisburg, fortified, iii. 235; capture of, by New England troops, 457, *et seq.*; strength of the fortifications, 459; the surrender, 462; expedition to, in 1758, iv. 294; the troops land, 295; the garrison surrenders, 296; the town is deserted, 296.
- Louisiana, colonized by the French, iii. 202; insalubrity of the climate, 204; the colonists isolated and unhappy, 206; its extent as claimed by the French, 343, 347; the colony not prosperous, 348; the Mississippi scheme, 349; tales of the wealth of Louisiana, 351; arrival of a colony from France, 352; the Del Norte the western boundary, 353; when half a century had elapsed, still a wilderness, 369; surrendered to Spain, v. 193; a republic installed there, vi. 219; the Spanish government expelled, 220; Spain resolves to repossess it, 261; French statesmen desire that it may be free, and the reason why, 263; is conquered by Spain, and the inhabitants treated with great cruelty, 292, *et seq.*
- Lovelace, Colonel, governor of New York, his arbitrary conduct, ii. 321, iii. 64.
- Lovell, delegate from Massachusetts, praises Gates and disparages Washington, ix. 456; his abusive language, 457.
- Low, Isaac, of New York, vii. 43; a Tory at heart, yet elected to Congress, 79; not re-elected, 283.
- Lowell, John, of Boston, an able lawyer and zealous abolitionist, x. 361.
- Lowndes, Rawlins, of South Carolina, elected speaker of their assembly, vi. 447; his noble conduct as a magistrate, 471; defeats the design of arresting the royal governor, viii. 89; in favor of delay in instituting government, 347, x. 154; superseded as governor of South Carolina, 288; his cowardly behavior, 330.
- Loyal addresses from England received by the ministry, viii. 145.
- Loyalists in North Carolina, their military operations, viii. 284-288; their defeat, 289; of Boston recommend unqualified submission, vii. 69; their spirit as interpreted by Daniel Leonard, 231; they induce Gage to detain the loyal people as hostages, 321.
- Loyalists, American, nothing can be done for them, and why, x. 555, 580, 586.
- Loyalty to England disappears from the American heart, and why, x. 140.
- Ludwell, Philip, sent as governor to restore order in South Carolina, iii. 14; but in vain, 14.
- Luther, Martin, influences all Europe, i. 266; discountenanced harsh proceedings, 274; contrasted with Calvin, 277, 278; his counsel to the peasants of Suabia, 298; brought to light truths which elevated and ennobled humanity, iv. 151, 152; his teachings and their effect, x. 75; he justified slavery, 346.
- Lutheranism, its wide extent, x. 79, *et seq.*
- Luttrell, the seat of Wilkes in Parliament given to him, vi. 275.
- Luttrell, Henry Temple, replies to Burgoyne in the House of Commons, vii. 246.
- Lygonia, or the plough patent, i. 336; purchased by Rigby, 429; absorbed by Massachusetts, 430.
- Lyman, Phinehas, of Connecticut, major-general of New England troops, iv. 207.
- Lynch, Thomas, of South Carolina, vi. 386; a member of the first continental congress, vii. 81, 127, 129; one of a committee of Congress to visit the camp at Cambridge, viii. 111; opposed to independence, 244; member of a committee sent to New York, 279; on slavery, ix. 52.
- Lyttleton, George, lord, of the treasury board, iv. 54, 160, 163; chancellor of the exchequer, 179, 231; speaks in Parliament in favor of taxing America, v. 402; his speech in the House of Commons against the Americans, viii. 161.
- Lyttleton, Richard, brother of the preceding, governor of South Carolina, iv. 179, 243; his overbearing conduct, 270, 340; provokes a war with the Cherokees, 340, 342; hinders supplies from being sent to them, 344; the assembly and council oppose his measures, 345, 347; his perfidy, 345, 347; he invades the Cherokee country, 348; his unreasonable demands, 349; is transferred to the government of Jamaica, 351; advises colonial taxation, 380.



- Lyttleton, Lord Thomas, reproaches Chat-  
ham, and speaks against the Americans,  
vii. 202.
- McArthur, Neil, a Highlander of North Caro-  
lina, viii. 284.
- Macaulay's opinion of Lord North, x. 531.
- Maceall, Major, of Georgia, joins Morgan,  
x. 460; makes a successful charge, 461.
- McClary, Andrew, major in Stark's regiment,  
is killed by a chance shot on the day of  
Bunker Hill, vii. 433.
- McCrea, Jane, murder of, ix. 371, 372.
- Macdaniel, killed in the attack on Fort Moul-  
trie, viii. 407.
- Macdonald, Allan and Flora, settlers in  
Kingsborough, North Carolina, viii. 94;  
their character and previous history, 94;  
he takes sides with the royal governor  
against the country, 94; receives a com-  
mission to raise a body of Highlanders,  
283; marches for Wilmington, 284; is de-  
feated and a prisoner, 289.
- Macdonald, Donald, commissioned as briga-  
dier of Highlanders in North Carolina, viii.  
284; marches for Wilmington, 285; his  
message to Colonel Moore, 285; goes to  
encounter Caswell, 286; is defeated and a  
prisoner, 288, 289.
- McDougal, a brave "Son of Liberty" in New  
York, vi. 481; imprisoned for libel, vi. 332,  
365, 385.
- Macdougal, Alexander, a leading patriot at  
New York, vii. 40, 78, 79, 80, 283, 329; in the  
New York assembly, viii. 215; concurs with  
Jay in his prudent policy, 274; at Brooklyn,  
advises a retreat, ix. 102; superintends the  
embarkation, 103; his brigade employed to  
secure Washington's rear, 175; occupies  
Chatterton Hill, 181; is attacked there by  
superior numbers, 181; at Peekskill is  
compelled to burn the magazine, 345; at  
Germantown, 424; does not assist in the  
battle, 427.
- Macdowell, colonel of North Carolina militia,  
forced to retreat beyond the Alleghanies,  
x. 334.
- McGinnes, of New Hampshire, killed, iv.  
212.
- Macheny, Doctor, at Monmouth, x. 131,  
*note*.
- Mackean (see *McKean*).
- McKean, Thomas, delegate to Congress from  
Delaware, viii. 75; is warmly in favor of  
independence, 368, 437; presides at the  
provincial conference, of Pennsylvania,  
445, 446.
- Mackenzie, John, of South Carolina, vi. 386.
- Mackinaw (see *Michilimackinac*).
- Mackinaw, strength of the garrison in Pon-  
tiac's war, v. 121; taken by the Indians,  
122; horrid scenes at the capture, 122.
- Mackintosh, Peter, a blacksmith of Boston,  
leader in the riots there, v. 375.
- Mackintosh, of South Carolina, his advice,  
x. 304.
- Maclean, Alexander, assists Governor Mar-  
tin in stirring up the Highlanders of North  
Carolina, viii. 283.
- Maclean, Allan, of Torloish, Scotland, is sent  
over to North Carolina, vii. 282.
- Maclean, Colonel Allan, in Canada, tries in  
vain to form a junction with Carleton, viii.  
187; retires to Quebec, 187, 196.
- McLellan, of Pennsylvania, lieutenant in  
Arnold's expedition against Quebec, taken  
severely ill on the way, viii. 194; dies,  
195.
- Macleod, Alexander, of the Scottish High-  
landers, in North Carolina, viii. 94.
- Macleod, Donald, of North Carolina, viii.  
284; commands the insurgent Highlanders,  
288; attacks the patriot army, and is mor-  
tally wounded, 289.
- Macpherson, Captain, aid-de-camp of Mont-  
gomery, a young officer of great promise in  
the northern army, viii. 184; slain in the  
assault on Quebec, 208; left not his like  
behind him, 211.
- Maddock's Mill, meeting at, vi. 36.
- Madison, James, his childhood, iv. 136; lieuten-  
ant-colonel, commands a party sent to  
seize the powder of the province, vii. 114;  
in the Virginia convention, viii. 378; pro-  
poses equal religious freedom, 380; favors  
a strong government, x. 424, 502, 571.
- Madison and Hamilton compared, x. 570.
- Magaw, Colonel of a Pennsylvania regiment,  
ix. 98; retreats from Long Island, 103;  
commands at Fort Washington, 179, 184;  
supposes the fort can stand a long siege,  
188; he makes a gallant defence, 190-192;  
surrenders, 193.
- Magistracy of France, their position in 1774,  
vii. 28, 29.
- Maine, its coast explored by the French, i.  
27; by Gosnold, 112; by Pring, 114; by  
Weymouth, 114; the French settlement on  
Mount Desert, 27, 28; they are dislodged  
by Argal, 148; colony at Sagadahoe, 268;  
part of the territory granted to the Plym-  
outh colony, 320; and part to Gorges,  
328; colony at Saco, 330; at Pemaquid,  
331; design of these settlements, 331; mul-  
tiple grants of the territory, 335; slow  
progress of settlement, and why, 336; no  
efficient government, 337; not admitted to  
the New England confederacy, 422; ab-  
sorbed by Massachusetts, 430; the royal  
commissioners in Maine, ii. 86; population  
in 1675, 93; trade and business, 93; Indian  
war in 1676, 109, 110; Maine separated  
from Massachusetts by the privy council,  
113; this measure defeated by that colony,  
113; Maine becomes a province of Massa-  
chusetts, 114; its frontier laid waste by  
Indians, 431; again laid waste, iii. 183,  
212, 333 (see *Abenakis*, also see *Rusley*).
- Maintenon, Madame de, mistress of Louis  
XIV., ii. 175; her early history, 175; gov-  
erns the king, 175, 177; forsakes him, iii.  
323.
- Maitland, British general, comes to the relief  
of Savannah, x. 296; repels the besiegers,  
297.
- Major-generals elected by the continental  
congress, viii. 26; their names, 26, *et seq.*



- Malcolm, Daniel, of Boston, a stubborn patriot, refuses to have his house searched, vi. 31; moves thanks in town meeting, 139; leads the people in the riot of the tenth of June, 1768, 156; arrested by the crown officers, 213.
- Malcolm, John, a Scotchman, tarred and feathered in Boston, vi. 493.
- Malden offers its blood and treasure in the cause of liberty, vi. 483.
- Malesherbes, Christian William, exiled by Louis XV., vi. 423, viii. 330, 362, ix. 293; what he said of Franklin, 492.
- Manchester, Duke of, his speech against the war with America, viii. 164.
- Mandamus councillors for Massachusetts, the king makes out a list of them, vii. 58; they fare hardly in that province, 103-105; in a state of alarm, they resign their commissions, or take to flight, 103-105; more resignations, 111, 115, 116.
- Manhattan visited by Hudson, ii. 268; by Adriaen Block, 275\*; settlement begun, 276.
- Manigault, Judith, her sufferings for religion, ii. 180.
- Manly, John, American naval commander, his success in taking prizes, viii. 217.
- Mansfield, Earl of (see *Murray, William*).
- Mansfield, Earl of (William Murray), his elaborate speech in Parliament on the right of that body to tax America, v. 405-413; his reasoning accepted as unanswerable, 413; is in favor of coercion, 412; he and Edmund Burke found the new Tory party of England, 418; its impersonation, 419; his desperate counsel in regard to America, vi. 182; his plea in behalf of arbitrary power, 323, 324; in a debate "breathes out threatenings and slaughter" against Boston, 518; in Parliament denies having advised the duty on tea, vii. 226; he praises the Boston port bill and the regulating act, 226; is charged by Shelburne with telling a lie, 227; his cruel and unrighteous proceeding as a judge, 344; his atrocious speech in the House of Lords, viii. 170, 171; ridicules the idea of suspending hostilities, 301; his heartless indifference when Chatham was struck with death, ix. 495.
- Manufactures, colonial, frowned upon by England, iv. 63, 64, 150.
- Manufactures in England in 1763, v. 54; the cotton manufacture then unknown, 55; the manufacture of iron and clay scarcely begun, 55; domestic manufactures proposed in the colonies, 288; colonial manufactures forbidden by law, 266, 267, 287; restraints on American, vi. 71; a flagrant violation of national right, 71.
- Marblehead, its inhabitants respond to the Boston circular, vi. 431, 437; the board of customs transferred to that place, vii. 34; its people make generous offers to Boston, 67; Leslie with his command lands in Marblehead, 252; its fishermen man the boats at the crossing of the Delaware, ix. 230.
- Marchant, of Rhode Island, votes for limiting Washington's powers, ix. 433.
- Marest, Gabriel, Jesuit missionary in Hudson's Bay and Illinois, iii. 196, 197.
- Marest, Joseph, Jesuit missionary among the Sioux, iii. 243.
- "Margaretta," a king's cutter, captured by a party from Machias, vii. 341, 342.
- Maria Theresa, empress of Austria, x. 53; is averse to the American cause, 245.
- Maria Theresa, queen of Hungary, caresses Madame de Pompadour, the French king's mistress, iv. 278.
- Marie Antoinette, queen of France, her character, vii. 31; her levity, 31; calumniated, 32; a friend to America, x. 45, 111, 112, 187; gives birth to a daughter, 216; and to a son, 216.
- Marion, Francis, iv. 348, 423, 426, viii. 90; assists in the defence of Fort Moultrie, 402; sent to watch the enemy, x. 317; his noble character, 331; captures a British force, 331; exerts a good influence, 331; his further successes as a partisan, 341; his mercy to the enemy, 342, 485, 488, 493.
- Maritime restrictions of Carthage, i. 213; of Spain and Portugal, 213; the freedom of the sea vindicated by Grotius, 214; and by the Dutch, 215; the navigation act of the English Parliament in 1651, 212; another in 1660, ii. 42; this policy permanently established in England, i. 218; further maritime restrictions, ii. 104, 105; absurdity of the system of monopoly, 110, 113; led to the decay of commerce, 113; a fruitful source of national animosity, 114, 116.
- Markham, Archbishop of York, recommends American reconstruction, ix. 324.
- Markham, William, deputy-governor for Penn. of Pennsylvania, ii. 364, 381; of Delaware, iii. 35; of Pennsylvania, 40.
- Marlborough, Mass., its patriotic response to the Boston circular, vi. 442.
- Marquette, James, missionary to the Chippeways in Michigan, iii. 152; resolves to discover the Mississippi, 153; gathers a village of Indians in Northern Michigan, 155; discovers the Mississippi river, 155; the Missouri, the Ohio, and the Arkansas, 159; his death, 161.
- Marshall, John, afterwards chief-justice of the United States, serves as a lieutenant at Great Bridge, viii. 226; commands a Virginia regiment in the battle of Brandywine, 397; in the battle of Germantown, 427, *note*.
- Martha's Vineyard plundered by a British armament, x. 149.
- Martial law proclaimed by Lord Dunmore in Virginia, viii. 223.
- Martin, Josiah, royal governor of North Carolina, condemns the course pursued towards the "Regulators," vi. 409; seeks to obstruct the progress of liberty, vii. 271 *a*; his disappointment and alarm, 373, 374; sends his wife to New York for safety, 335; thinks Charleston ought to be destroyed, viii. 91; takes refuge

- first in a British fort, 92; his insulting proclamation, 96; excites the Highlanders against the patriots, 94, 96; organizes an insurrection in North Carolina, 283; the insurrection is crushed, 288-290; witnesses the unsuccessful attack on Fort Moultrie, 411; arrives in New York Bay, ix. 82.
- Martinico captured by the English, iv. 436.
- Maryland, its territory originally included in Virginia, i. 236; a grant of it to Lord Baltimore, 241; boundaries assigned to it by charter, 241; whence the name, 242; absolute authority conferred on the proprietary, 242; yet the liberties of the people secured, 242; perfect religious equality, 243; no power reserved to the monarch, 243; the first emigration, 246; rapid progress of the settlement, 247; peace interrupted by Clayborne, 249; a declaration of rights adopted, 251; liberty and happiness of the people, 252, an Indian war, 253; Clayborne returns from England, and excites a rebellion, 254; the governor flees to Virginia, 255; the toleration act, 256; the legislative body divided into an upper and a lower house, 257; disputes about the government, 258; Clayborne, as commissioner from the Long Parliament, suspends the authority of the proprietary, 259; his patent confirmed by Cromwell, 261; the right of jurisdiction still disputed, 263; the assembly assert the superior power of the people, 264; condition of Maryland in 1660, ii. 234; the proprietary government re-established, 236; its policy mild and generous, 236; emigration encouraged, 236; sufferings of the Quakers, 237; residence of Charles Calvert in the province, 237; money coined there, 238; importation of felons prohibited, 240; the party of Bacon (of Virginia) obtains a lodgment in the province, 241; restrictions laid on suffrage, 241; insurrection, 242; struggle of the English church in Maryland for an establishment, 242; the province suffers from the commercial policy of England, 243; a struggle for liberty, 244; the northern boundary of Maryland settled, 394; population in 1688, 450; a majority Protestants, 454; effect of the English revolution of 1688, iii. 30; the "Protestant Association," 30; Maryland made a royal government, 31; Annapolis made the capital, 31; Protestantism triumphant, 31; Church of England established by law, 32; Catholics disfranchised, 32; missionaries come from New England, 32; power of the proprietary restored, 33; manufactures attempted, 33; white servants, 33; education, 34; population in 1710, 34; restlessness, 395; does nothing to repel the French from her borders, iv. 113; population in 1754, 129, 130; its social condition, 137; prerogatives of Lord Baltimore, 138; corrupt state of society, 138, 139; spirit of freedom, 373; the province receives a reprieve from the young king, 441, 442; its frontiers ravaged by Indians in Pontiac's war, v. 124; the stamp act resisted, 315; approves the proceedings of Massachusetts, vi. 167; its promptness in choosing delegates to the continental congress, vii. 66; contributes to the relief of Boston, 74; high spirit of the province, 142; burning of the brig "Peggy Stewart" at Annapolis, with a ton of tea, 143; general convention of the people, 172; their patriotic resolves, 172, 207; military organization, 207; wish for reconciliation to England, 334; volunteer troops from it join the army before Boston, viii. 63; unanimity of the province, 75; its conservative policy, 76; the population to be armed, 76; equality restored to the Catholics, 76, 78; resolute spirit of the colony, 77, 78; casts off the proprietary government, 78; establishes a temporary government, 78; issues bills of credit, 78; convention at Annapolis, 78; its spirit averse to separation from England, 244; the proprietary interest dominant, 313; the province still hopes for a reunion with Britain, 385; in June, 1776, the province declared unanimously for independence, 446, 447; a government to be formed by the authority of the people only, 447; renounces allegiance to George III., ix. 32; has a grudge against Virginia, 56; a regiment of very brave troops from this state on Long Island, 88, 93, 94, 103; the state is willing to abandon the Declaration of Independence, 199; constitution of civil government, 262; great inequality of representation, 265; the state seeks to restrain popular power, 266; public worship, how sustained, 276; disposition of church property, 277; disaffection on the eastern shore, 392.
- Mason, Charles, and Jeremiah Dixon, surveyors, their line (Mason and Dixon's line) established, ii. 394.
- Mason, George, of Virginia, foretells the dire consequences of slavery, vi. 417, 418; an eminent patriot, vii. 53; drafts a series of patriotic resolutions, 74; is elected to Congress, but declines, viii. 81; member of the Virginia convention, 379, 436; his exalted character, 379; and influence, 379; has the principal share in framing the constitution of Virginia, 436; a correspondent of Washington, x. 207; his vehement denunciation of slavery, 354.
- Mason, John, commander in the Pequod war, i. 399; successfully assails the Pequod Fort, 400; unites his efforts with Gorges, 328; obtains a grant of territory in New England, 328; takes out a new patent, 328; extends his claims, 329; complains of the Massachusetts people, 405; his death, 329, 409; his claim revived, ii. 115.
- Mason, Robert (formerly Robert Tufton), grandson of the preceding, ii. 115; selects a governor for New Hampshire, 116; derives no benefit from lawsuits in his behalf, 118; his sons sell his claim to Samuel Allen, of London, iii. 82.

Mascontins, iii. 155, 156, 242.

Massachusetts, its coast explored by Gosnold, i. 112; by De Monts, 26; by Pring, 114; by Smith, 269; included in the charter of the Plymouth company, 272; landing of the Pilgrims, 309 (see *Pilgrims*); its soil claimed, in part, by Gorges and Mason, 328; charter of the Massachusetts company, 328, 340; names of the patentees, 340; the king confirms the patent, 342; provisions of the charter, 342; its fundamental principle, 343; seal of the colony, 346; the charter and government transferred to America, 352; Winthrop's company embark, 353; their farewell to England, 356, 357; their numbers, 355, 357; their character, 357; their arrival in Salem, 358; great suffering and mortality, 360; the oath of fidelity, 362; none to be freemen but members of the church, 362\*; a representative government, 363; friendly relations with the natives, 363; new emigrants arrive, 364; the ballot-box introduced, 366; democracy, 367; religious union, 368; a proposal for a hereditary nobility declined, 385; the Antinomian controversy, 386; Ann Hutchinson and John Wheelwright, 388; Henry Vane, 388; emigration from Massachusetts to Connecticut, 395; Massachusetts participates in the Pequot war, 399, 401; efforts of the enemies of the colony in England, 405; ships bound to Massachusetts detained, 406; her liberties threatened, 407; the colony prepares for resistance, 407; restraints placed on emigration, 408; a *quo warranto* issued, 409; the writ disregarded, 413; Massachusetts threatens to declare itself independent, 413; its virtual independence, 415; and great prosperity, 415; population in 1641, 415; the protection of Parliament declined, 416; ministers decline to attend the Westminster Assembly, 416; Parliament favors the colony, 416\*; the "Body of Liberties" established, 416\*; its provisions, 417, *et seq.*; annexation of New Hampshire, 418\*; absorption of Maine, 430; toleration of dissenters, 432; "a perfect republic," 433; exercises the functions of sovereignty, 433; its mint, 433; its democratical spirit, 433; a conservative and a liberal party, 434; the people jealous of the magistrates, 434; disturbance at Hingham, 435; zeal for toleration made a pretence for undermining the liberties of the country, 437; Parliament assert a right to control the government of Massachusetts, 439; the claim resisted, 440; the true idea of the dependence of the colony on the mother country defined, 440-442; a noble remonstrance, 441; Cromwell offers the colonists estates in Ireland, 444; the offer declined, 444; laws against irreligion and sectarianism, 450; severities against the Quakers, 452, *et seq.*; an issue made between Massachusetts and England, ii. 41; address of the colony to Charles II., 71; a declaration of rights, 73; two parties formed, —

the friends of prerogative and those of freedom, 74, 75; the king's answer, 75; his demands resisted, 76; commissioners sent to regulate the affairs of New England, 77; the general court resolve on resistance, 79; they claim the right of self-government, 80; remonstrance to the king, 79-81; the commissioners foiled in their attempts, 85-87; the general court resolve to disobey the king, 88; the privy council overawed, 89, 90; prosperity of Massachusetts, 91; its extensive commerce, 91; population in 1675, 93; extent of settlement at that time, 93; the Indian title to land always respected, 98; the Indian war of 1675, 100, *et seq.*; its causes, 98, 99; horrors of the war, 103, *et seq.*; "Great Swamp Fight," 105; great distress on both sides, 106, 107; end of the war, 108; its cost in life and property, 109; controversy with England renewed, 111; Edward Randolph arrives, 111; his activity, 112; his exaggerations, 112; the colony sends agents to England, 112; purchases the rights of Gorges in Maine, 113; continues the struggle against the privy council, 121; the colony resolves to stand on its charter, 123; a *quo warranto* issued, 124; the colony refuses to submit to the will of the king, 125, *et seq.*; the charter abrogated, 127; despotism established, 425; liberty recovered, 446; resumption of the charter, 447; population in 1688, 450; the political institutions of Massachusetts resulted from the Calvinism of its founders, 461, *et seq.*; effect of the English revolution, iii. 71; the popular will defeated, and the opportunity lost for recovering chartered rights, 71; Massachusetts made dependent on England, 72; witchcraft, belief in it general, 73; controlling influence of ministers, 74; Massachusetts seeks a new charter, 79; has powerful friends in England, 79; the new charter compared with the old, 80; territory of Massachusetts greatly enlarged, 81; the withcraft delusion, 73-99 (*which see*); claims the right of *habeas corpus*, 103; a depreciated currency, 104; a commercial monopoly, 104; the navigation laws, 104; the governors obliged to enforce the restrictive system, 105; suggested the first American Congress, and therefore the parent of the American Union, 183; sends a fleet and army for the conquest of Canada, 185; the expedition fails, 186; consequent issue of paper money, 186; distress of Massachusetts in "Queen Anne's war," iii. 212, *et seq.*; final conquest of Acadia, 217, 218; flourishing condition of, 369; the charter in danger, 380; Massachusetts vindicated, 381; its territory curtailed, 382; paper money, 388, 389; Massachusetts refuses a fixed salary to its governor, 391, 392; petitions Parliament against the king, 392; sends an expedition to the capture of Louisburg, 458; protests against arbitrary power, iv. 50; her expenses for the reduction of Louisburg refunded, 50; abolishes



paper currency, 51; solicits the interposition of the king against French encroachment, 114; bad character of its governor and council, 113, 114 (see *Shirley*); petition to the House of Commons rebuked as an insult, 254; disavows a desire for independence, 269; heavy self-imposed taxation, 292; a self-imposed stamp-tax, 293; its military strength, 297; has ten thousand men in the public service, 297; places a monument for Lord Howe in Westminster Abbey, 301; has seven thousand men under arms, 319; Bernard governor, 377; disavows "subjection to Great Britain," 378; denies the justice of the acts of trade, and questions their authority, 414; great speech of James Otis against writs of assistance, 415, *et seq.*; liberty in peril, 414, 439; right of Britain to tax the colonies denied, 447; the province determined to vindicate its rights, 449; its loyalty vouched for by Bernard, v. 148; its boundaries settled, 163; proceedings of its general court on taxation by the British Parliament, 199; correspondence with the other colonies, 290; waives the question of right, 224; the spirit of Massachusetts revives, 273; proposes a congress of the American people, 279, 280; its cautious proceedings, 292; the people roused, 309, *et seq.*; Bernard, the governor, essays to frighten the legislature, 329, 330; able reply of that body, 347-349; Samuel Adams the author, 349; arbitrary conduct of its governor, Bernard, vi. 8, 9; threatened with the loss of its charter, 10; patriotic reply of the house, 12; and of the council, 12; the house votes thanks to Pitt, Grafton, and others, 13; the enemies of the province continue their machinations, 30, 31, 47, 50; the house is willing to grant aid to the king's service "of their own free accord," but not to be taxed for it, 51; the province specially obnoxious to the British government, 68, 69; speech of Charles Townshend against it, 75; shameful conduct of the earl of Hillsborough toward it, 116, 117; leading men in the province propose resistance, 117, 118; a solemn declaration of rights, 121; remonstrance of the province against the oppressive acts of the British Parliament, 121, 122; its beautiful letter to the king, 123; great caution of the assembly, 120, 124, 125; a circular letter addressed to the other colonies, 125, 126; they enumerate their grievances, 126; vote against the use of superfluities, 129; the house requests the recall of Bernard, 131; Hillsborough requires the house to rescind its resolves, 144; the king himself responsible for this order, 368; its petition to the king never presented, 144; the house refuses to rescind, by a large majority, 165; the governor dissolves the assembly, 165; England irritated against Massachusetts, 173, 177; Bernard wishes to forbid the meeting of the general court, 194; is without a legislature, 194; proposal

for an extension of chartered rights, 195; the council refuse to provide quarters for British troops, 201; a convention of the province assembles at Faneuil Hall, 203; Bernard tries to intimidate them, but in vain, 204; their energetic proceedings and resolutions, 205; the province on the side of law, its enemies law-breakers, 204; great firmness and prudence of the province, 204, *et seq.*; the law officers of England can find no treason in its doings, 206; its charter to be abrogated, 231; this intention laid aside, 268; the ministry willing to withdraw the troops, 268; discontent at the presence of the troops, 283; altercation with the governor, 285, *et seq.*; the general court adopt the resolutions of Virginia, 288; and refuse all supplies to the troops, 289; Bernard threatens them, 289; the Boston massacre (see *Boston*); Hutchinson succeeds Bernard as governor, 303; he convenes the legislature at Cambridge, 359; this body declares a standing army in time of peace to be against law, 360; the legislature again convened at Cambridge, 364, 367; and a third time, 403; the king had ordered it, 367; Castle William, though the exclusive property of the province, taken possession of by the regular troops, at the command of the king, 369; efforts of Hillsborough to subvert its charter, 371; the legislature keep a day of solemn fasting and prayer, 371; Hutchinson advises the entire abrogation of its charter, 372; proposes to exclude it from the fisheries, 373; to seize the leading patriots, and especially to punish Boston, 373; protest of the legislature against abuse of prerogative, 403; and against the king's instructions to exempt from taxation certain individuals, 404, 405; the legislature pass a vote condemnatory of the governor, 420; the king makes the judges dependent on his mere pleasure, 420, 421; committees of correspondence, 429, *et seq.*; the flame spreads, 431; Hutchinson's secret letters discovered and sent to Massachusetts, 435, 436; general patriotic response of eighty towns to the circular of Boston, 437, *et seq.*; 445, *et seq.*; Hutchinson challenges the legislature to discuss with him the supreme power of Parliament, 445; answer of the council, 448; answer of the house, 448, 449; the towns continue their patriotic responses, 446, 447, 452; dispute of the house with the governor on the dependence of the judges, 452; the province elects its committee of correspondence, 460; the insidious letters of Hutchinson and Oliver read to the house, 461; and published far and wide, 462, *et seq.*; vigorous proceedings of the committees of correspondence, 467, 475, *et seq.*; the tea thrown overboard, 477-487; union of the people, 469, 476, 478, 481, 484, 488; their resolute spirit, 507; the ultimatum of America, as expressed by Samuel Adams, 508, 509; the Boston port bill passes the House of



Commons, 511, 512; and the House of Lords, 518; other stringent measures adopted, 525, 526; stringent measures of the British ministry against, vii. 34; the people exclusively of English origin, 38; George III. approves two acts against, 43; legislature of, organized, 47; the royal governor, Gage, negatives thirteen councillors out of twenty-eight, 47, 48; bills passed in Parliament to subvert the charter, 60, 94, 97; Gage removes the legislature to Salem, 61; and refuses to receive the address of the council, 61; Massachusetts appoints time and place for the first continental congress, 64; keeps a day of fasting and prayer, 83; the act for better regulating the province subversive of the charter and liberties of the people, 95; sweeps away all authority but that of the king, 96; tramples on all the affections, laws, customs, and privileges of the people, 96; requires Boston to pay for the tea thrown overboard, 96; and the province peacefully to acquiesce in the loss of its charter, 97; two other acts confer on Gage absolute power to enforce the preceding and all other acts, at his discretion, 97; the question between Britain and America wholly changed, 97; general spirit of resistance, 100, *et seq.*; estimated population of the province, and of men able to bear arms, 101; delegates of Massachusetts are received with high respect as they pass through Connecticut, 106, 107; convention of three counties in Boston, 109; Gage seizes the powder of the province at Charlestown, 114; the people of Middlesex county rise in indignation, 114, 115; in Worcester and Hampshire counties, and in Connecticut, 120, 121, 122; royal authority ceases outside of Boston, 121; the wealthy royalists flee to Boston, 122; Massachusetts wishes to resume its first charter, 124; the resistance of the province to Parliament approved by the continental congress, 134, 145; the "minute-men," 137; Gage dares not meet the legislature, 138; this body applies to Congress for advice, 142; the house of representatives resolves itself into a provincial congress, 153; it remonstrates with Gage, 154; the province conforms to the second charter, 155; destitute of all government, yet in perfect tranquillity; the people a law to themselves, 184; admirable conduct of the clergy, 184, 185; magnanimity of Boston, 185; Massachusetts declared to be in a state of rebellion, 222; stringent measures against her, 222; the provincial congress appoints a committee of safety, 228; elects general officers, 228; their measures for defence, 229, 230; Massachusetts receives intelligence of the violent measures adopted in England, 278; precautions against Indian hostility, 279, 280; preparations for war, 280, 281; scanty means, 281; the conflicts at Lexington and Concord, 292, *et seq.*; people rush to the camp of liberty, 313;

an army to be raised, 314; slender supply of military stores, 314; personal character of the men composing the army of Massachusetts, 317; difficulties of the men at the head of affairs, 321; want of union and discipline in the army, 322; financial difficulties, 323; state of the currency, 323; no proper organization for government, 324 (see *Provincial Congress*); the continental Congress unanimously approve the conduct of Massachusetts, 357; the province asks the advice of Congress in regard to a form of government, 324, 357, 388; invites Congress to assume the army then besieging Boston, 380; the Massachusetts delegates and leading men nominate Washington as commander-in-chief; Samuel Adams and John Hancock proscribed by Gage, 391; the people choose a house of representatives according to their charter, viii. 47, 48; the royal government wholly superseded, and a new seal adopted for the commonwealth, 48; the army sustained by voluntary contributions of the people, 49; their character imperfectly understood by Washington, 41, 49; their untiring zeal and great exertions, 49, 50; institutes admiralty courts, 136; militia from Massachusetts called out to re-enforce the army at Cambridge, 219; Massachusetts keeps up the numbers of the army, 233; the militia praised by Washington, 234; the people, in their town meetings, declare for independence almost unanimously, 438; welcomes the Declaration of Independence, ix. 36; three thousand of her soldiers return home, 197; her form of government from 1775 to 1780, 260; education of the whole people provided for, 270; public worship, how sustained, 276; sends aid to the northern army, 384, 387; the richest state in the Union, x. 171; raises soldiers by draft, 206; refuses to give up the fisheries, 215, 216, 218; vainly endeavors to recover Castine, 233; how far slavery was tolerated, 360; laws in relation to it, 360; cautious steps towards abolition, 361, *et seq.*; slavery finally abolished, and how, 364-367; made a free republic, 364; caution in establishing a form of government, 363, *et seq.*; excellence of its constitution, 367; consents to a national debt, 571.

Massachusetts Fort in Williamstown capitulates, iii. 463.

Massachusetts tribe of Indians, iii. 238.

Massacre of the Huguenots in Florida, i. 70; of the Virginia colonists, 182; a second massacre, 208.

Massacre of Hurons by Iroquois, iii. 139; of inhabitants of Montreal by Iroquois, 179.

Massacre of English at Lancaster, i. 106; at Schenectady, iii. 182; at Oyster river, 187; at Deerfield, 213; at Haverhill, 215; in North Carolina, 320; in South Carolina, 327; of the French by the Natchez, 360; at Wyoming, x. 137; at Cherry Valley, 152; terrible, in South Carolina, by Tarleton's cavalry, 307; by

- Arnold at fort Griswold, 500; applauded by British generals, 307.
- Massasoit visits the Pilgrims at Plymouth, i. 317; reveals a plan formed for their destruction, 319.
- Masts, royal, monopoly of, iii. 106, 390.
- Matagorda Bay, visited by La Salle, iii. 170, 171; fort built there by Spaniards, 353.
- Material universe, unity of the, viii. 116, 117; not less so the moral, 117, 118.
- Mather, Cotton, opposes the resumption of chartered liberties, iii. 71; his share in the witchcraft delusion, 75, *et seq.*, 85, *et seq.*; his exultation at the appointment of Phips, 83; his address at the execution of Burroughs, 92; his "Wonders of the Invisible World," 95; his credulity, 97; procures the appointment of Joseph Dudley as governor, 99; desires a synod, 391.
- Mather, Increase, iii. 71; agent of Massachusetts in England, 72, 79; nominates Sir William Phips as governor, 83; has no recompense for his services, 89.
- Matthews, General, his destructive incursion into Virginia, x. 223.
- Matthews, George, in the battle of Point Pleasant, vii. 169.
- Matthews, Samuel, governor of Virginia, i. 226; his struggle with the assembly, 226; submits, 227; his death, 228.
- Mauduit, Duplessis, a French officer, his gallant conduct at Brandywine, ix. 399; at Germantown, 426.
- Mauduit, Israel, favors the stamp tax, v. 155; advises the concession to New England of the whale fishery, 185; his artful attempt to mislead, 190, *note*; the adviser of the stamp tax, vi. 494; is in league with Hutchinson against Massachusetts, 65, 69, 98, 110, 116; counsel for Hutchinson before the privy council, 492, 494.
- Mauduit, Jasper, agent in England for Massachusetts, iv. 430; his letters quoted, v. 79, 86, 88; consents to taxation of the colonies, 155, 180; quoted, 185, *note*.
- Maurepas, John Frederic Phillipeaux, Count de, chief minister of Louis XVI., his previous history, vii. 87; his character, 87, 88; his weakness, 88, 89; his envy of Turgot, viii. 341; misrepresents him to the king, 341, 363; desires to maim England, ix. 287; advises Louis XVI. to acknowledge American independence, 400, x. 42, 187, 242, 243; eager for peace, 443, 444.
- Maury, James, a clergyman in Virginia, v. 171; sues his parish for salary, 173; is opposed by Patrick Henry, and loses his case, 175.
- Maverick, Rev. John, arrives at Nantasket, i. 358.
- Maverick, Samuel, on Noddle's Island, now East Boston, i. 341; one of the royal commissioners in 1664, ii. 84.
- Mawhood, Lieutenant-Colonel, commands the British at Princeton, ix. 248; his defeat, 249.
- Maxwell, General, in command at Morris-town, New Jersey, ix. 224; orders given him, 224; his success at Elizabethtown, 251; in the affair at Scotch Plains, 353; commands a body of light troops at Iron Hill, 394; covers the American retreat at Brandywine, 399, 402; at the battle of Germantown, 424; his good conduct at Monmouth, x. 129; commands the Jersey brigade, 372; repels an attack from Hessians, 373.
- May, Cornelis Jacobsen, the Dutch navigator, ii. 275; his name given to the southern point of New Jersey, 279; first governor of New Netherland, 279.
- "Mayflower," the Pilgrim ship, i. 306; her voyage, 308; arrives at Plymouth, 313.
- Mayhew, Jonathan, a clergyman of Boston, his character, iv. 59; a champion of liberty, 59, 60; his sermon in 1750 against unlimited submission, 60; known as "an enemy to kings," 429; his public spirit, v. 206; speaks and writes for liberty, 311, 312; but disapproves of violent proceedings, 313; his letter to Hollis, 342; his apostrophe to Pitt, 459; advises a union of the colonies, vi. 12, 13; his death, 13.
- Mayhew, Thomas, father and son, their labors to convert the Indians, ii. 97.
- McCulloh, Henry, is zealous for the taxation of America, v. 137; biographical notices of him, 138. *note*; "a convenient subordinate," 138.
- Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, suffers under oppression from crown officers, vi. 137; its Scotch-Irish population, vii. 370; their spirit of liberty, 371; they declare themselves independent of king and Parliament, 371, 372; they establish a government of their own, 372; they publish their resolves to the world, 372; and separate wholly from the British empire, 373.
- Mecom, Benjamin, editor at New Haven, fills his paper with patriotic appeals, v. 353.
- Meigs, Return Jonathan, major in the expedition against Quebec, viii. 191; is taken prisoner in the assault on the citadel, 210; his successful expedition to Sag Harbor, ix. 348, 349.
- Mein, John, a printer, insults the patriots of Boston, vi. 313.
- Melcomb (see *Dodington*).
- Melendez de Aviles, Pedro, invades Florida, i. 67; lays the foundation of St. Augustine, 69; slaughters the French colonists, 70; his extreme cruelty, 71; attempts to take possession of Chesapeake Bay, 71.
- Menomonies, iii. 242; their singular dialect, 242.
- Mercer, Captain Hugh, of Pennsylvania, wounded, iv. 242; left in command of Fort Pitt, 313.
- Mercer, Hugh, colonel of a Virginia regiment, viii. 246; commended by Washington, 317; on Staten Island, ix. 176; wishes New York to be defended, 113; with Washington on the Delaware, 224; in the crossing of the Delaware, 230; is mor-

- tally wounded at Princeton, 246-248; his great merit, 250.
- Mercer, Lieutenant-Colonel, iv. 213; killed at Oswego, 239.
- Meredith, Sir William, a friend to America, v. 242, 244; espouses the cause of America, vi. 257.
- "Merlin," British frigate, destroyed in Delaware river, ix. 431.
- Mernnet, Jesuit missionary, on the Ohio, iii. 196; his labors, 198.
- Merrick, Captain, a Tory of Monson, Massachusetts, obnoxious to the people, vii. 111.
- Merrill, Benjamin, of North Carolina, vi. 395; hanged by Tryon, 397.
- Meserve, George, stamp distributor at Portsmouth, resigns his office, v. 316.
- Mesnard, René, missionary among the Cayugas, iii. 144; visits Lake Superior, 147; is lost in the forest, 148.
- Methodists denounce slavery as repugnant to the law of God, x. 370.
- Miami tribe of Indians, iii. 154, 155, 156, 240, 241, 244; visit Albany, 339; a powerful tribe, iv. 78; friendly to the English, 78; council at Picqua, 79, 80; at Shawnee town, 95; at Carlisle, 108; unite with other tribes to expel the English, v. 112.
- Miami, Great, iv. 78; fertile country on its banks, 81.
- Miantonomoh, the great chief of the Narragansetts, visits Boston, i. 363; makes a grant of Rhode Island to the followers of Mrs. Hutchinson, 392; dissuades from an attack on the Pequods, 399; makes war on the Mohegans, 423; his death, 424.
- Michigan, possession of it taken by the English, iv. 362.
- Michigan, Lake, first visited by white men, iii. 128; traversed by La Salle, 164.
- Michilimackinac, English traders visit it in 1686, ii. 422; iii. 177 (see *Mackinaw*).
- Micmaes of Nova Scotia, allies of the French, iii. 187, 237, iv. 47.
- Middlebrook, New Jersey, camp of Washington there, ix. 351; Howe, by various movements, endeavors to draw him away, 351, 352; Washington, by his steady firmness there, saves his country, 352.
- Middlesex County, Mass., convention at Concord, vii. 112; its patriotic spirit, 112; the people of the county rise and come in arms to Cambridge, 114, 115; their good conduct, 116; Prescott, Bridge, Brewer, Brooks, Gardner, Nixon, and the men they commanded were from this county, and fought on Bunker Hill, 408, 411, 414, 418, 433.
- Middleton, Arthur, of South Carolina, iii. 329; elected delegate to Congress, vii. 81.
- Middleton, Henry, of South Carolina, iv. 423, 426; his unworthy submission to British rule, x. 330.
- Midway in Georgia burned, x. 285.
- Mifflin, Thomas, of Philadelphia, vi. 481, vii. 43, 44; an ardent patriot, 45; is elected to the house of burgesses, 141; his fervent spirit of liberty, 332; his impatience at the dilatory action of Congress, 377; at Cambridge, viii. 40; at New York, ix. 81; Washington's confidence in him, 101; he and his command the last to leave the lines at Brooklyn, 103; his mistake, 104; statements respecting him, 105; the statements corrected, 107; with Washington at the Highlands, 187; is sent by him to Congress to ask for re-enforcements, 197; his spirited conduct, 197; rouses up the men of Pennsylvania to arms, 202; his advice to Congress, 213; is posted at Bordentown, 243; grumbles, 337; cannot rouse Pennsylvania, 392; neglects his duties, 455, 459; one of the Conway cabal, 456; is chosen one of the board of war, 456; praises Conway, 457; recommends him for promotion, 457; denies being implicated in the Conway cabal, 464.
- Milborne, son-in-law of Leicester, iii. 52; takes possession of Albany, 53; his trial, 54; and execution, 55.
- Milhet, John, of New Orleans, vi. 218, 220, 293.
- Military, the, Townshend refuses to withdraw them from America, vi. 74; Bernard and Paxton wish their assistance, 101, 133; regiments and armed ships ordered to Boston, 153; two regiments arrive, 207; they land and parade on the Common, 208; sleep in Faneuil, 209; quarters in the town denied them, 209, 210; they are stationed with a view to intimidate the legislature, 211; many of the soldiers desert, 213; threats of seizing the leading patriots, 246, 247; insolence of the soldiers, 247; the town of Boston demands their withdrawal, 284; Bernard refuses to take measures for this purpose, 285, 286; the troops find nothing to do, 313, 314; they have frequent broils with the inhabitants, 314; the people despise them, 333; the Boston massacre, 334-340; extreme excitement, 340, *et seq.*; Captain Preston and eight of the soldiers arrested, 341; the troops removed to the castle, 346; note on the evidence respecting the massacre, 347-349; trial of Preston and the soldiers, 350, 373; two of the soldiers convicted of manslaughter, 374; more troops sent to Boston, 523.
- Military rule, the colonies placed under it, iv. 227, *et seq.*; superior to the civil power, 229; this state of things continues till the revolution, 229.
- Military stores, great want of, among the Americans, vii. 322, 401, 405, 415, 427; measures to procure them, 183, 184, 340; great want of, in the northern army, viii. 185, 420, 424; in Washington's army, 51, 61, 70, 217, 234, 291, 422; in the southern army, 404, 408.
- Militia of Massachusetts and New Hampshire assist in the siege of Boston, viii. 219; review of, at Boston, vii. 101; not to be relied on in war, ix. 137, 221; Washington's chief reliance the New England militia,



335; testimony of General Howe to their value as soldiers, 335; turn the tide of success in the northern department, 378-381; defeat the Brunswick troops at Bennington, 384, 385; their invincible courage, 386; re-enforce the army of Gates, 405, 414; triumph over Burgoyne's veteran troops, 418.

Miller, John, professor of law at Glasgow, commends the republican form of government, viii. 173.

Miller, governor of North Carolina, ii. 156.

Milton, John, the greatest poet of our language, i. 409, *note*.

Milton, near Boston, the residence of Thomas Hutchinson, vi. 485.

Mingo Indians active in Pontiac's war, v. 119, 120.

Ministry of Great Britain resolve to restrain the liberty of the colonies, iv. 56, 57; have American affairs much at heart, and resolve to persevere, 61; jealousies among them, 70, 71; plans for taxing America delayed in consequence of these jealousies, 83; great corruption of the ministry, 98; their instructions to Dinwiddie, governor of Virginia, 102; they do nothing to repel French encroachment, 102, 106, 113; their imbecile administration, 165; shameful proposal to Russia, 219; their dilatory proceedings, 235; end of the Newcastle ministry, 247; a new and liberal ministry formed by Pitt, 274; in 1763, v. 79, 83; spirit of, 91; ministry of Bute overturned, 96; the triumvirate, 97, *et seq.*; the king wishes a stronger ministry, 133; but fails to get one, 143, *et seq.*; the Grenville ministry, 147; the ministry responsible for the stamp act and all subsequent acts of American taxation, 151, 152, 157, 180, 187, *et seq.*; the ministry zealous to restrain the spirit of New England, 214; trouble in the ministry occasioned by the king's illness, 253, *et seq.*; the Grenville ministry triumphs over the king, 264, 265; America at their feet, 265; this ministry displaced, and why, 300, 305; the Rockingham administration, 301; its great defects, 305; has no intention of repealing the stamp act, 305; adopts measures for enforcing it, 322; shrinks from employment of arms, 342; severe measures proposed, but not adopted, 381; ministry decided for the right to tax America, and to bind the colonies in all cases whatsoever, 401, 418, 419; the new Tory party thus founded, 418; the Rockingham ministry defeated in the House of Lords, 421; victorious in the Commons, 422; various measures proposed, vi. 17; Pitt once more prime minister, 20; the most liberal that had been seen in England, 22; weakened by Pitt's elevation to the peerage, 24, 25; opposed by a combination of the friends of Grenville, Bedford, and Rockingham, 59; defeated, 60, 61; the ministry misled by those in whom they trusted, 68; left with a small majority, 81; revolutionized, 109; resolve to abrogate colonial charters, 116; and to

reduce America to absolute submission, 130, 145, 164; is incensed against Boston, 173; secret intrigues with Corsica, 175, 176; its policy towards America, 176; more troops to be sent to Boston, 178; hinders the settlement of the Mississippi Valley, 223; threatens the violation of chartered rights, 231; nonplussed, 233; but refuses to recede, 233, 238, 239, 245; if America may be punished, is willing to sacrifice liberty in England, 258; but is restrained by the English constitution and the sentiment of the people, 265, 266; had no system, 267; is willing to make some concessions, 268; its mistaken policy in regard to Russia, 269, 270; afraid of Chatham, 268, 276; resolves to repeal the duties, except that on tea, 276; why was this duty retained, 277; under the advice of Bernard, declines taking conciliatory measures, 310; strengthened by the accession of Grenville's friends, 389; exasperated against the Americans, 503; takes pains to quiet the Bourbon powers, 504; will not be warned, 509; applies to Parliament, in the name of the king, for additional powers, 509, 510; stringent measures to be adopted; the Boston port bill, 511; the Massachusetts charter abrogated, 525; men indicted for murder to be tried in Nova Scotia or Great Britain, 525; troops to be quartered in Boston, 526; the Quebec bill, 527; jealous of the Bourbons, keeps spies in all the French ports and at Paris, vii. 34; its majority in Parliament increased, 176; the colleagues of Lord North constantly thwart him, 24, 179; contemptuous language towards America, 178, 181; is surprised at the firmness and unanimity of Congress, 186; negotiates with Franklin through Lord Howe, 188; rejects his terms and those proposed by the continental congress, 193; Lord North's colleagues draw him into their measures, and into war with America, 193; it endeavors to break the union of the colonies, 207\*; instructs Gage to act offensively, 218\*; hopes to subdue the Americans by fear, 222; tries to obtain from Franklin some concessions, but in vain, 242; employs Johnson to abuse America, 258, 259; overreaches itself by not believing Franklin, 264; its marvellous blindness, 284; the city of London ask the king to dismiss the ministers, 282, 346; their utter incompetency, 247; they cannot enlist an army in England to fight against America, 347; they apply for Russian troops, 348; they send out arms for Indians and negroes, 349; condemn the conduct of General Gage, viii. 100; recalls him, 100; determines to burn Boston, 133; changes in the ministry, 165; the weakest and least principled of that century, 167; relies on German princes for support, 169; not popular in England, 169; or in Ireland, 169; obtains four thousand men from the Irish Parliament, 170; its negotiations with German princes, 255, *et seq.*; demands of the



- Americans unconditional submission, 301; knew nothing of the science of government, 359; conciliation with America not really designed, 360; is for absolute authority over the colonies, 360; the powers given to the royal commissioners limited by this purpose, 360; the charters of the colonies were to be violated, 361; have undisputed sway in Parliament, ix. 144; their hope of an easy triumph in America crushed, 144, 235; the ministry are divided on the conduct of the war, 312; their hopes rest on Germany, 313.
- Ministry, French, their cautious policy regarding America, viii. 323, *et seq.*; divided in opinion, 320.
- Minnit, Peter, purchases Manhattan Island of the Indians, ii. 279\*; the price, 279\*; sends an embassy to New Plymouth, 280; displaced from his government, 282\*; conducts a colony of Swedes to the Delaware, 286.
- Mirabeau, his address to the German people, ix. 476.
- Miruelo Diego, visits Florida, i. 34, 39.
- Missions, Puritan, in Massachusetts, ii. 94; John Eliot, 95; the Mayhews, 97; "praying Indians," 97; Romish missions in New France, iii. 119, *et seq.*; the Franciscans, 119; the Jesuits, 120; Brébeuf and Daniel, 122; among the Hurons, 123; austerities of Brébeuf, 124; interest awakened by his labors and success, 126; nuns arrive, 126; Raymbault, 129, 131; Jogues, 131-134; Bressani, 134; the Abenakis in Maine, 135, 136; the missionaries left alone, 136; Noné, 137; martyrdom of Jogues, 137, 138; of Daniel, 139; of Brébeuf and Lallemand, 140; mission of Le Moyne and Dablon to the Onondagas, 143; the mission abandoned, 145; mission of Allouez to the Indians around Lake Superior, 149, *et seq.*; of Dablon and Marquette in the same vicinity, 152; hardships endured by the missionaries, 152; their pleasures, 153; their toils and labors, 198; Spanish missions in Georgia, 210; Jesuit mission not fruitless, 245.
- Mississippi river, its mouth discovered, i. 35; called Espiritu Santo, 36; crossed by De Soto, 52; discovered by Joliet and Marquette, iii. 155; La Salle reaches its mouth, 168; the boundaries of Canada extended to it, vii. 156; with all the country watered by its affluents, is claimed by Spain, x. 183, 193; immense value of this river and its tributaries to the United States, 192; without it and then these States cannot remain united, 192; the possession put beyond a doubt, and the Spanish claims set for ever at rest by the backwoodsmen of Virginia, 193, *et seq.*; Gouverneur Morris and others would yield the Mississippi to Spain, and why, 350; the Mississippi to be the western boundary of the United States, 574, 579; navigation of this river, 580.
- Mississippi scheme, iii. 349, *et seq.*; theory and plan of John Law, 350; infatuation of the people, 351; the unhappy results, 357.
- Mississippi Valley claimed by France, iii. 175; the oldest European settlement in it, 195; state of, colonized, 204, 349 (see *Iberville, Illinois, Louisiana*); France abandons it, v. 164; England forbids its settlement, 164; the mandate disregarded, 165; the British ministry wish it to remain a wilderness, vi. 222, 223; its small population in 1768, 223; a Celtic-American republic on its banks, 217, 292. (See *Louisiana and New Orleans*.)
- Missouri visited by De Soto, i. 52, 53; by Joliet and Marquette, iii. 159, 160.
- Mobile, De Soto at, i. 49; a French colony there, iii. 205, 206.
- Mobilian race of Indians, iii. 249; estimated population, 253.
- Moderation of the claims of France compared with those of Spain, x. 185, 186.
- Moffat of Rhode Island petitions the assembly for relief, vi. 43; the petition denied, 43.
- Mohammed, influence of his system on the march of improvement, iv. 7.
- Mohawks, ii. 415; their extensive power, 416; Champlain attacks them, 417; at peace with the Dutch, 418; at war with the French, 421, iii. 123; their extreme ferocity, 133; their treatment of missionaries, 137, 139, 140 (see *Iroquois*); they receive fire-arms from the Dutch, 141; their destructive inroads into Canada, 142, 179; their steady friendship for the English, 181; with Johnson at Niagara, iv. 321 (see *Johnson, Sir William, and Six Nations*); their help sought by the British government against the Americans, vii. 119; speech of Gates to them, ix. 360; they incline to neutrality, 377; Brant the Mohawk, 321, 359.
- Mohawk Valley, the settlers there march to the relief of fort Stanwix, ix. 378; severe conflict with the Indians, 378, 379; the Indians repulsed, 379; the Indians torture and murder captives, 380; Highlanders of the, rally to the king's standard, viii. 272.
- Mohegan Indians attacked by the Narragansetts, i. 423; faithful to the English, ii. 109.
- Molesworth, Parmely, captain, indicted for a rash speech, vi. 314.
- Molineux, William, of Boston, a leading patriot, vi. 311, 343; his interview with Clarke, one of the consignees of the tea, 473, 474; at the Old South Church, 478.
- Molyneux, of Ireland, asserts the independence of the Irish Parliament, v. 74; the precedent, and his reasoning applied to the case of America, vi. 97, 319.
- Monarchies, great, their decline predicted, iv. 438.
- Monarchy of England, of a different character from those of Catholic countries, v. 34; of France, its absolute power, vii. 28; the church subordinate to it, 28; its degradation, 30; its arbitrary rule, 20; arguments of "Common Sense" against, viii. 237.

- Monckton, Robert, colonel, afterwards general, assists in the removal of the Acadians, iv. 204; general of brigade in the army of Wolfe, 324; occupies Point Levi, 326; lands with Wolfe on the north shore, 333; is wounded, 336; governor of New York, 427; his great victories in the West Indies, 436.
- Money, great danger of failure of the revolution for want of it, x. 403, 404.
- Monhegan Island, a winter spent there by the crew of "Rocroft," i. 330.
- Monk, George, Duke of Albemarle, his agency in restoring the Stuart dynasty, ii. 28; his despicable character, 28; one of the proprietaries of Carolina, 129; palatine of Carolina, 151.
- Monmouth, battle of, x. 128, *et seq.*; the day nearly lost through the treachery of Lee, 129 (see *Lee, Charles*); statements of eye-witnesses of Lee's misconduct, 131, *note*; Washington's anger at Lee's ill conduct, 130; Washington's self-possession, exposure of himself, and admirable conduct retrieve the fortune of the day, 131, 132; the British lose the day, 133; extreme heat of the atmosphere, 132; colored Americans in the battle, 133.
- Monro, Colonel, commands at Fort William Henry, iv. 263; capitulates, 265.
- Mouroe, James, of Virginia, at the battle of Trenton, ix. 230; is wounded there, 233.
- Montagu, Frederic, opposes in Parliament the proposal of Lord North, vi. 257.
- Montagu, John, rear-admiral, commands a powerful British fleet in the harbor of Boston, vi. 406; his insolent reply to the governor of Rhode Island, 418; goes to Newport on a silly errand, 450; blockades the harbor of Boston, 483.
- Montagu, Lord Charles Grenville, governor of South Carolina, vi. 235; his defeat, 235; his insolence, 411; insults the assembly, 447, 448.
- Montbary, Prince de, French minister of war, despises the people of the United States, x. 41.
- Montcalm, Louis Joseph de St. V6ran, Marquis de, field-marshal of France, iv. 238; general of the French forces in Canada, 238; captures Oswego, 239; besieges Fort William Henry, 260, *et seq.*; captures it, 265; his humanity, 265, 266; his able defence of Ticonderoga, 300, *et seq.*; small amount of his force, 302; his able defence of Quebec, 327, *et seq.*; his bravery, 335; is mortally wounded in battle, 337; his high character, 336; forged letters of his, v. 180, and *note*.
- Montesquieu, his foresight in 1748 of the greatness of America, iv. 3; his "Spirit of the Laws," v. 24, 25; reasoned on facts, 24; led the way to a milder penal code, 25.
- Montgomery, Colonel (Earl of Eglinton), iv. 250; invades the Cherokee country, iv. 351; his vigorous campaign, 353; his hasty retreat, 355; inflames the Cherokee mind to madness, 356.
- Montgomery, John, a backwoods captain, x. 195.
- Montgomery, Richard, in the expedition against Louisburg, iv. 295; comes to Boston with Amherst, 306; elected by Congress brigadier-general, viii. 31, 179; his previous history, 178; connected by marriage with the Livingston family, 178; happy in his beautiful home at Rhinebeck, 179; a delegate in the New York convention, 179; accepts military command, 180; advises the occupation of Canada, 180; arrives at Ticonderoga, 180; Washington urges the immediate prosecution of the enterprise, 180; Montgomery moves forward without waiting for Schuyler's orders, 181; Schuyler retires, and the command is left with Montgomery, 182; he is in want of good officers, 184; complains of the New England troops, 185; and of the New Yorkers, 185; but wins the affection of the whole army, 185; meets with great difficulties, 185; takes the strong fort of St. John, 188; enters Montreal, 188; his political plans for Canada, 188; resolves to attempt the conquest of Quebec, 189; most of his men desert him, 200; joins Arnold at Point aux Trembles, 201; appears before Quebec, 201; demands its surrender, 201; his batteries of snow and ice destroyed by the enemy's artillery, 203; his desperate situation, 203; visits the spot where Wolfe fell, 204; recalls three mutinous captains to their duty, 204; makes preparations for the assault, 205; leads on his men, 206; is stopped by a block-house, 207; finds the garrison on the alert, 207; is killed by a shot from the block-house, 208; his exalted character, 211; grief at his death, 211, 212; eulogies on him in the British Parliament, 212; effect of his death, 415, 416.
- Montmorin, French ambassador at Madrid, x. 188, 186, 190, 191.
- Montreal, occupied by Montgomery, viii. 183; Arnold there, 420; the British approach it from the west, 428; the place evacuated by the Americans, 432.
- Moody, Rev. Joshua, pastor in Portsmouth, imprisoned by Cranfield, ii. 119.
- Moore, Andrew, of North Carolina, in the battle of Point Pleasant, vii. 169; takes the field against the Highland insurgents, viii. 285; his message to their chief, 285; disarms the Highlanders and regulators, 290.
- Moore, Colonel James, son of the preceding, defeats and expels the Tascaroras from North Carolina, iii. 321; elected governor of South Carolina, 329.
- Moore, James, governor of South Carolina, leads an expedition against St. Augustine, iii. 209; his expedition against the Indians, 210.
- Moore, Major Willard, of Paxton, in Bunker Hill battle, vii. 418; is mortally wounded, 432.

- Moore, Sir H., governor of New York, yields to the popular will, v. 358, vi. 43; calls for more troops, 68.
- Moorish slavery, i. 164.
- Moors contended with Christians in three thousand battles, i. 164.
- Morals and truth, common-sense the criterion of, viii. 248, 249.
- Moranget, a nephew of La Salle, murdered, iii. 173.
- Moravians, their emigration to Georgia, iii. 427.
- Moravian settlement at Salem in North Carolina, x. 471.
- Morgan, Daniel, of Virginia, a wagoner in the train of Braddock, iv. 185; in the Indian war, vii. 167; with his riflemen arrives at Cambridge, viii. 62; his early life, 62; his adventurous character, 62; his great abilities as an officer, 63; joins the expedition against Quebec, 191; he and his company capture a battery, 209; taken prisoner in the assault on that place, 210; his return from captivity, ix. 131; his great merits, 131; attacks a column of Cornwallis's troops, 355; his admirable regiment of riflemen sent to the northern army, 387; in the first battle of Bemis's Heights, 409; in the second battle, 416, 418; his corps of riflemen again with Washington, 432; sharp action with a British party at Edgehill, 454; sent to harass the British right, x. 128; a brigadier-general, is sent to join Gates in South Carolina, 316; his operations there, 461; pursued by Tarleton, 462; amount of his force, 463; turns on his pursuers, 463; at Cowpens, gives Tarleton a total defeat, 465; retreats through North Carolina, and thus saves the Southern states, 466; the most extraordinary victory of the war, 467; his remarkable career, 467; he joins his forces with those of Greene, 469.
- Moro Castle, Havanna, taken by storm, iv. 445.
- Morrell, William, comes to Weymouth with Robert Gorges, i. 325; his mission fruitless, 326.
- Morris, a preacher in Virginia, iii. 454.
- Morris, captain of the "Bristol," of fifty guns, killed in the attack on Fort Moultrie, viii. 408.
- Morris, Gouverneur, in the New York convention, ix. 33; entreats Washington to send aid to Schuyler, 374; on a committee respecting the terms of peace, x. 213, 217; is willing to give up the fisheries, 215; wants no more land at the South, 213; is willing to give up the entire Mississippi, and why, 350; is hostile to slavery, 349, 358.
- Morris, Lewis, in the New York convention, ix. 33; in Congress, 60.
- Morris, Major, of New Jersey, killed at Edgehill, ix. 454.
- Morris, Robert, a merchant of Philadelphia, his sloop captures a magazine of powder at Bermuda, viii. 69; in Congress, 318; his character, 325; his position with regard to independence, 325; impatient for the arrival of the British commissioners, 327; one of a committee for treaties with foreign powers, 393; a staunch supporter of independence, ix. 41, 59; his zeal in the cause, 241; his financial aid, 242; calls Washington "the greatest man on earth," 256; will accept of nothing from England short of independence, 498; an error relating to him corrected, x. 495, *note*; he is placed in charge of the finances, 501; recommends a national bank, 501; his extreme views, 501; his great financial ability, 566; his important services, 566; recommends a strong national government, 567; proposes taxation by Congress, 568; his wishes frustrated, 573.
- Morristown, N. J., American army encamped there, x. 372.
- "Mosaic" cabinet, the term when applied, vi. 22.
- Moscow, American affairs under discussion in that city, viii. 104, 107, 150; application made for Russian troops, 149, 151, *et seq.*; a *d* refused, 151-154.
- Mott, captain of a company in Montgomery's attack on Quebec, viii. 296.
- Mott, Captain Edward, of Preston, Conn., assists in the plan for taking Ticonderoga, vii. 338.
- Motte, Isaac, lieutenant-colonel, of South Carolina, takes possession of Fort Johnson, viii. 90; assists in the defence of Sullivan's Island, 402.
- Motte, Rebecca, her patriotism, x. 489.
- Moultrie, Fort, surrenders to the British, x. 305.
- Moultrie, William, iv. 351, 423, 426; takes possession of Fort Johnson, in Charleston harbor, viii. 90; is ordered to fortify Sullivan's Island, 346; his courage, 397; Lee's orders to him, 398; dilatory conduct of the British, 399; his preparations for defence, 402; amount of his force, 402; the fort described, 402, 403; the action begins, 404; Moultrie fires slowly, and with good effect, 404, 407, 408; sends for more powder, 405; his flag is shot away, 406; Sergeant Jasper replaces it, 406, 407; the enemy finally repulsed, 410; small loss of the Americans, 410; great loss of the British, 411; the squadron greatly damaged, 411; the fort scarcely injured, 412; consequences of the action, 412; joy in Charleston, 412; the fort named, 414; honors and congratulations bestowed on him, 413, 414; accompanies Lee's expedition into Georgia, ix. 158, 159; repels an attack on Beaufort, S. C., x. 287; retreats before Prevost, 290; successfully defends Charleston, 291, 293.
- Mounds in the Western states, not evidence of an early civilization, iii. 307; explained by geology, 307.
- Mount Desert Island, in Maine, a French colony there, i. 28.
- Mount Independence, on Lake Champlain, ix. 157; useless as a fort, 340; its invest-

- ment by Riedesel, 366; occupied by him, 367.
- Mount Wollaston, plantation at, i. 338; visit of Endicott, 341.
- Mowat, captain of the armed ship "Cancaux," is forcibly detained at Falmouth, now Portland, vii. 341; he breaks his parole, 341; burns Falmouth, viii. 113.
- Moylan, an American officer, ix. 229.
- Mugford, James, a Marblehead sea captain, viii. 372; takes a most valuable prize, 372; is attacked by a powerful force and mortally wounded, 372.
- Muhlenberg, commands a brigade at the battle of Brandywine, ix. 398; at Germantown, 427.
- Muhlenberg, Peter, a clergyman and military commander, vii. 75; his patriotic preaching in the Shenandoah Valley, viii. 224; leaves the pulpit for the army, 246; his excellent rifle regiment, 246; the regiment takes part in the defence of Charleston, 400; its superior quality, 400; it is sent to Sullivan's Island, 409.
- Municipal charters in France often confiscated, vii. 29.
- Munroe, Robert, slain at Lexington, vii. 294.
- Murray, General James, commands a brigade in Wolfe's army, iv. 325; attempts a landing, without success, 329; lands with Wolfe on the north shore, 333; left in command at Quebec, 359; is defeated at Sillery, 359; maintains possession of Quebec, 359; his advice in regard to Canada and the older colonies, v. 135.
- Murray, Mary Lindley, her patriotic conduct delays the British pursuit, ix. 121.
- Murray, of Rutland, Mass., a mandamus councillor, his flight and escape, vii. 104.
- Murray, William, Earl of Mansfield, affirms that not the king, but the Parliament, may tax the colonies, iv. 33, 34, 56; as crown lawyer rules the cabinet, 54, 163; his opinion on obliging the colonies to furnish quarters for soldiers, 229, 230; holds that "free ships do not make free goods," 233; becomes a peer and lord chief justice, 246; his extraordinary motion in the privy council, 374; his political principles, v. 80; strongly asserts the authority of Parliament over America, 372 (see *Mansfield, Earl of*).
- Musgrave, British colonel, at Germantown, ix. 423, 425.
- Muskhogee, or Creek confederacy, iii. 250; friendly to Oglethorpe's colony, 420, 434.
- Muskhogee-chocta Indians, iii. 249.
- Mutiny act revised, iv. 171; a proposal to extend it to America, 171.
- Muzzey, Isaac, slain at Lexington, vii. 294.
- 177; its consequences, 178; revocation of compelled emigration to America, and thus promoted freedom, x. 84.
- Nanticocke tribe of Indians, iii. 239.
- Narraganset Indians, vicinity where found, iii. 238; hostile to the Pequods, i. 398; fear to engage in war with them, 399; attack the Mohegans, 423; reject the Christian religion, ii. 97; their numbers, 97; engage to be neutral in Phillip's war, 102; "Great Swamp Fight," 105; extermination of the tribe, 105, 109.
- Narvaez, Pamphilo de, is defeated by Cortez, i. 39; undertakes the conquest of Florida, 39.
- Nash, Abner, of North Carolina, member of the provincial congress, viii. 98.
- Nash, general, commands a brigade at Germantown, ix. 424.
- Natchez, a French colony there, iii. 204, 349; possession of it taken for the United States, ix. 466.
- Natchez nation, iii. 248, 249; estimated population, 253; their villages, 358; sacred building for the dead, 359; rupture between the tribe and the French, 360; fearful massacre of the French, 360-362; extermination of the Natchez, 363; their peculiar language and customs, 364.
- National Bank chartered, x. 566; its prosperity, 567.
- Navigation act of 1651, its origin, i. 212; its intention and scope, 216, 222; not enforced in Virginia, 229.
- Navigation act of 1660, ii. 42; its gross injustice, 44; injurious both to the colonies, 45, and to England, 46; a pledge to the colonies of ultimate independence, 46; as a scheme of taxation, a failure, 47 (see *Commerce*); ancient navigation, iii. 111.
- Navigation acts, extensively disregarded, v. 157; curious illustration, 158, *note*; the British ministry determine on their enforcement, 160; the army and navy to be employed for this purpose, 160, 161; the people incensed at them, vi. 39; a perpetual source of discontent, 72; their baleful influence in the West, 224; their general operation, 236; consented to by Congress, vii. 139, 140, 148, 149.
- Navy, American, origin of, viii. 114; Washington employs small vessels, 114 (see *American Navy*).
- Navy of Great Britain, employed in enforcing the navigation acts, v. 161.
- Navy of the United States almost wholly destroyed, x. 502.
- Neal, captain of artillery, slain at Princeton, ix. 248.
- Necker, James, made director-general of French finances, ix. 295; his character, 295; at the head of the French finances, x. 44; wishes France to be neutral in the American contest, 44; in 1782 is clamorous for peace, 444; wishes to be prime minister, 448; is made rich by the war, 448.
- Negotiations for peace, x. 502; instructions

## N.

Nansemond, in Virginia, ii. 133; abounds in Nonconformists, 134; some of them remove to North Carolina, 134.

Nantes, edict of, its nature, ii. 174; revoked,



- given to the American commissioners, 502; negotiation, how begun, 535; its progress, 540; terms proposed by the English ministry, 541; further progress of the negotiation, 542, 545, 555, 558, 574, *et seq.*; the negotiation ended, and treaty signed, 591.
- Negro emancipation desired, vii. 42, 271 *b*; no more negroes to be imported, 84; negroes fought side by side with white men on Bunker Hill, 421.
- Negroes serve in the army along with white men, ix. 421; emancipated in Rhode Island, enlist during the war, 468; free negroes are citizens of the United States, 449 (see *Slaves*); negro slaves in Pennsylvania join the British, 401.
- Negro population in Virginia, state of, viii. 223; invited to rise against their masters, 223; why they did not rise, 225; Dunmore has two companies armed, 224, 225, 227; free negroes serve in the continental army, 232, 233; though at first excluded, 233; slave trade forbidden by Congress, 321; effect of the prohibition on the white race, 321; on the negro race, 321; first proposal of colonization of free negroes, 322; Samuel Hopkins writes against slavery, 322; Virginia treats the negro humanely, 322.
- Negro slaves, confiscated by the British, x. 292; and sold, 299; their treatment by the British, its consequences, 298; taken at Charleston, and sold in the West Indies, 306; they wish success to England in the war, 360 (see *Colored Americans*, and *Slavery*).
- Negro slavery existed from time immemorial, i. 165; introduced into Europe, 166; into America, 169; English participation in it, 173, iii. 232 (see *Slaves*, *Slavery*).
- Nepisings, iv. 243; assist in the reduction of Fort William Henry, 262, 263.
- Nesbit, Lieutenant-colonel, his shameful behavior in Boston, vii. 256.
- Netherlands, or United Provinces, a land of liberty, x. 59; maintain the freedom of the seas, 59; are invited to join a league for the protection of neutral trade, 427; their difficult position, 431; the Northern powers will protect them, 432; on the seizure of the Laurens papers, the United Provinces engage to give England "all reasonable satisfaction," 434; unwilling to have war with England, 436, 437; England makes war on them, 438, 440; they lose their possessions in both the Indies, 438, 440; fight the English at Dogger Bank, 451 (see *Dutch* and *Holland*).
- Neufville, Jan de, of Amsterdam, x. 262.
- Neutral nation of Indians, iii. 129; mission among them, 129.
- Neutral ships not allowed to carry an enemy's goods, iv. 233, 234.
- Neutrals, their maritime rights, x. 255.
- New Albion, ii. 296.
- New Amsterdam, ii. 279\*.
- Newark in New Jersey, settled from New Haven colony ii. 318.
- New Bedford, the shipping there burned by the British, x. 149.
- New Belgium, ii. 279, 296 (see *New Netherland*).
- New Berne, in North Carolina, settled from Switzerland, iii. 24.
- Newburyport and the neighboring towns unite with Boston in the struggle for liberty, vi. 481; its merchants agree to suspend all commerce with Britain, vii. 38.
- Newcastle administration commences, iv. 159; ends, 247.
- Newcastle, Duke of (see *Pelham T. Holles*).
- Newcastle, Duke of, lord privy seal under the Rockingham administration, v. 300, 301; tries, in vain, to unite the friends of Bedford and Rockingham, vi. 92.
- New England, its discovery by Cabot, i. 13; its shores visited by Verrazzini, 18; unsuccessful attempts of the French to settle it, 26, *seq.*; visited by the Spaniards, 38; explored by John Smith, 269; first English settlement, which soon fails, 268; granted to the first Plymouth company, 120; to the second Plymouth company, 272, 273; this company divide all New England among its members, and resign their charter, 408; the New England confederacy of 1643, 420; motives which led to it, 421; its scope and limitations, 421; its long duration, 422; royal commissioners, ii. 77-87; population in 1675, 92; Indian war of 1675, 100-111; great loss of lives and property, 109; a colony in North Carolina from New England, 131; Andros governor of New England, 425; his arbitrary measures, 426; extortions, 426; Episcopal service introduced, 426; New England consolidated, 431; news of the revolution in England reaches Boston, 445; excitement among the people, 446; Andros deposed, 447; a burning desire for the conquest of Canada, iii. 78; the colonial press free, 102; appeals to England not allowed, 103; commercial monopoly of the mother country, 104, *et seq.*; tendency of the colonies to independence, 108; a gloomy period, 186; north-eastern boundary, 333; peace with the Indians, 338; overthrow of French influence, 338; English influence supersedes it, 338; the interests of New England sacrificed by the mother country, 385; its manufactures forbidden, 384, 385; ineffectual attempt to introduce the English law of inheritance, 392; capture of Louisburg by New-England troops, 457-463; insubordinate to royal authority, iv. 39; population in 1754, 128, 129; social and political condition, 148, *et seq.*, settled in towns; prerogatives of towns, 148; spirit of liberty cherished, 149; the land of free schools, of independent churches, of an efficient militia, 149; a people of homogeneous origin attached to the parent state, 149; frugal and industrious, 150; with scarcely any slavery, 150; religious character, 151; Calvinism the basis of New England ideas and character, 154; the New

England creed, 155, *et seq.*; New England troops gain the battle of Lake George, 211; their military expenses partially repaid, 227; New England zeal aroused in the prospect of conquering Canada, 202 (see *Massachusetts*); governments formed on republican principles, v. 149; the whale fishery conceded to it, 184, 185; alarm prevails at the encroachments of the British ministry, 194; the ministry zealous to restrain the spirit of New England, 214; they annex part of it to New York, 214, 215; decided opposition of New England to the stamp act, 323-326 (see *Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island*); people unwilling to be taxed by Parliament, vi. 41; New England theologians study the Apocalypse in reference to the controversy with Great Britain, 168; the prime minister of France collects extracts from New England sermons, 180; rigid morality of the people, 425; the institution of town meetings the essential characteristic of their rights, 428; ministers to the wants of Boston, vii. 74; determined resistance of, to British aggression, 137; the king declares the New England governments in a state of rebellion, 177; the spirit of New England, 228-238; John Adams, in his letters signed "Novanglus," gives it utterance, 232, *et seq.*; the king determines to exclude New England from the Newfoundland fisheries, 239; a bill for that purpose passes both Houses of Parliament, 253, 265; the king is resolved to reduce New England to absolute submission, 94, 97, 145, 146, 193; will listen to no terms of conciliation, 145, 174; gives orders to arrest and imprison the leading patriots, 218; Burke's splendid eulogy on the people of New England, 265-270; the British fire on the people at Lexington, 231-234; battle of Concord, 299-309; the scheming genius of New England, 323; a scheme to capture Ticonderoga, 323; another to invade Canada by way of Kennebec and Chaudière rivers, 323; New Englanders encouraged by their successors, 363, 364; Washington rejoices in their resistance to Britain, 375; New England farmers behold British veterans recoil before them, at Lexington, 306; and at Bunker Hill, 424, 425; the men of, their daring attempts, viii. 65; jealousy of, entertained by some delegates in Congress, 109; Gadsden of South Carolina defends them, 109; feelings of New England on reading the king's atrocious proclamation, 134-136; Montgomery complains of the New England soldiers, 185; Washington appeals to the families of New England to furnish his army with blankets, 218; eagerness of New England men for paltry gains, 218; the press eager for independence, 219, 220; some of the people hesitate respecting independence, 243; their affection for Washington, 304, 305; character of the people of, 305, 306; their widespread influence, 306, 307; New England

men re-enforce the army in Canada, 416; zeal and alacrity of the people, 417; a want of due subordination among the troops, 418; the people of New England declare for independence almost unanimously, 438; it is nearly secure against invasion, 438; eagerly adopts the Declaration of Independence, ix. 36; jealousy of, entertained by southern men, 51, 52; a bitter rivalry between the New England troops and those south of New England, 123; New England troops with Washington at the crossing of the Delaware, 230; large re-enforcements sent to the army, 240; New England regiments at Princeton, 250; nearly the whole territory free from invaders, 254; all New England love Washington and confide in him, 256; constitutions of civil government, 260, 261; equality of representation, 265; militia of New England, reliable 335; insists on its right to the fisheries, x. 211, 216, 218; this claim disputed by Vergennes, 211; its people earnest for freedom, 218; patience and patriotism of the New England troops, 417.

Newenham, Sir Edward, in the Irish House of Commons, denounces the American war, viii. 169.

Newfoundland, its discovery by Cabot, i. 13; fishery, origin of, 16; its great increase, 24, 76, 80, 87, 111 (see *Acadon*); claimed by France, iii. 178; part of it held by France, 192, 217; England possesses the whole of it, 234; fisheries of, New England excluded from them, vii. 239, 240, 253, 265.

New France, institutions of, iv. 458 (see *Canada*); granted to the Hundred Associates, iii. 119; its vast extent, 119; religious motives operate in its colonization, 121; the Jesuits, 121 (see *Canada*).

New Hampshire, its coast explored by Pring, i. 114; its soil granted to Mason, 328, 329; annexed to Massachusetts, 418\*; population in 1675, ii. 93; separated from Massachusetts, 113; becomes a royal province, 115; the first ever established in New England, 115; the province asserts its rights, 116; Cranfield governor, 116; takes from Mason a mortgage of the whole province, 117; his oppressive proceedings, 118, *et seq.*; the people resist, 119; population in 1688, 450; Mason's claim sold to Allen, 82; Usher, lieutenant governor, 82; a succession of complaints, lawsuits, and trials, 82; dismembered by the Grenville ministry, v. 214, 215; sympathizes with Massachusetts, vi. 166 (see *Portsmouth*); organized for resistance, vii. 50; chooses delegates to Congress, 83; conforms to the recommendations of Congress, 295; chooses delegates to the next Congress, 295; the men of, rush to the scene of action after the combat at Lexington and Concord, 314; the colony offers to raise two thousand men, 325; regiments at Cambridge placed under the command of Wards, 405 (see *Bunker Hill*); asks Congress to sanction the in-

- stitution of a government in that colony, viii. 115; Congress advises the measure, 137; militia re-enforce the army at Cambridge, 219; Washington praises these soldiers, 234; the convention of the colony not in favor of independence, 243; the legislature declares for independence, 438; its form of civil government during the revolutionary war, ix. 261; the men of New Hampshire fly to the standard of Stark, 384; defeat the Brunswick troops at Bennington, 385.
- New Hampshire grants, now Vermont, vii. 209; the region is claimed by New York, 271; the New York authorities get possession of the court-house by force of arms, 271; they are speedily dislodged, 271*a*; the "Green Mountain Boys," 271*a*; they engage to take Ticonderoga, 271*a*; they take it, 338-340.
- New Haven colony, founded, i. 403; its civil constitution derived immediately from the Bible, 404; "The House of Wisdom," 404; absorbed by Connecticut, ii. 54; the union consummated, 83; honors the Massachusetts delegates to Congress, vii. 106; military movement there, 316; suffers from a pillaging expedition, 226.
- New Ireland, of what territory to be formed, x. 308.
- New Jersey, colonized by the Dutch, ii. 279; colony at Cape May, 282; this colony destroyed by Indians, 282\*; New Jersey Indians ravage Staten Island, 288; separated from New Netherland, 315; whence the name, 315; assigned to proprietaries, 315; slavery introduced, 316; condition of, previous to its surrender to the English, 316; a settlement of New England Puritans on the Raritan, 317; another, 318; weight of New England influence, 318; the province recovered by the Dutch, 322; restored to the English, 325; West New Jersey sold to the Quakers, 355; constitution of government established there by them, 357; East New Jersey sold to William Penn and others, 361, 409; lands purchased of the Indians, 358; Andros claims authority over the province, 408; the claim successfully resisted, 408; a large emigration from Scotland, 409; the causes, 410-412; the province annexed to New York, 413; population in 1688, 450; effect of the English revolution, iii. 47; the proprietaries surrender their rights to the crown, 49, 48; East New Jersey without any government, 47; the two Jerseys united in one royal province, 48; Lord Cornbury governor, 48; all political power vested in the governor, 48; no printing allowed, 49; slavery, 49; no permanent salary for the governor, 49; oppressive administration of Lord Cornbury, 63; intrepid conduct of the assembly, 63; growing discontent there, iv. 40; conflict about land-titles, 40; population in 1754, 128, 130; social condition, 142; the people rustic, unlearned, unwarlike, 142; Governor Belcher, 142; John Woolman, 142, 143; New Jersey troops at Ticonderoga, 301; makes great exertions in the war, 319; William Franklin, governor, 440; denounced by Townshend in Parliament, v. 76; sympathizes with Massachusetts, 164; declares for a suspension of trade and a congress, and sympathizes with Boston, vii. 50; would not have the tea paid for, and sends a delegate to the general congress, 83; the assembly unanimously adopt the recommendations of Congress, and elects delegates to the next, 211; petitions the king, 211; enthusiastic spirit of New Jersey, 332; a provincial congress meet at Trenton, 332; its proceedings in 1775, viii. 71, 72; provides for defence, 72; enjoins on its delegates in the continental congress to resist separation from England, 139; proposes once more to address the king, 213; dissuaded from this measure, 214; the assembly addressed by Dickinson and Jay, 214; the provincial congress in 1776 declares for independence, almost unanimously, 442, 443; a constitution formed, 443; its provisions, 443; sanctions the Declaration of Independence, ix. 32; calls out its militia, 77; a strong party opposed to independence, 172; New Jersey overrun by the British and Hessian troops, 194, *et seq.*; many of the people submit to the king, 199; desolations caused by the British, 202, 215, 216; New Jersey recovered by Washington, 246-254; royalists in the state, 253; form of civil government, 262; the British army retreat through it from Philadelphia, x. 127, *et seq.*; battle of Monmouth, 130; merciless conduct of the British troops, 152; invaded by Knyphausen, 372; New Jersey troops show signs of discontent, 416; the trouble repressed by New England regiments, 417.
- "New Jersey Gazette," at Trenton, glorifies Gates, ix. 460.
- New Mexico, its discovery by the Spaniards, 40*e*, *et seq.*; description of the inhabitants, 40*k*.
- New Netherland, preliminary statements, ii. 256, *et seq.*; oppression of the Low Countries by Philip II. 257; resistance of the people, 258; the United Provinces, 259; their flourishing commerce, 260; a West India company proposed, 261; visits of the Dutch to India and China, 261; attempts to discover a north-east passage, 262; the Dutch East India Company chartered, 263; the Dutch propose to England a joint colonization of the New World, 275; voyage of Hudson to America, 265, *et seq.*; voyage of Adrien Block, 275; name of New Netherland imposed, 276; Albany founded, 276; treaty with the Iroquois, 276; intestine commotions in Holland, 277; the Dutch West India Company chartered, 278; settlement of New Netherland, 279; first purchase of land from Indians, 279\*; friendly intercourse with New Plymouth, 279;\* manors established, 281; privileges of patrons, 281; disastrous consequences, 281\*;



- the Dutch from New Netherland occupy Hartford, 283; encroachments made on the province from New England, 283; Indian war, 288, *et seq.*; peace restored, 293; prosperity of the colony, 294; strife with Connecticut, 295; boundary established between the two colonies, 295; the Dutch overpower the Swedes on the Delaware, 297; the colony prospers, 299; Dutch maxims of government, 300; toleration of Quakers and Jews, 300; emigrants from France, Germany, and Italy, 301; Waldenses, 301; Huguenots, 302; African slaves introduced, 303; emigrants from New England, 304; first struggle of the people for liberty, 304; redress sought in vain from Holland, 305; meeting of an assembly of delegates from the people, 306; their demands refused by the governor, 307; the West India Company approve the refusal, 308; Lord Baltimore claims the territory west and south of the Delaware, but without effect, 308; the Dutch remain in possession, 309; an error of Chalmers corrected, 309, *note*; friendly relations with Virginia, 309; discussions with New England concerning territory, 310; war with the savages round Esopus, 311; discontent in the colony, 311; the king of England gives the country to his brother, 313; surrender of New Netherland to an English armament, 314; the territory dismembered, 315.
- New Orleans founded, iii. 351; its unpropitious beginnings, 352; whence its name, 352; becomes the capital of Louisiana, 358; its inhabitants unwilling to accept Spanish rule, vi. 217; the Spaniards land, 218; distress of the inhabitants, 219; a republic proposed, 219, 220; an embassy sent to Paris, 218, 220; a Spanish armament arrive, 292; the place occupied by this force, 293; arrest of the principal inhabitants, 294; trials and executions, 295; great cruelty used, 294-296; census of New Orleans in 1769, 296.
- Newport, Christopher, commands the ships which bore the first colony to Virginia, i. 124; ascends James river, 125; sails for England, 126; returns with a re-enforcement, 132; sails again for England, 133; embarks a third time for Virginia, 137; is wrecked on Bermuda, 137.
- Newport, Rhode Island, resists the revenue officers, vi. 289, 290.
- New Providence taken by a privateer, ix. 467.
- Newspapers, the first in America, iii. 374, 375; number in 1740, 375; tax on them in England, viii. 361.
- New Sweden, on the Delaware river, ii. 283-288; a colony of Swedes and Finns arrive, 283; conquest by the Dutch, and end of the colony, 296, 297; descendants of the colonists, 297; the city of Amsterdam becomes proprietor, 298.
- New Year's Day of 1776, its sadness in Norfolk, Virginia, viii. 230, 231; the American banner unfurled at Cambridge, 232; free negroes allowed to serve in the army, 232.
- New York (the province) conquered from the Dutch, ii. 314; English liberty withheld from the inhabitants, 320; arbitrary conduct of the governor, 320, 321; recovered by the Dutch, 322; restored to the English, 325; condition of the province in 1678, 407; Andros, governor, 404; popular discontent, 407; the people obtain the "liberties of Englishmen," 414; the king first grants and then denies these privileges, 414; the northern boundary of the province due to the warlike enterprise of the Iroquois, 424; population in 1688, 450; dread of popery, iii. 50; insurrection of Leisler, iii. 51-53; his execution, 54, 55; Fletcher's administration, 56; the assembly deny the right of king or Parliament to tax them, 56; the other colonies instructed to contribute to the defence of New York, 57; Church of England established by law, 58; the assembly oppose the governor, 58; administration of Bellermont, 59; imperious conduct of Lord Cornbury, the governor, 62; contests of the assembly with Governor Hunter, 64, 65; their assertion of liberty, 65; contest with Governor Cosby, 393; triumph of the people, 394; measures of Governor Clinton to raise a revenue, iv. 34; the assembly resist, 35, 53; a proposal for union, 75; the ministry endeavor to subject the province to the royal prerogative, 103, 104; custom of annual grants never to be surrendered, 104; population in 1754, 128, 129; social and political condition, 144, *et seq.*; relations to England, 145; the king's prerogative disputed, 146; the laws of trade disregarded, 146; illicit commerce, 147; the merchants averse to England, 147; the province impeaches ex-Governor Clinton, 164; complains to the king of instructions sent out to his governor, 165; tenure of judicial office during the king's pleasure, 427; the assembly protests against this encroachment of power, 428; the colony made dependent on the crown, 440; opposition to the British government deeply rooted, 441; remonstrates against the arbitrary measures of the British cabinet, v. 84, 85; its voice unheeded, 85; covets the territory west of Connecticut river, 149; excitement in New York over news of the determination of Parliament to tax the colonies, 193; a strong spirit of resistance roused, 215, 216; protest of the general assembly against parliamentary taxation, 216; voice of the people, 270 (see *New York City*); demonstrations of loyalty in, vi. 14, 15; complies with the requisition of the British general for his troops, 15; the billeting act distasteful, 43, 44; the declaratory act resisted, 44; severely denounced in Parliament, 76; disfranchised, 76, 81; avoids the blow, 91; meetings held there, 167; asserts its legislative rights, 248; its plan for an American



- union, 316; its "Sons of Liberty," vii. 40; division of sentiment, 41; a committee of fifty-one supersedes the former committee, 41; two great families, — the Livingstons and the Delanceys, 76; a compromise of parties, 83; elects a delegation of lukewarm patriots to the general congress, 83; the people wish not to sunder their connection with the English crown, 107; suppose an independent federative republic impossible, 107; the royal party endeavor to detach New York from the other colonies, 203, 210; the assembly false to Congress and to the people, 210; it refuses to send delegates to the second Congress, 212; the people hampered and hindered by the legislature, 212; Alexander Hamilton writes in defence of liberty, 212-216; the descendants of the Dutch remember the heroism of their fathers, 249; New York claims the whole territory of Vermont, 209, 271; the claim successfully disputed, 271 *a*, 280; the province elects delegates to the second continental congress, 283, 284; conservative policy of the province, 359; the New York assembly disclaims the desire of independence, 392; proposes Schuyler for major-general, viii. 23; address of its provincial congress to Washington, 33; its plan of accommodation, 34; the war to be transferred to New York, 158; Montgomery complains of the New York troops, 185; intrigues of Tryon, the royal governor, 215; firmness of the assembly, 215; their exposed condition imposes a prudent course of conduct, 274; the provincial convention meet, 276; disarming of the Tories on Long Island undertaken at their request by the continental congress, 276; Lee desires of Washington to be sent on same business, 277; Washington consents, 277; the interference resented by the New York authorities, 278; the provincial congress vote money to Lee, 281; position of New York in June, 1776, 438, 440; its extreme danger, 440; firmness of the patriots, Jay, Scott, Haring, 439; the people consulted on the great questions of independence and government, 439, 440.
- New York, state of, its convention meets, ix. 33; approves the Declaration of Independence, 34; danger of invasion, 33; two-thirds of the men of property unfaithful to the cause, 89; the country people ready to defend the state, 89; the American army compelled to retire from Long Island, 103, 104; and from New York, 175; British ships ascend the Hudson, 174; civil constitution of New York, 252; liberal system adopted, 274; the free black under no disqualification, 274; Clinton the first governor, 372; alarm occasioned by the advance of Burgoyne, 374; the State the battlefield of the Union, 374; asserts her claims to western territory, *x*. 400; but consents, for the sake of peace, to waive her claim, 400.
- New York City, its rude beginnings as New Amsterdam, ii. 279 \*, 280; its early prosper-  
 ity, 294; first known as New York, 315; the city incorporated, 320; the acts of trade disregarded, iii. 59; its commerce at the present time compared with that of all Great Britain a century ago, v. 159; the first American congress meets there, 333; indignation at the arrival of stamps from England, 345; its merchants resolve to import no more British goods till the stamp act be repealed, 351, 352; the people flock into the city to oppose their delivery, 355; the stamp act disregarded, 374; the stamps burned, 378; petition of merchants for redress of grievances, vi. 57; correspondence with Boston respecting the revenue acts, 98; the New York triumvirate of Presbyterian lawyers, 141; New York joins with Boston in the non-importation resolution, 150, 199; this resolution rigidly executed, 308; New York patriots plan a union of the colonies, 308, 316; insulting conduct of the troops, 331, 332; affrays with the citizens, 332; New York alone adheres strictly to the non-importation agreement, 365; yet here at length it is abandoned, except on the single article of tea, 366; the people resolve that the tea shall not be landed, 474, 475; the tea sent back, 519; its "Sons of Liberty" propose a general congress, vii. 40; formation of a conservative party among the aristocratic portion of the people, 40, 41; words of cheer sent to Boston, 41; many of the citizens under British influence, 41; new committee organized there, 41; spirit of the people, 76; state of parties, 77; British influence powerful, 77; the new committee vote to send delegates to a general congress, 78; diversity of views, 80; origin of the two great American parties, 81; the press takes the side of liberty, 212; the news from Lexington arrives, 323; a new committee organized, 329; the royal authority prostrate, 329; all parties united, 329; address of the committee to the people of London and of Great Britain, 330; enthusiastic reception of the delegates to Congress from Massachusetts and Connecticut, 331; the city is advised by Congress not to oppose the landing of British troops, 358; consequences of this advice, 358, 359; its reception of Washington, viii. 32, 33; its exposed position, 273; the people for liberty, 274; the merchants averse to a separation from Britain, 274; General Lee arrives, 279; Clinton arrives, 279; troops from New Jersey and Connecticut arrive, 279; general consternation and flight of the inhabitants, 279; hostilities delayed, 279; the city is fortified, 280; Lee's arbitrary conduct, 282; Washington at New York, 356; British forces to be concentrated there, 356; conspiracy against Washington, 441; menaced with invasion, ix. 33; statue of George III. thrown down, 35; Congress wish the city to be defended, 76; Washington promises to do what he can, 76; the defences, 81; consternation of the inhabitants, 84; pro-

- posal to burn the city and retire to the Highlands, 76, 110; the men of wealth keep aloof from the struggle or side with the enemy, 89; the American troops retreat from Long Island to the city, 103, 104; the city must be abandoned, 110; shameful flight of the American troops, 119, 120; the British take possession of the city, 120; a great fire, 129; cruelty of the British, 129; Clinton's retreat thither, x. 127-133; this and Rhode Island alone remain to the British, 139; the French fleet cannot reach it, 145; Clinton threatens to evacuate it, 155; Lord Amherst advises its evacuation, 168; Spain wishes it may remain in the possession of England, 182.
- Neyon, De, a French officer in Illinois, exhorts the Indians to make peace with the English, v. 133.
- Niagara first visited by white men, iii. 128; a fort erected there by the French, ii. 423, iii. 341; purpose for which intended, 342.
- Niagara, Fort, description of, iv. 213, 329; an expedition planned against it, 183; the expedition fails, 213; a second expedition, 320; Niagara is captured, 321.
- Nicholas, George, commander of the Virginians at Hampton, fires the first gun, viii. 221.
- Nicholas, Robert Carter, of the House of Burgesses of Virginia, vii. 53.
- Nichols, Richard, one of the royal commissioners in 1664, ii. 84; takes possession of New Netherland, 313, 314; as governor of New York, exercises supreme power, 320; his exactions from the planters, 329.
- Nicholson, Francis, lieutenant-governor of New York and of Virginia, iii. 25; his exorbitant powers, 26; is governor of Maryland, 31; commands the successful expedition against Acadia, 218; goes to England to urge the conquest of Canada, 218; the attempt fails, 224; governor of South Carolina, 330; makes a treaty with the Cherokees and Creeks, 331.
- Niebuhr, Carsten, sympathized with the Americans, x. 92, 93.
- Ninety-six, S. C., district of, x. 288; occupied by the British troops, 396; orders given to the commander there, 327; fort on, 485; besieged by Greene, 490; evacuated, 491.
- Ninon de l'Enclos, ii. 175.
- Nipissing, Lake, visited by Jesuits, iii. 130.
- Nipmuck Indians, afford shelter to Phillip, ii. 102.
- Nixon, John, captain of the Sudbury company at the battle of Concord, viii. 304; colonel of an incomplete regiment in Bunker Hill battle, 418; is dangerously wounded, 432.
- Nobility of England, not a caste, v. 37; succession of the title, 37; recruited from the commons, 38; amenable to law, 38; of Europe, state of the, in 1774, vii. 26, 27; of France, their vices had demoralized the army, 93.
- Noddle's Island, now East Boston, skirmish near, vii. 363.
- Non-importation of British goods resolved on, v. 351, 352; vi. 98, 103, 129, 132, 150, 179-199; the system rigorously maintained, 272, 270, 308; the agreement not to import fails, being now limited to the single article of tea, 365, 366, 383.
- Non-intercourse with England proposed, vii. 40, 47, 50, 60; Gage threatens all who enter into this agreement, 69, 70.
- Norfolk, in Virginia, sympathizes with Boston, vii. 57, 58; Dunmore plunders a printing office there, viii. 220; the town is left to the Tories, 226; they take refuge on board ships of war, 228; the patriots take possession, 228; the town is burned to ashes by Dunmore's order, 230, 231.
- Norridgewock on Maine, scene of the labors of the Jesuit Rasles, iii. 333; destroyed by the English, 336, 337.
- North, Lord, begins public life, iv. 161, 163; at the treasury board, 438.
- North, Lord Frederick, afterwards Earl of Guilford, v. 151; invited to become chancellor of the exchequer, vii. 60; succeeds Charles Townshend in the ministry, 100; his character, 100; opposed to liberty in every shape, 100; will have America prostrate at his feet, 233, 239; and yet is afraid to strike, 253; his underhand proceedings, 253; will not allow the question of repeal to be considered, 273; is responsible for the continuance of the duty on tea, and thus for the revolt of the colonies, 277; becomes first lord of the treasury and prime minister, 326; moves for a partial repeal of the revenue acts, 351; insists upon retaining the duty on tea, 352; justifies the stamp act, and rails at the Americans, 352; acts on the advice of Lord Thurlow, 358; deserves impeachment, 361; his ministry strengthened by the accession of Grenville's friends, 389; the happiest period in his public career, 390; is sick of the dispute with America, 434; but will not permit the right to tax America to be questioned, 459; introduces into Parliament the Boston port bill, 511, 512; is ready to employ military force against the Americans, 512; though prime minister in 1774, exercised no control over his colleagues, vii. 24; constantly thwarted by them, 179; wishes to negotiate with the Americans, 179; consults Franklin, 180; is ready for some compromise, 187, 188; wishes to avoid war, but is drawn into it by his colleagues in the cabinet, 193; moves that Massachusetts be declared in a state of rebellion, 222; again consults Franklin, 224; encounters strong opposition, 223, 225; offers to repeal the tax on tea, 225; pretends not to be responsible for that tax, 225; proposes to exclude New England from the Newfoundland fisheries, 239; the measure is carried, 240; Lord North leans towards the Americans, 241; once more consults Franklin, 241; the attempt is useless, 242; wishes to resign, but the king cannot spare him from his councils, 241;

- he proposes a plan for conciliation, but loses ground by it in Parliament, 243; the plan is wholly inadequate, 243; wherein it differed from the plan of Chatham, 244; his weak and unsettled course, 286; dreads a civil war, 286; hopes the colonies will submit, 286; sick of the hopeless struggle, he wishes to resign, 346; his uneasiness at the state of affairs in America, viii. 99; his disinclination to the measures of his own ministry, 162; yet will not resign office, 162; rebuked by Fox, 162; keeps his place by the sacrifice of his opinions and of America, 168; his bill for prohibiting the trade of all the colonies, and for capturing American vessels, is adopted, 170, 171; defends the treaties with Brunswick and Hesse, 268; will not allow the obnoxious measures of the ministry to be revised, ix. 145; is willing to make concessions, 312; sustains General Sir William Howe, 350; receives information of Burgoyne's surrender, 478; his intense agitation, 478; is willing to concede to America all she demands, 478; his penitence in his old age, 478; the king will not suffer him to flinch, 481; introduces two conciliatory bills, 484; confesses that he never had a policy of his own, 484; astonishment of the assembly, 485; he respects Franklin, 493; attempts an informal negotiation with him, 497; his reply, 497; his weak ministry, x. 37; how his administration was prolonged, 40; Frederic despises him, 100, 102; Frederic's opinion of his ministry, 113; his offers to America rejected, 122; proposes to resign office, and why, 143; wishes to give up the contest, 247; his *bon mot* referring to the Dutch, 258; denounced by Fox, 530; retires from the ministry, 530; his good private character, 531; Macaulay's opinion of him, 531; character of his administration, 531, 552.
- North Carolina, a colony settled on its shores by Raleigh, i. 93, *et seq.*; appearance of the country, 93; the natives described, 94, 98; they become impatient of the presence of the English, 99; the colony lost, 106; Massachusetts and Carolina compared, ii. 128; province of Carolina, its chartered extent, 129; given to proprietaries, 129; claimed by Spain, 130; by Sir Robert Heath, 130; a colony there from New England, 131; this colony of short duration, 132; settlements made from Virginia, 133-135; its first governor, 135, 136; its first assembly, 136; spirit of freedom, 136; planters from Barbadoes settled there, 137; a new charter to the eight proprietaries, 138; a constitution for Carolina made by Lord Shaftesbury and John Locke, 145; thoroughly aristocratic in character, 147; serfdom and slavery allowed, 148; Church of England established, but toleration allowed, 150; the settlers reject the constitution, 153; George Fox visits Carolina, 154; is entertained by the governor, Samuel Stevens, 155; friends of popular liberty resort to Carolina, 157; the settlers oppressed by the navigation acts of England, 158; they rise against their oppressive rulers, 159; establish a free government, 160; the proprietaries yield, 162; Sothel, a rapacious governor, 163; no minister and no church in the province, 164; no city or township, or public roads, or printing press, 165; yet the people were free, contented, and happy, 165; population in 1688, 450; its unbridled liberty, iii. 21; called "the sanctuary of runaways," 21; only one clergyman in the province, 21; Church of England established by law, 21; Quakers in the colony, their influence, 22, 23; insubordination, 23; severity of the laws, 23; increase of the population, 24; Swiss and German colonists, 24; negro slavery, 25; war with the Tuscaroras, 319-321; cruelties of those Indians, 320; expatriation, 321; political state in 1748, iv. 38; population in 1754, 129, 130; social and political condition, 132, 133; spirit of resistance to the stamp act, v. 423; flagrant oppressions there, vi. 35; a meeting of the people, 36; proceedings of governor Tryon, 86; severe and iniquitous oppressions of the people, 183; the regulators, 185; their peaceful conduct, 189; their petition to the governor, 189; his oppressive conduct, 190 (see *Orange County*); a disorganized government and judiciary, 505; contributes to the relief of Boston, vii. 73; the convention of the province adheres to the resolutions of the continental congress, 271 *c*; the king tries to detach this from the other colonies, 282; the people excited by the news from Lexington, 335; its enthusiasm for liberty, viii. 92; Highlanders in the province, 93; spirit of the people on Albemarle Sound, 95; a provincial congress assembles at Hillsborough, 96; its proceedings, 96, 97; emission of paper money, 96; raising a military force, &c., 97; insurrection of the Highlanders, 283, *et seq.*; their total defeat, 289; zeal of the people in the cause of liberty, 289, 290; the Highlanders disarmed, 290; the provincial congress votes an explicit sanction for a declaration of independence, 352; two regiments from this province take part in the defence of Charleston, 398; its civil constitution, ix. 262; heroism of her men, 335, 340; military operations there, 460, *et seq.*; battle at Guilford court-house, 475; the state evacuated by Cornwallis's army, 481; British cruelties in the state, 560.
- North-eastern boundary, 220.
- Northern army, its unsatisfactory condition, viii. 52; invasion of Canada resolved on, 68, 176; Washington urges it, 180; preparations made by Schuyler, 177, 178; the army moves forward, 181; attacked by a party of Indians, 181; Schuyler's indecision, 182; his health obliges him to retire, and the command devolves on Montgomery, 182; great insubordination in the



- army, 183, 185, 186; Ethan Allen taken prisoner, 183, 184; want of ammunition, 185; powder supplied by the capture of Chambly, 183; siege of St. Johns, 182, 187; vain attempts of Carleton to raise the siege, 187; the place surrenders, 188; Montgomery enters Montreal, 188; his junction with Arnold, 201; appears before Quebec, 201; attempts to carry it by assault, 206; is killed, 208; and the attempt fails, 210; effect of Montgomery's death, 415; the American force near Quebec, 415; the command in Canada devolves on Wooster, 415; re-enforcements are sent him, 416; insurmountable obstacles attend the enterprise, 417; wants of the army, 417; difficulty of travel and transportation, 418; time of enlistments of many expires, 420; the new regiments incomplete, 420; the Canadians become hostile, 421; large re-enforcements sent from Washington's army, 421; a general is wanted, 423; Thomas is sent, 423; he arrives, 424; nearly half of the army sick with small-pox, 423, 424; the army scattered and inefficient, 424; compelled to retreat with the utmost precipitation, 425; arrival of British re-enforcements, 425; the Americans retreat to Sorel, 425; Thomas dies of small-pox, 425; Sullivan succeeds him in the command, 429; his self-sufficiency, 429; the army retreats to Isle aux Noix, 433; evacuates Canada, 433; its severe sufferings and great losses, 433; Gates appointed to the command, 432; rivalry between Schuyler and Gates, ix. 338; intrigues of Gates, 339; complaints of Schuyler, 339; Gates placed in independent command, 339; he assumes undue authority, 339; disobeys explicit orders, 340; asks for cavalry, 341; his disrespect towards Washington, 341; removed from his command, 341; Schuyler reinstated, 342; thinks Ticonderoga nearly impregnable, 342; Ticonderoga cannot be defended, 342; Schuyler unpopular with New England troops, 342; Saint Clair takes command at Ticonderoga, 361; the fort untenable, 361; Burgoyne's army in possession of it, 367; and in hot pursuit of Saint Clair, 367, 369; the northern army retreats to Fort Edward, 370; to Saratoga, 373; to Stillwater, 375; to Mohawk river, 376; repulse of Saint Leger at Fort Stanwix, 378-381; defeat and surrender of the Brunswickers at Bennington, 384, 385; the army advances to Stillwater, 406; its strong position, 408; first battle of Bemis's Heights, 409; good conduct of the Americans, 410; American loss, 411; British loss, 411; desperate condition of the British army, 411; second battle of Bemis's Heights, 414, 416; total defeat of the British, 417; surrender of Burgoyne, 420; Gates refuses to send re-enforcements to Washington, 432.
- Northington, Lord-chancellor, insists on the right to tax America, v. 365, 372, 404; becomes president of the council, vi. 22.
- North-west, disputed jurisdiction over it, vii. 161-163.
- Norton, Rev. John, sent to represent Massachusetts in England, ii. 74.
- Norton, Sir Fletcher, is for taxing America, v. 373, 399, 400.
- Nottingham in England, Sir William Howe returned for, vii. 176.
- Nottingham in New Hampshire, sends a body of troops to oppose the British forces, vii. 314.
- Nova Scotia, settlement of, i. 26 (see *Acadia*); a British colony settled there, iv. 45, 46; violent proceedings of the French, 67, 68, 210, 217, 220; always desired by the British, and why, 350.
- Noyes, Nicholas, minister at Salem, his connection with the witchcraft delusion, iii. 90, 93, 98.
- Nugent, Lord, insists on the execution of the stamp act, v. 383, 399, 423.
- Nurse, Rebecca, of Salem village, accused of witchcraft, iii. 86; acquitted, 89; condemned and executed, 90.
- Nye, Philip, a faithful minister, i. 354.

## O.

- Oath of fidelity to the charter government of Massachusetts, i. 362, 371.
- Obedience, passive, this doctrine exploded by the revolution of 1688, iii. 6.
- O'Brien, Captain Jeremiah, and others from Machias, capture a British armed ship, the "Margaretta," vii. 341\*.
- Oconostata, the great Cherokee war chief, iv. 345, *et seq.*
- Ogden, Matthias, a volunteer in the march through the wilderness to Quebec, viii. 191.
- Ogdensburg, Indian mission there, iv. 31, 360.
- Ogle, George, in the Irish House of Commons, denounces the American war, viii. 169.
- Oglethorpe, James, his early history, iii. 418; his disinterested philanthropy, 418, 432; plans an asylum in America for the poor of England, 419; obtains a charter for a new colony, arrives in Georgia, 419; treats with the Indians, 421; begins the settlement of Savannah, 421; obtains the confidence of the red men, 422, 423; guides the Salzburg emigrants to their new home, 425; sails for England, 426; returns to Georgia with a new company, 427; brings with him John and Charles Wesley, 428; visits the Salzburgers, 430; founds Frederica, 430; claims the territory as far as St. John's river, 431; exposed to danger from Spanish hostility, 432; interdicts negro slavery, 434; renews treaty with the Indians, 434; invades Florida, 443; besieges St. Augustine without success, 443; his heroic determination, 445; repels the Spanish inva-



- sion of Georgia, 445, 446; returns to England, 446; his exalted character, 447; dies at near five score, 448; active in the cause of America, vi. 148.
- O'Hara, General, conducts the surrender of Yorktown, 522.
- Ohio company in Virginia, iv. 75; send Gist to explore the country beyond the Alleghanies, 76; open a road over those mountains, 106; begin a fort at the confluence of the Alleghany and Monongahela, 108, 112, 116.
- Ohio river first seen by white men, iii. 159; its banks occupied by the French, 196; even to its head waters, 343; indifference of the English government, 345, 346; the French descend the Ohio, 346.
- Ohio, territory north-west of, ix. 55; claimed by Virginia, 56; question of ownership, 443; an expedition thither, 467.
- Ohio Valley, new English colony to be planted there, iv. 42; formal possession taken by the French, 43; to be colonized from Virginia, 167.
- Ojibwas (see *Chippewas*).
- Old Sarum, almost without inhabitant, sent as many representatives to Parliament as the whole county of York, v. 39.
- Old South Meeting-House, Boston, town meetings held there, vi. 158, 343, 478, vii. 68; turned into a riding-school, viii. 292.
- Olden Barneveldt, John, advocate of Holland, ii. 233; opposes the colonization of America, 234; his execution, 277\*.
- Oldham, John, i. 347; murdered by Pequods, 398.
- Oligarchy, British, its power at the culminating point, v. 265.
- Oliver, Thomas, governor of West New Jersey, iii. 50.
- Oliver, Andrew, secretary of Massachusetts, attends the Congress at Albany, iv. 26; his character, 27; advises the interposition of the king in colonial affairs, 29, 32; distributor of stamps, v. 278; hung in effigy in Boston, 310; is compelled to resign his office, 312; and to reiterate his resignation, 375; urges the British ministry to oppressive measures, vi. 69; rejected from being councillor, 70; wishes to have "the original incendiaries taken off," 251, 253; lieutenant-governor, 385; his letters to persons in power in England, 435; they are sent to Massachusetts, published, and utterly ruin his prospects, 460, *et seq.*; chief-justice of Massachusetts, vii. 108; attempts in vain to hold a court under the regulating act, 108; is in great distress and resigns his office, 115, 116.
- Oneida tribe of Indians, iii. 144, 190, 194; mission to the, viii. 418; friendly to the Americans, ix. 377; some of them in the camp of Gates, 414.
- Onondagas, ii. 415; their wide-spread incursions, 419; magnanimity of a chief, 423; mission among them, iii. 143; encouraging prospects, 144; the mission abandoned, 145; the Onondagas attacked by the French, 190; remarkable fortitude of one of the tribe, 191; join the French colony at Oswegatchie, iv. 123.
- Onslow, Arthur, speaker of the House of Commons, iv. 50.
- Opechancanough, an Indian chief, i. 130; his simplicity, 181; succeeds Powhatan, 181; his treacherous conduct, 182; his capture and death, 208.
- Opinions, ancient, relative to a western continent, i. 6.
- Orange, now Randolph, County, North Carolina, vi. 35; the seat of disturbances in 1768, 185, *et seq.*; gross oppressions there, 184, 381, 382; the oppressors protected and encouraged by the royal government, 186, 190, 382; the "Regulators," 185, *et seq.*, 382; Fanning, an oppressor, 183, 382; Husbands, a benefactor, 35; suffers great wrong, 188, 383; the unrighteous riot act, 383; the regulators put down by the strong hand, 393, *et seq.* (see *Regulators* and *Tryon*).
- Orangeburgh, S. C., surrenders to Sumter, 488.
- Ord, George, in a sloop from Philadelphia captures a public magazine in Bermuda, viii. 69.
- Oregon, first visited by Englishmen, i. 86; visited by Spaniards, 86.
- O'Reilly, Alexander, sent by Spain to recover New Orleans, vi. 265; his arrival, 292; takes possession of the town, 293; by a stratagem arrests the principal inhabitants, 294; puts them to death without mercy, 295.
- O'Reilly, Spanish minister of war, ix. 308.
- Origin of the two great American political parties, vii. 81.
- Oriskany, severe conflict with the Indians there, ix. 379, 380.
- Orloff, Alexis Gregorievitch, Russian minister, viii. 106.
- Orleans, Philip of, regent of France, iii. 323.
- Orloff, Gregory Gregorievitch, favorite of Catharine II., viii. 106.
- Osborne, Sir Danvers, sent out as governor of New York, iv. 103; commits suicide, 104.
- Oswald, Richard, is sent by the British ministry to Paris to negotiate respecting a peace, 536; his character, 536; his interview with Franklin at Paris, 540; his interview with Vergennes, 540; he is sent thither again, 541; his instructions, 541; he may propose independence in the treaty, 546; his powers enlarged, 547; a wide difference between him and Grenville, the other commissioner, 543; a new commission given him, 578; various hinderances to the negotiation, 558, *et seq.*; the treaty signed, 591.
- Oswegatchie, now Ogdensburg, Indian mission there, iv. 31, 123.
- Oswego, a post established there, iii. 339; channel of trade with the West, 339, iv.

- 107; fort built there, 213; description of, 238; captured by Montcalm, 239; left a solitude, 239; Bradstreet finds it such, 305.
- Otho, emperor of Germany, 66, 67.
- Otis, James, the father of Barnstable, slighted by Governor Bernard, iv. 379.
- Otis, James, the son, his eloquence and influence, iv. 379; his great argument against writs of assistance, 415, *et seq.*; effect of the speech, 417, 418; authorities for the speech as printed, 416, 417, *note*; his character, 419; elected representative of Boston, 429; denies the right of England to tax America, 447; his theory of government, 448; his speech in Boston in 1763, v. 90; his memoir on the rights of the colonists, 198, 199; his published views on government, liberty, and natural right, 202-205; his prophetic sagacity, 205; defines the true foundation of human government, 202; denies the right of Parliament to tax America, 204; but counsels submission and patience, 202, 270, 271; his loyalty, 271; suffers reproach both from friends and enemies, 273; proposes a congress of the American people, 279; is elected a member of this congress, 280; chosen speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, vi. 7; the choice vetoed by Bernard, 8; accuses Bernard of having caused the taxation of the colonies, 41; recommends caution, 104; speaks on the side of government, 104; his political "rhapsodies," 118; shrinks from the thought of independence, 118; desires "a general union of the whole British empire under one equal and uniform direction," 118; the letter from the province to its agent in England not written by him, 119, *note*; his indignation strongly excited at the conduct of Governor Bernard, 131; moderator at a town meeting, 158, 196; recommends peace and good order, 159; his speech in the House of Representatives on Lord Hillsborough's letter requiring Massachusetts to rescind its resolves, 163; elected to a convention of the province, 198; representative to the general court, 284; his rencontre with John Robinson, 310; is disordered in mind, 403; a confirmed maniac, 409; a mere wreck, 430; his last public service, 431; killed by lightning, 432.
- Ottagamies (see *Fox Indians*).
- Ottawas, an Indian tribe, iii. 142, 177, 190, 193, 194, 195, 241, 242, iv. 76, 79, 81, 243, 261; Pontiac their chief, 361; near Detroit, v. 116; peace made with them, 210, 211; take up the hatchet against the Americans, ix. 362, 382.
- Ottawa river, iii. 129, 130, 132, 141, 149.
- Our country, its population in 1688, ii. 450; its national character, how formed, 451, *et seq.*; a free people, 452; an Anglo-Saxon people, 452; a Christian people, 453; a Protestant people, 454; influence of Wickliffe, 456; of Luther, 458; of Calvin, 460, *et seq.*; of Quakerism, 463; influence of each of the three races, — white, black, and red, 464; influence of America on Europe, 465; absolute power of Parliament unquestioned, iii. 101; first proposal to tax the colonies, 101; this power always denied in America, 102; the press free here, 102; Episcopacy, 102; personal freedom enjoyed, 103; the judges, how appointed, 103; a commercial monopoly, 104; a negative on the enactment of laws, 105; colonial industry discountenanced, 106, 107; a tendency to independence, 108; the desire of it disclaimed, 109; the time not come, 109.
- Outrage of an English admiral, x. 275.
- Oxenstiern, Axel, Count of Sweden, promotes the settlement of Delaware, ii. 286; chancellor of Sweden, x. 82.
- Oxford University, its address to the king against the Americans, viii. 163.
- Oyster River (now Durham, N. H.), attacked by Indians, iii. 187.

## P.

- Paine, Robert Treat, delegate to the first continental congress, vii. 64; delegate in Congress from Massachusetts, not in favor of independence, viii. 242.
- Paine, Thomas, of Philadelphia, rejects the rule of the king of England, vii. 333; writes an appeal to the people in favor of independence, viii. 140; his previous history, 236; writes "Common Sense," 236; Ru h gives it this title, 236; writes in favor of a strong government, x. 567.
- Paine, Timothy, of Worcester, Massachusetts; a mandamus counsellor, is compelled to resign his commission, vii. 104.
- Palliser, Sir Hugh, admiral, x. 163.
- Pamlico Indians, iii. 239.
- Panin, Nakita Ivanovitch, chief minister of Catharine II., viii. 105; his character, 105, 106; his intercourse with the British minister, 107; Gunning, the minister, applies to him for Russian troops to be employed in America, 151; the request is declined, 153, 155; Panin declines all further discussion, 155; he assures the French minister that it is physically impossible to send the troops, 156; prime minister, 432; his pure character, x. 257; his language to Harris, the British minister, 265, 267; his language to the Prussian minister, 269; his death, 278.
- Paoli, Pascal de, leader of the Corsican insurgents, vi. 176; his failure and arrival in England, 176.
- Paper currency abolished in Massachusetts, iv. 51; retained in Rhode Island, 83; its depreciation in Massachusetts, 51; in Rhode Island, 83.
- Paper money issued, iii. 186, 209, 350, 354, 387, 388; how introduced and sustained, 387; contest between paper and specie, 354; paper made a legal tender, 355; popular frenzy, 355; circulation of gold and

- silver prohibited, 357; the reaction and fearful consequences, 357; lessons of the affair, 357; fluctuations of the currency, 389; advocated by Franklin and others, 388, 390; issued, ix. 468; it depreciates, 468, x. 169, *et seq.* (see *Continental Money, Bills of Credit*).
- Paris, its splendor and gayety, x. 46; state of opinion there concerning America, vii. 351.
- Paris, Isaac, a captive, tortured and murdered by the Indians, ix. 380.
- Parisians sympathized with America, x. 41, 43.
- Parker, John, captain of the minute-men of Lexington, vii. 292; orders given by him, 292; he orders his men to disperse, 293; his company renew the fight, 305.
- Parker, Jonas, of Lexington, is slain at the action there, vii. 293.
- Parker, Moses, of Chelmsford, lieutenant-colonel in Bridge's regiment, wounded and a prisoner, dies in Boston jail, vii. 432.
- Parker, Sir Peter, commodore in the British navy, enters Cape Fear river, viii. 357; resolves to attack Charleston, 358; arrives with his fleet off Charleston, 394, 395; the fleet crosses the bar, 397; delay from various causes, 399, 400; his confidence of an easy victory, 400, 401; arrival of the large ship, the "Experiment," 400; the squadron attack Fort Moultrie, 404; his flag-ship greatly damaged and great slaughter on board, 407, 408; the land forces do not assist, 408; the ships retire very greatly damaged, 410, 411; in New York Bay, ix. 82, 83; convoys the expedition to Rhode Island, 200.
- Parliament, establishment of religion by, i. 279, 282, 285; the church party opposed in, 296; opposition in, to the monopoly of the Plymouth company, 324, *et seq.*; the Long Parliament favors Massachusetts, 416; yet tries to revoke its charter, 439; the attempt defeated, 441; the jurisdiction of, denied, 442; is foiled by Massachusetts, and recedes from its claim, 443, 444; meeting of the Long Parliament, ii. 4; reforms effected, 5; subverts the constitution, 6; the "Remonstrance," 7; exercises despotic power, 9; its division into two parties, 9; strife between army and Parliament, 13; the "purge," 14; Parliament turned out of doors, 19; reassembles, 29; supremacy of Parliament over the colonies asserted, 41; the navigation act, 42; monopoly thus created oppressive, injurious, and manifestly wrong, 43-48; a Parliament nineteen years long, 436; last Parliament of Charles II., 438; monarchy triumphs, 439; supremacy of, established by the English revolution, iii. 2, 7, 9; the king becomes subordinate to it, and how, 8, 9; the revolution partial and one-sided in its operation, 4, 5, 82; Parliament claims absolute power over the colonies, 101, 104, *et seq.*; its oppressive acts, 105, 106; theory of its supremacy, iv. 32, 34; act of Parliament proposed for overruling all charters, 48, 49; the plan abandoned, 50, 51; authority of Parliament to be invoked, 58, 62; proposal to tax the colonies, 101, 115; manner of governing Parliament, 160; Parliament advised to tax America, 167, 171, 172; power of Parliament incessantly invoked, 176; a tax urged by Braddock and the royal governors and others, 178 (see *Taxation*); Parliament establishes a British proconsular power in America, 228; claims control over American legislation, 255; in 1763 wholly aristocratic, v. 38, *et seq.*; its supremacy, 41; its functions, 42, 43; regarded by Grenville as supreme, 180; opposition to its proceedings in New England, 198, 199; debates in, on taxing America, 236, *et seq.*; vehement speech of Barré against it, 240; the stamp act passes, 247; Parliament affirms its right to tax America, 413, *et seq.*; reduces the land tax in England, vi. 59; angry debate touching colonial affairs, 65; Parliament esteems itself master of America, 73; shuts its doors against all complaints and agents from that country, 75, 80; violent language against America, 80; has taken steps which cannot be retraced, 81; venality of, 94; power of, denied in Boston, 96, 97; and by the legislature of Massachusetts, 121, 123, 126; the unrivalled profligacy of the Twelfth Parliament, which taxed America, 137; its shameless corruption, 137; destitute of any principle, unstable in conduct, and impudent in measures, 138; regarded by the colonists as their most dangerous enemy, 139; the Thirteenth British Parliament meets, 147; cost of a seat in, 147; expulsion of Wilkes, 148; reasons why America was not represented in Parliament, 181; Grenville advocates parliamentary reform, 216; meeting of, in 1768, 230; the king's foolish speech, 230; determine to bring America to condign punishment, 233; by a large majority, determine to chastise Boston, 240; and to punish the "instigators of the late disorders," 246, 255; confers on the king additional powers, 510; the vote unanimous, 511; stringent measures adopted for the punishment of Boston, 512-526; its strange infatuation, vii. 24; asserts an absolute domination over the colonies, 24; passes the "regulating act," sweeping away the liberties of Massachusetts, 94; that province sets the act at defiance and practically nullifies it, 108-113; dissolution of the Thirteenth Parliament, 135; the Fourteenth elected, 174; the general venality and corruption, 175; the French minister purchases a seat, 174, 175; Westminster elects Tories, 175, 176; the House of Lords refuses to remove the troops from Boston, 203; the House of Commons refuses to receive petitions in behalf of America, 217, 218; declares Massachusetts in a state of rebellion, 222; address of both houses to the king advising hostile measures against

- the colonies, 227; excludes New England from the Newfoundland fisheries, 240, 253, 265; rejects the petition of New York, 286; the king expects its hearty concurrence, viii. 159; his speech at the opening of, 160, 161; debates upon it, 161-163 (see *House of Commons*); has given up the power to tax the colonies, ix. 72; but not the general power over charters, 73; its supremacy, x. 37, 38 (see *Supremacy*); reform proposed, 549.
- Parliamentary reform, questions relative to it raised by the discussions of the American controversy, viii. 125; advocated by Dr. Price, 362; opinions of French writers and statesmen, 362.
- Parris, Samuel, minister at Salem village, iii. 84; his connection with the witchcraft delusion, 85, 88, 90; driven from Salem village, 98.
- Parry, lieutenant-colonel of Pennsylvanian troops, slain in the battle of Long Island, ix. 92.
- Parsons, Samuel Holden, of Middletown, in Connecticut, plans the capture of Ticonderoga, vii. 338; brigadier of Connecticut troops, in the battle of Long Island, ix. 88, 89; makes his escape from it, 92; shameful flight of his brigade, 119; his operations in Connecticut, 348.
- Parties, state of, in England, favored the king's purposes, vi. 356.
- Party always founded on some truth, viii. 119; the cause of every party is some force which is always present in society, 119.
- Patapsco river, an admirable site for commerce, vii. 49; its colonization, 49.
- Patriot party in Ireland, rise of, v. 75.
- Patriotic song, vi. 179.
- Patronage of the crown, immense, vi. 94; its corrupting influence, 137, 138.
- Patterson, colonel of a New England regiment at Princeton, ix. 250.
- Paulding, John, arrests André, x. 387; the circumstances related, 388; his resolute behavior, 388; his reward, 395.
- Paulet, Earl, votes against taxing America, v. 413.
- Paulli, ensign, taken at Sandusky by the Indians, v. 118.
- Paulus Hook taken by Major Henry Lee, x. 223.
- Pauw, Michael, purchases Staten Island, and what is now Jersey City, ii. 281\*.
- Pawtucket tribe of Indians, iii. 238.
- Paxton, Charles, revenue officer in Boston, iv. 339; marshal of the court of admiralty in Boston, vi. 31; sails for England as the representative of the crown officers, 32; his nefarious schemes, 47, 50; advises the employment of force in aid of the revenue acts, 101; obnoxious to danger in Boston, 102, 103; hung in effigy, 133; calls for troops, 161; objects to paying a small income tax, 404.
- Payson, Phillips, minister of Chelsea, captures two wagons sent with supplies for British troops, vii. 307.
- Peace, negotiations for, with England by France, iv. 393, 439; by the Cherokees with South Carolina, 425; Bedford sent to Paris to negotiate for peace, 439, 442, 443; George III. desires peace, 451; peace of Paris, 1763, 452; the treaty approved by Parliament, 453; the happy results, 455, *et seq.*; between Britain and her colonies, how it might have been secured, vii. 196, *et seq.*; the way to restore it, viii. 359-372; France wishes it, x. 441; Spain wishes it, 442; Austria wishes it, 449; of Utrecht, iii. 226; provisions of the treaty, 227, *et seq.*; changes effected by it, 227, *et seq.*; it contained the seeds of future war, 227, *et seq.*; its effect on Spain, 229; on Belgium, 229; on France, 230; on the Spanish colonies, 231; its most weighty result, the Assiento, 232.
- Peerage, first and last, erected by the English in America, i. 105; of England described, v. 36-38.
- Peirce, William, master of the ship "Lyon," i. 358; sent across the Atlantic for food for the colony, 358.
- Pelham, Henry, prime minister of Great Britain, iv. 42, 45, 51, 66, 87, 100; dies, 157.
- Pelham, Thomas Holles, Duke of Newcastle, favors a war with Spain, iii. 438; orders the expedition to Canada to be abandoned, 464; the supposed reason, 464, iv. 13; becomes colonial minister under Walpole, 18; his ignorance and imbecility, 19; often bestowed office in America on bad men, 20; his temporizing policy, 20, 21; transferred to the northern department, 21; contrasted with Russell, Duke of Bedford, 22; his impatience, 63; wishes to get rid of Bedford, 71; his forbearance towards the colonies, 85; his perfidy towards the Duke of Bedford, 86; becomes prime minister, 159; Pitt solicits a nomination from him, 159; imbecility of the Newcastle administration, 164, 165; Newcastle sends to Madame de Pompadour, 168; undecided whether to attack France or not, 216, 217; gives a subsidy to Russia, 219; tries to obtain the support of Pitt for this treaty, but in vain, 220; Pitt refuses office under him, 247; is superseded in office by Pitt, 247; a new ministry includes him with Pitt, 274; is sent for by the new king, George III., 382; intrigues at court, 383; has little favor with king or people, 390; he and the Duke of Bedford compel the resignation of Pitt, 408, 409; retires from office, 437; end of the old line Whigs, 437.
- Peltrie, Madame de la, establishes the Ursuline Convent at Quebec, iii. 127.
- Pemaquid settled, i. 331; attacked and taken by Indians, iii. 181; again attacked and taken, 189.
- Pemberton, Ebenezer, minister of the New South Church in Boston in 1771, reads the proclamation of Governor Hutchinson, while all the rest refuse, vi. 408; he is known to George III. as a friend to government, vii. 72.



- Pembroke, Mass., its response to the circular from Boston, vi. 439.
- Pendleton, Edmund, a delegate of Virginia in the first continental congress, vii. 273; one of the committee of safety, viii. 81, 82; president of the convention, 377.
- Penn, John, delegate to Congress from North Carolina, viii. 97.
- Penn, Richard, appointed to bear the second petition of Congress to the king, viii. 39; his zeal and celerity, 130; he arrives in London, 130; merits the confidence of the government, 130; yet he is on his arrival totally neglected, 130; the king will not see him, 131; the petition delivered to Lord Dartmouth, but no answer returned, 133; he is examined at the bar of the House of Lords, 165.
- Penn, Thomas and Richard, proprietaries of Pennsylvania, iv. 139, 141; strife with them, 115, 224, 255; favor parliamentary control, 255; their estates taxed, 372; the matter before the board of trade, 373; and privy council, 374; oppose the scheme of American taxation, v. 182; letter quoted, 183, *note*.
- Penn, William, his doctrine of the inner light, ii. 337, 338; he and others purchase East New Jersey, 361; obtains a charter for Pennsylvania, 362; his proclamation to the people of that province, 363; refuses to grant a monopoly of the fur-trade, 365; writes a letter to the Indians, 365; his views of government, 366; obtains a grant of what is now Delaware, 367; lands in Newcastle, Delaware, 338; his previous life, 368-389; at Oxford, 368; at Saumur, 369; in prison for conscience' sake, 370; an outcast, 369, 370; in the Tower, 371; pleads the privilege of an Englishman, 372; inherits a large fortune, 372; pleads for liberty of conscience, 373; again in prison, 373; a Quaker missionary in Germany, 374; appeals to Parliament for universal liberty of conscience, 375; and to the people, 375; connection with Algernon Sydney, 376; turns to the new world, 376; compared with John Locke, 377, *et seq.*; Penn on the Delaware, 389; his great treaty with the Indians, 381; visits Lord Baltimore, 385; discussion with him on boundaries, 386; frame of government for Pennsylvania, 388; his farewell to the people and return to England, 393; his influence with the monarch secures the liberation of the Quakers, 395; resists the commitment of the bishops to the tower, 397; his principles sanctioned by posterity, 397; his enduring fame, 398; yet a slave-holder, 401; his encomium on George Fox, 402. recovers his authority in Pennsylvania, iii. 34; gives liberty to the people, 35; his misfortunes, 39; his property restored, 40; visits Pennsylvania, 41; returns to England, 44.
- Pennacook Indians, iii. 238.
- Pennsylvania, first occupied by Swedes, ii. 287; charter granted to William Penn, 362; a free society of traders organized, 367; Penn's arrival in the province, 380; his great treaty with the Indians, 381; the government organized, 384; dispute with Lord Baltimore on boundaries, 385; frame of government adopted, 388; the first and last trial for witchcraft, 391; emigrants come from England, the Low Countries, Germany and Sweden, 392; Penn's departure, 393; Mason and Dixon's line established, 394; uneasiness in the province, 399; Indian alarm quieted, 399; slavery in Pennsylvania, 401; Penn a slave-holder, 401; the German emigrants decide against slavery, 401; population in 1683, 450; effect of the English revolution, iii. 34; disputes, 35; separation of Delaware, 35; George Keith's schism, 35; resists the magistracy; 35; Pennsylvania a royal province, 37; administration of Fletcher, 37; the assembly resist, 38; Penn recovers his authority, 39, 40; a democratic government, 40; the people rule, 34, 41; the old charter surrendered, 41; the colony refuses to contribute for the defence of New York, 39, 41; condition of the negroes and Indians, 42; new constitution, 43; toleration, 43; collisions between the people and the proprietaries, 44; perfect freedom, 43, 45, 46; Sir William Keith, the governor, urges the erection of a fort on Lake Erie, 345; the people restive under restraint, 394; voluntary militia system devised by Franklin, 456; spirit of freedom in, iv. 39; does nothing to repel French encroachments, 88, 115; population in 1754, 129, 130; political and social condition, 139, *et seq.*; great freedom enjoyed, 140, 141; predominant influence of Franklin, 140, 141; strife with the proprietaries, 115, 224, 255; refuses grants of money, but issues bills of credit, 175; the frontier ravaged by Indians, 225; Franklin placed in command, 225, 226; a proposal to overrule the charter, 230; militia law repealed by the king in council, 231; flourishing state of the province, 253; population, 253; liberty enjoyed, 253, 254; Franklin chosen agent to England, 254; sends a strong force against Fort Duquesne, 308; leads the van of liberal principles, 372; taxes the estates of the proprietaries, 372; the province reprimanded by the king for disobedience to his instructions, 441, 442; in Pontiac's war, v. 124; impatient of the proprietary government, 218; protests against parliamentary taxation, 219; sends Franklin to England to defend its liberties, 220; sends a strong force under Bouquet into the Ohio country, 221; accepts the proposal of an American Congress, 328; represented in the Congress, 334, 346; spirit of the province, 377; its imports from England, 429; is greatly under the influence of Dickinson, vii. 44; its convention, echoing his opinions, recommends paying for the tea, and advises gentle methods, 82; but chooses delegates to a general congress, 82, 83; resists the en-

croachments of Lord Dunmore, 162; the legislature approve the proceedings of the continental congress, 211; a proposal for manumission of slaves, 271*b*; the spirit of liberty bold and defiant, 332, 333; the assembly resolves to maintain a union with the other colonies, 333; the province wants a continued union with Britain, 377; riflemen from it join the army before Boston, viii. 64; the ardent patriots of the province held under restraint, 72; Dickinson guides the proceedings of the convention, 72; the first and second conventions, 72, 73; the loyalists have a majority in the House of Representatives, 72, 73; mistaken policy pursued, 74; influence of the proprietary governor, 74; insincerity of the assembly, 74; appoints a committee of safety, 75; a new legislature organized, and all its members take the oath of allegiance to the king, 114; it pursues the Quaker policy, 115; the legislature alarmed, 138; unhappy influence of Dickinson, 138; he reports a set of instructions for the delegates in Congress, enjoining on them to resist a separation from England, 139; the mischievous consequences, 139; friends of the proprietary government opposed to independence, 242, 323; a convention of the people opposed by them, 323, 324; the representation enlarged, 326; measures of the assembly, 326; it renews its instructions against independence, 327; the "moderate men" carry the elections, 355; the Germans not allowed to vote unless naturalized, and naturalization involved allegiance to the king, 355; the popular party hold the proprietary government as virtually dissolved, 385; incapacity of the existing government, 386; a strong popular movement for independence, 386; a conflict of parties, 387; one party conservative, the other progressive, 387; Dickinson stands between the two, 387; the assembly become uneasy, 388; new instructions to the delegates in Congress, 388; provincial conference of the committees of the several counties, 443; the proprietary government dies out, 444; reform demanded, 444; new men brought forward, 444; a new government, 445; all taxpayers allowed to vote, 445; a religious test imposed, 446; a unanimous vote for independence, 446; divided in opinion in respect to a civil constitution, ix. 170; its convention, 170; the new constitution, 170; its grave defects, 171; it disfranchises Quakers and others, 171; provides for only a single legislative assembly, 171; the state rent into factions, 171; a counter-revolution desired, 171; a party for absolute and unconditional submission, 172; urgent appeal to the people to rise in arms for the defence of their state, 202; many of the people unfriendly, 225; Pennsylvania militia at Princeton, 249; Congress exercises a temporary control, 338; the militia do not repair to Washington's camp at the

approach of danger, 392; a factious spirit prevails, 401; the people will not rise, 423, 433; the council and assembly remonstrate against going into winter quarters, 459; Washington's reply, 459; condition of his army, 459, 465; leads in the abolition of slavery, x. 360; part of the Pennsylvania line in the army revolts, 415; they refuse to join the enemy, 416.

Pensacola occupied by Spaniards, iii. 200, 353; captured by the French and recovered by Spain, 353; its excellent harbor, vi. 27.

Pensioner, Dr. Johnson's definition of one, vii. 258; he has himself become one, 258.

People, sovereignty of the, v. 30; people of America, their opinions, 285, *et seq.*; their rights as Englishmen, 286, 344, 385, *et seq.*; the Declaration of Independence emanated from them, viii. 247, 248; their powerful agency in all reforms, 248; their common-sense must bear rule, 248.

Peoria Indians, 197.

Peoria, Lake, visited by La Salle, iii. 165.

Pepperell, its cheering answer to Boston in 1774, vii. 99.

Pepperell, William, commands the expedition against Louisburg, iii. 458.

Pequod Indians, i. 397; murder of Oldham by them, 398; their fort destroyed and hundreds of them slain, 400; the tribe exterminated, 402.

Percy, Earl, brings re-enforcements to the British troops in their flight from Concord, vii. 306, 307; by great effort brings off the troops, 309; he calumniate the Americans, 318, 319; dares not mingle in the conflict at Bunker Hill, 413; appointed to attack Dorchester Heights, viii. 237; is compelled to make no attack, 257, 298; in the battle of Long Island, ix. 87; moves on Fort Washington, 179; his feeble attack, 191; assists in the expedition to Rhode Island, 200.

Periodical press, the, original of, in America, iii. 374.

Personal freedom secured by the American revolution, iv. 13.

Peter III. of Russia makes an alliance with Frederic II., iv. 434; his generous conduct towards him, 435; murdered, 454.

Peters, Hugh, arrives in Boston, i. 383; goes to England as agent for the colonies, 416; his character and death, ii. 32, 33; misrepresentations concerning him, 33, *note*.

Petersham, Massachusetts, its patriotic declaration against British aggression, vi. 442.

Petitions of the colonies rejected without a hearing, vi. 144, 234, 236.

Petty, William (see *Shelburne, Earl of*).

Philadelphia founded by William Penn, ii. 387; its rapid growth, 392; first newspaper there, iii. 374; proposed as the seat of government for the united colonies, iv. 123;

- meeting of governors there, 252; a diversity of sentiment in regard to resistance, vii. 43; moderate measures proposed, 45; a committee of correspondence appointed, 45; a letter to Boston advises slower movements, 45; the bells tolled and the houses shut on account of the blockade of Boston, 57; thirty military companies daily practise the manual exercise, 333; the largest city in the land, 377; remonstrates against the tame conduct of the legislature, viii. 114; a temporizing spirit prevails, 355; the "moderate men" succeed at the elections, 355; great meeting for independence in the State House yard, 385; votes of the meeting, 386; independence proclaimed there, ix. 32; the spirit of a counter revolution, 171; approach of a British army, 202; measures taken for defence, 202; proposal to burn the city, 209; first celebration of the Fourth of July, 357; panic on the approach of Howe's army, 401; Cornwallis takes possession of the city, 404; Philadelphia of no military importance, 422; the forts below, 422; loss of an American frigate there, 423; two British ships of war destroyed, 431; Forts Mifflin and Mercer evacuated, 434, 435; the city strongly fortified by the British, 452; occupied by British troops, x. 121; British commissioners arrive there, 122; evacuated by the British, 124; departure of the commissioners, 125; thousands of the inhabitants leave the city, 124.
- Philadelphia merchants unanimously adopt the system of non-importation of British goods, vi. 272; the system modified and restricted, 317; it is confined to the single article of tea, 365; resolute stand taken against taxation by Parliament, 470; the tea-ship arrives and is sent back to London, 488.
- Philip of Anjou becomes king of Spain, iii. 226, 223.
- Philip of Hesse embraces Protestantism, x. 78.
- Philip of Orleans, regent of France, iii. 323.
- Philip of Pokanoket, rejects Christian instruction, ii. 97; his jealousy of the English, 100; the war of 1675 not designed on his part, 101; a fugitive, 102; his death, 108; his son sold as a slave, 109.
- Philips, general under Burgoyne, ix. 362; invests Ticonderoga on the south side, 366; in the battle of Bemis's Heights, 409, 415; commands the British force in Virginia, x. 408; dies there, 499.
- Phillips, George, first minister at Watertown, i. 353\*.
- Phillips, William, of Boston, vi. 330, 343; his share in public meetings concerning the tea party, 473, 482; negatived as a councillor, vii. 48.
- Philosophy of France incapable of guiding a revolution, vii. 29; of Hume, as prevalent in Europe, viii. 366.
- Phips, Sir William, his early history, iii. 83; governor of Massachusetts, 83; arrives in Boston, 87; appoints a court for the trial of witches, 88; his connection with the witchcraft delusion, 83; captures Port Royal in Acadia, iii. 184; commands the ill-fated expedition against Quebec, 185; returns to Boston, 186.
- Phipps, of Cambridge, high-sheriff, resigns his office, vii. 115.
- Physiocrats of France, a school of political economists, v. 26.
- Piankeshaw Indians friendly to the English, iv. 79, 80; their great chief taken captive by French Indians, 95.
- Pickens, Andrew, of South Carolina, viii. 87; pursues and captures a body of Tories, x. 238; joins Morgan, 460, 463; his able conduct at Cowpens, 434, 470; made a brigadier-general, 466; his efficient co-operation with Greene, 485, 489, 493.
- Pickering, Colonel Timothy, fails to bring his regiment into action at Bunker Hill, vii. 309; quartermaster-general, x. 407.
- Picqua, a town of the Miami Indians, iv. 78; important treaty there, 79; this town attacked and destroyed by French Indians, \*94, 95.
- Pineckney, Charles, president of the provincial congress of South Carolina, vii. 205; takes measures for the defence of the colony, 336; his unworthy conduct, x. 330.
- Pineckney, Charles Cotesworth, of South Carolina, he and others take possession of Fort Johnson, viii. 90; his courageous reply to the royal governor, 90; assists in the defence of Charleston, 403.
- Pineckney, Thomas, aid to General Gates, x. 317.
- Picquet, Francis, Abbé, missionary to the Indians at Ogdensburg, iv. 31.
- Pierce, John, trustee for the Pilgrims, obtains a patent for them, i. 320; his treachery, 329.
- Pigot, brigadier-general, at Charlestown, vii. 413; leads the left wing of the British, 422, 425; his gallantry, 432; commands a British force on Rhode Island, x. 148.
- Pijart, Claude, missionary among the Hurons, iii. 129; among the Algonquins, 130.
- Pilgrims, the, their church in the north of England, i. 299; assert the rights of conscience, 299; seek safety in exile, 300; retire to Holland, 301; settle at Leyden, 301; inconveniences there, 302; resolve on emigration, 302; their patriotism, 303; negotiate with the London Virginia company, 303; petition the king, 304; obtain a patent, which proves of no service, 305\*; propose to settle on the Hudson, 305\*; the plan fails, 305\*; form a partnership with merchants of London, 306; they set sail for America, 306; their voyage, 308; made at the right period, 308; arrive at Cape Cod, 309; their political compact, 209; search for a convenient residence, 311; voyage in the "Shallon," 312; the landing at Plymouth, 313; their difficulties and hinderances, 313; their sufferings, 310-



- 315; want of food, 315; system of common property abandoned, 315; intercourse with the Indians, 316, 317; the partnership dissolved, 319; they obtain a patent, 320; but not a charter, 321; character of the colony, 322; its claims on our gratitude, 323.
- Pillage by British troops, x. 223, 226, 227.
- Pinet, Jesuit missionary in Illinois, iii. 196.
- Pitcairn, major of marines at Lexington, vii. 22; orders the troops to fire on the people, 233; destroys stores at Concord, 300; is compelled to a hasty retreat, 304, 305; mortally wounded at Bunker Hill, 429.
- Pitkin, Timothy, his history corrected, vi. 48, *note*.
- Pitkin, William, elected governor of Connecticut, vi. 14.
- Pitt, William, Earl of Chatham, favors a war with Spain, iii. 438; the Great Commoner, iv. 159; solicits the patronage of Newcastle, 159; opposes Newcastle's party in the Commons, 161; opposes the treaty with Russia, 220; Newcastle tries to win him to his side, 220; attacks the Russian subsidy and retires from office, 220; connects himself with Prince George, the heir-apparent, 244; ineffectual attempt of Newcastle to negotiate with him, 246; supersedes Newcastle as prime minister, 248; protects American liberty, 249; possesses no real power, 250; the king dismisses him from office, 250; the foremost man in England, 272; forms a ministry, including Fox and Newcastle, 274; compared with Cromwell, 274; takes the colonial department, 274; the man of the people, 275; his commanding genius and remarkable achievements, 275, 276; the Great Question of the day, 277; Pitt offers to restore Gibraltar, 281; invites the colonies to unite with England in the conquest of Canada, 291; a friend to liberty and the rights of America, 292; derives information from Franklin, but without seeing him, 315, 376, *note*; his plans for 1759, 315, 376, *note*; is cheerfully seconded by all the Northern colonies, 319; rejoices over the relief of Quebec, 359; is desirous of peace, 363; and of retaining Canada, 369; never favored encroachment on the liberties of America, 375; never threatened interference, 376; is disliked by the young king, George III., 383; the great stain on his memory, 396; chooses to continue the war, 396; wishes the utter humiliation of France, 399; refuses a participation in the fisheries, 400; has knowledge of the family compact, 404; and of the special convention, 405; his vast designs, 406; proposes a war with Spain, 407; all the cabinet, save Earl Temple, oppose the measure, 408; Pitt resigns office, 409; accepts a pension, 410; a peerage conferred on his wife, 410; Pitt speaks against the treaty of 1762, 453; refuses to take office with Bedford, v. 141; the king invites him to enter the ministry, 143; terms on which Pitt would accept office, 144; a second interview with the king, 146; the king rejects his terms, 146; he declines office, 262; the king sends for him again, 296; disagreement between Pitt and Temple, 297; Pitt disapproves the stamp act, 297; cannot take office, 298; in feeble health, 381, 382; his great speech in Parliament, denying its right to tax America, 383-387; his crushing reply to Grenville, 391-395; Grafton advises the king to send for Pitt, 396; the king refuses, 396; Grafton sees Pitt, 397; Pitt is willing to act with the Rockingham ministry, on the plan of relinquishing all right to tax America, 397; pronounces the essay of John Adams on the feudal law masterly, 398; advocates the reception of the petition of the American Congress, 399; contends strenuously for the rights of America, 415, 416; speaks in favor of the repeal of the stamp act, 434; almost adored by the people, 436; speaks against the declaratory bill, 444; his last speech in the House of Commons, 457; receives the thanks of Massachusetts, vi. 13; a statue to him in New York, 15; his prostrated health, 18; his ill success, 18; invited by the king to form a new administration, 19; forms a most liberal cabinet, 22; is insulted by Rockingham, 23; becomes Earl of Chatham, 24; by this means is bereft of all his power, 25; the only point of his agreement with the king 25; denies the right of Parliament to tax the colonies, x. 39; promotes the cause of liberty in both hemispheres, 86 (see *Chatham, Earl of*).
- Pitt, William, the younger, accompanies his father to the House of Lords, ix. 494; condemns the war, x. 482; favors peace with America, 529; not in favor of American independence, 552; proposes a reform in Parliament, 549; becomes a member of the Shelburne administration, 552; chancellor of the exchequer, 553.
- Pittsburgh, originally Fort Duquesne, its probable destiny foreseen by Washington, iv. 109; a fort there commenced by the Ohio company, 108, 112, 116; Virginia refuses to build a fort there, 88 (see *Duquesne Fort*); Lord Dummore takes possession of it, and of its dependencies, vii. 162.
- Plymouth colony, settlement of, i. 309; sufferings, 314; intercourse with natives, 317; slow progress of population, 321; civil constitution, 322; trading house at Windsor, 395; proceedings of the royal commissioners, ii. 84; population in 1675, 93; sufferings in "Philip's war," relieved, in part, from Ireland, 109.
- Plymouth company in England, the first, i. 120, 267, 269; the second, 271; its very ample privileges, 272, 273; grants a patent to the Leyden Pilgrims, 305\*; their monopoly opposed in Parliament, 324; opposed by those concerned in the fisheries, 325; they fail to keep off the fishermen, 326; convey to Robert Gorges a portion of Mas-



- sachusetts, 323; efforts of the company paralyzed, 327; their grant to the Massachusetts company, 340.
- Plymouth, town of, the people almost unanimous in opposition to Britain, vi. 431, 438; compels George Watson to resign his commission, vii. 105.
- Pleasant River, in Maine, volunteers from this place and Machias capture a British armed ship, vii. 341\*.
- Pocahontas saves the life of Smith, i. 131; befriends the colony, 132; stolen by Argal, 146; is married to John Rolfe, 147; visits England, 147; dies there, 147.
- Point Levi, in Canada, the American forces arrive there, viii. 196, 197.
- Point Pleasant, at the confluence of the Kanawha and Ohio, great battle there, vii. 168, 169.
- Poisson, du, Jesuit missionary in Arkansas, iii. 361; killed by the Natchez Indians, 362.
- Pokanoket Indians, their location, i. 317; treaty with them, 317; their numbers, ii. 97; their chief seats, 99; reject Christian instruction, 99; war with them, 100, *et seq.*; they are driven from their homes, 102; death of Philip, and extermination of the tribe, 108, iii. 238.
- Poland, partition of, vi. 424, 527.
- Political power declared to be a trust, iii. 6, 8.
- Polk, Thomas, a leading patriot in North Carolina, vii. 371, 373.
- Poll-tax proposed, iv. 167, 222, 223.
- Pombal, Sebastian, Marquis of, prime minister of Portugal, x. 47, 51.
- Pomeroy, Seth, an officer in the expedition against Louisburg, iii. 460, iv. 212; elected brigadier-general of the Massachusetts forces, vii. 228; goes as a private soldier to the combat near Bunker Hill, 417; his gallant demeanor, 430; of Northampton, Massachusetts, elected brigadier-general, viii. 30; he declines, 30.
- Pompadour, Marchioness of, a licentious but attractive woman, mistress of Louis XV., vi. 424; her great political influence, vii. 30, 31.
- Ponce de Leon, Juan, his early history, i. 31, *et seq.*; discovers Florida, 33; mortally wounded, 34.
- Ponsonby, in the Irish House of Commons, opposes the American war, viii. 169.
- Pontiac, chief of the Ottawas, his meeting with Rogers, iv. 362, v. 113; his origin, once a captive, 113; his character, 114; his attempt to surprise Detroit, 116; commences hostilities, 117; sends emissaries to Illinois, 117; a reward offered for his assassination, 132; end of the war, 164; his friendly conduct, 338; assassinated in time of peace, vi. 297; the Indians avenge his death, 298.
- Poor, colonel of a New England regiment at the battle of Princeton, ix. 250; general in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 416.
- "Poor Richard," frigate, her fight with the "Scrapis," x. 271.
- Popham, George, president of the colony at Sagadahoc, i. 268; dies, 268.
- Popham, Sir John, embarks in the scheme of colonizing Virginia, i. 119; and in the affair of settling New England, 267; dies, 268.
- Population of the colonies in 1675, ii. 92; in 1688, 450; of the old thirteen colonies, iv. 127, *et seq.*; of the valley of the Mississippi in 1768, vi. 223, 224; of the thirteen colonies in 1774, vii. 128.
- Port of Boston, act for closing it, vii. 34; the act received, 35; the effect on the people, 35, 36; the effect on other colonies, 42, *et seq.* (see *Boston Port Bill*).
- Porter, Asahel, of Woburn, slain at Lexington, vii. 294.
- Porterfield, Charles, a sergeant under Morgan, viii. 63; lieutenant-colonel in South Carolina, x. 317; repulses the enemy, 320.
- Portland, in Maine, bombarded by the British ship "Canceaux," vii. 341.
- Port Royal, in Acadia, founded, i. 26; burned by Argal, 148; surrenders to the English arms, 334, iii. 186; again surrenders, 218; its name changed to Annapolis, 218.
- Port Royal, S. C., settled, ii. 174; attacked by Indians, iii. 327.
- Ports of the united colonies, Congress refuses to open them, viii. 58, 59; they are finally opened, 323.
- Portsmouth settled, i. 328, 329.
- Portsmouth, N. H., makes common cause with the colonies, vi. 485; seizure of arms and powder at, vii. 183, 184; averse to separation from England, viii. 243.
- Portugal unfriendly to the United States, x. 51.
- Portuguese discoveries before Columbus, i. 7, iii. 113; voyage of discovery to North America, i. 16 (see *Cortereal*); Portuguese colonies, iii. 113.
- Post-office arrangement on the Chesapeake, iii. 34; established by Congress, viii. 57; organized by Franklin, 57.
- Potawatomi invite a mission, iii. 151; give shelter to Tonti, 167; attack the Iroquois, 190; mentioned, 242; unite in the design to drive out the English, v. 113, 116, 119.
- Potemkin, Gregory Alexandrovitch, Russian field-marshal and favorite of Catharine II., viii. 106; his character and habits, x. 268.
- Potter, General, with a party of militia, cuts off supplies from the British, ix. 428.
- Poutrincourt, a lieutenant of De Monts, settles Port Royal, i. 26; attempts to colonize New England, 27.
- Powell, Thomas, of South Carolina, unjustly imprisoned, vi. 471; released, 471.
- Power, new principles of, iv. 12.
- Powhatan, great Indian chief of Virginia, i. 125; Smith brought to him as a captive, 131; friendly to the colonists, 181; his death, 181.
- Pownall, John, secretary of the board of trade, iv. 375, *note*.

- Pownall, Thomas, comes to America, iv. 103, 126; his estimate of the population of British America, 128, *note*; Governor of Massachusetts, 297; complains of that province, and predicts independence, 297; often reiterates this prediction, 369; contends for American taxation, v. 181; eulogizes Grenville, 191, 251; proposes the repeal of the revenue acts, vi. 267, 273; and of the duty on tea, 353; insists on the dependence of the colonies, 510; favors the Boston port bill, 514; a warm friend to the United States, x. 142; predicts their future greatness, 235, *et seq.*
- Poyning's law enacted to restrain the holding of Irish parliaments, v. 62; proposed as a good precedent for America, 62.
- Pratt, Benjamin, of Boston, made chief justice of New York, "at the king's pleasure," iv. 427; dislikes this new tenure of office, 427; proposes a permanent salary, and dependence of the colony on the crown, 440.
- Pratt, Charles, afterwards Earl of Camden, speaks for colonial liberty, iv. 230; becomes attorney-general, 274; appears in behalf of the proprietaries of Pennsylvania, 373; foretells American independence, 380; predicts for the young and obstinate king, George III., "a weak and inglorious reign," 387; chief justice of England sets Wilkes at liberty, v. 105; becomes Earl of Camden, 305 (see *Camden, Earl of*).
- Prerogative, government founded on, iv. 32.
- Presbyterian discipline excluded from New England, i. 444; Presbyterian party in England, ii. 9, *et seq.*; tries to dispense with the army, 14; Presbyterian members of Parliament excluded, 14; resume their seats, 30.
- Presbyterians, Scotch, of Ireland, v. 76; their emigration to America, 76.
- Presbyterian party in North Carolina, vi. 383.
- Presbyterians in Philadelphia, vii. 43; of Baltimore, 49, 207\*; of the Holston Valley, 194; of South-western Virginia, 194; they meet in council, 194; their patriotic resolutions, 195, 196.
- Prescott, a British brigadier, abuses Ethan Allen, his prisoner, viii. 184; is himself taken prisoner, with all his command, 199; commander of the British forces on Rhode Island, ix. 200; taken prisoner by Colonel Barton, 358; exchanged for Lee, 358.
- Prescott, Samuel, of Concord, escapes from his pursuers, vii. 290.
- Prescott, William, of Pepperell, a brave man, vi. 447; his resolute answer in behalf of that town to the appeal from Boston, vii. 99; hastens to join in the pursuit of the British, 307; guards the entrance to Boston, 313; has orders to march to Breed's Hill, 408, 409; his unshaken courage, 411; his orders to reserve fire till the enemy were near, 423; gives the word "fire!" 424; the result, 424-426; Prescott has no more powder, 427; gives the word to retreat, 429; his self-possession, 429; though in extreme danger, he escapes unhurt, 430; his remarkable bravery, 431; offers with three fresh regiments to recover his post, 431; at New York, ix. 82; in command at Governor's Island, 82; his regiment withdrawn, 109; guards the causeway from Frog's Neck, 175.
- Presque Isle, now Erie, capitulates to the Indians, v. 122.
- Press, censorship of the, ceases in England, iii. 11; full liberty allowed, 12; of America defies the stamp act, v. 352-354; of Boston, its reasonings concerning liberty, vi. 97, 102; urges a union of the colonies, 466, 469 (see *Boston Gazette*, and *Edes & Gill*); of New England, favors a declaration of independence, viii. 219, 220.
- Preston, Captain Thomas, orders the troops to fire on the town's people in Boston, vi. 338, 347; examination of the testimony, 347, *et seq.*; his trial and acquittal, 373.
- Prevost, General, plans to invade Georgia, x. 155, 234; takes Sunbury, 286; invades South Carolina, 290; plunders plantations, 294; defends Savannah, 296.
- Prevost, Lieutenant-Colonel, surprises General Ashe in Georgia, x. 289.
- Price, captain of a Maryland company in the army round Boston, viii. 64.
- Price, Dr. Richard, his able pamphlet on Liberty, viii. 361; his definition of liberty, 362; honored by the city of London, 362; advocates parliamentary reform, 362; Congress invite him to be their fellow-citizen, x. 172.
- Prideaux, General, besieges Fort Niagara, iv. 321; is killed, 321.
- "Pride's purge," ii. 14.
- Priestcraft, its influence weakened, and how, v. 3.
- Primogeniture abolished in Virginia, ix. 280.
- Princeton, battle of, Washington concentrates his forces at Trenton, ix. 243; his plan for the deliverance of New Jersey, 240, 246; his night march to Princeton, 246, 247; the battle commences, 248; exposure of Washington to danger, 249; the enemy take to flight, 249, 250; losses of the British, 250; of the Americans, 250; Mercer slain, 248, 250; effect of the victory, 251.
- Pring, Martin, visits the harbors of Maine and New Hampshire, and lands in Massachusetts, i. 114, 327.
- Printing, first, executed in the United States, i. 415.\*
- Prisoners inhumanly treated, x. 286, 329; the faith of British generals broken towards them, 329; vast numbers of them perished, 329.
- Privateers authorized to be fitted out against British ships, viii. 320; American, their great success, ix. 134, 467, 473; British, their ravages, x. 264.
- Privateer "General Mifflin," x. 257.
- Private judgment, right of, affirmed, v. 4.
- Proctor, Edward, captain of the guard placed over the Dartmouth tea-ship, vi. 478.

- Proctor, Elizabeth, accused of witchcraft, iii. 86; reprieved, 92.
- Proctor, John, accused of witchcraft, iii. 87; executed, 92.
- Progress everywhere manifest, iv. 7, 8; this progress never-ceasing, 9; in intelligence, 8; in religion, morality, and social life, 11.
- Prophecies of the New Testament supposed to have reference to American affairs, vi. 168.
- Proprietary governments, a blow at, viii. 368.
- Protection to neutral vessels resolved on by the northern powers, x. 277.
- Protestantism, shall it prevail, or be overpowered by popery and feudalism, iv. 277; this the great question of the time, 277; the Catholic powers leagued against it, 278; ceases to be a cause of revolutions, v. 3, 4; the successes of the Seven-Years' War favorable to it, 3; powerful in Germany, x. 85, *et seq.*
- Providence of God should be recognized in history, iii. 399; notwithstanding the apparent sway of human passion, 400.
- Providence, R. I., founded by Roger Williams, i. 379; denied admission to the New England confederacy, 422; welcomes Roger Williams on his return, 426; its address to Sir Henry Vane, 428; attack on it by Indians, ii. 107; complains of British insolence, vi. 418 (see *Gaspee*); votes for a congress of all the colonies, vii. 42.
- Provincial congress, the house of representatives of Massachusetts resolves itself into one, vii. 153; they remonstrate with Gage, 154; measures adopted by them, 154; denounced by Gage as an unlawful assembly, 182; adopts all the recommendations of the continental congress, 182; their brave words to the people of Massachusetts, 182; resolves to raise an army, 314; its address to the inhabitants of Britain, 342; remonstrates against the abandonment of Ticonderoga, 365.
- Prussia, its rising greatness, x. 81, 84, 86; accedes to the armed neutrality, 430 (see *Frederic*); and its king, at the close of the Seven Years' War, v. 6; tolerated every creed, 6.
- Prussia (see *Frederic II.*)
- Prynne, William, mutilated, i. 410; his eloquence, ii. 14.
- Publication of the truth no libel, iii. 394.
- Pulaski, Count Casimir, engages in the American cause, ix. 296; his fearless courage at Brandywine, 400; his command surprised, x. 152; comes to the defence of Charleston, 291, 293; is mortally wounded at Savannah, 297.
- Pulteney, William, Earl of Bath, promotes a war with Spain, iii. 437, 438; a friend of American liberties, iv. 363; is desirous of retaining Canada after its conquest, 363; eulogizes *Frederic II.*, 364.
- Puritanism disallowed in Virginia, i. 178; yet some Puritans live there, 206; and in Maryland, 257; Puritan ministers invited, 206; but silenced and sent away, 207; Puritans in Maryland, their intolerance, 261; their energy and courage, 262; a powerful party, 263; rise of Puritanism in England, 278; what is Puritanism? 279; many of them exiles, 281; the party of reform, 282; the champions of liberty, 284; desired not a schism, 286; but reform, 288; averse to popery, 289; Queen Elizabeth displeased with them, 284; favored by the people, 284; the Protestantism of England due to them, 289; Hooper and Rogers, Puritans, 280; increase in number and power, 291; could not be crushed, 291; conference at Hampton Court, 295; the Puritans hated by the king, but favored by the Commons, 297; severities endured by them, 297; frivolous acts made penal, 298; Puritanism the fundamental idea of Massachusetts, 343; the Puritans summoned to America by the voice of God, 350; confidence reposed in them, 429; character of Puritanism: its peculiarities, its excellencies, its spirit of independence, courage, and hope, its benign results, 460, *et seq.*; the Puritans, in their treatment of dissentients, acted in self-defence merely, 463; mildness of their legislation, 465; their care for posterity, 466; their many virtues, 467; Puritanism compared with chivalry, 468; Puritanism loses its power in England, ii. 40.
- Purviance, Samuel, of Baltimore, arrests Governor Eden, viii. 354.
- Putnam, Israel, of Connecticut, at Lake George, iv. 210; a major in the army of Abercrombie, 1758, 298; a prisoner to the Indians, 305; his narrow escape from a frightful death, 305; at the conquest of Havana, 444; in Bradstreet's expedition, v. 210; active in the cause of liberty in 1766, 378, 441, vii. 73; visits Boston with supplies of provisions, 101; his undaunted demeanor before British officers, 101; he summons the militia in his vicinity to take up arms in aid of Boston, 120; his animating language, 121; rushes from agricultural toils to the strife of war on hearing of the combat at Concord, 315; his marvellous speed, 315; brigadier of the Connecticut troops near Boston, 325; he is stationed at Cambridge, 405; wishes to occupy Prospect Hill, 406; hastens to the impending conflict at Bunker Hill, 410, 412; at the rail-fence, 418; his great activity, 420; cheers on the men, 424; bids them reserve their fire, 424; assumes the supreme direction, 431; occupies Prospect Hill, 431; chosen major-general, viii. 29; his previous career, 29; his character, 29; has command on Prospect Hill, near Boston, 43, 61; is regarded as incompetent to command the army in Canada, 423; undertakes the obstruction of Hudson river, ix. 81; takes command on Long Island, 85; his incapacity for command, 88, 89; his rash order to Lord Stirling, 88, 89; the disasters of the day chiefly due to his incapacity, 96; escape of his division on New York Island, 120, 121; in the action near



Manhattanville, 127; undertakes to obstruct Hudson river, 167; his obstructions prove to be of no value, 174; at Mount Washington, 175; his overweening confidence, 184; he crosses into the Jerseys, 186; is in command at Philadelphia, 202, 214; promises not to burn the city, 214; fails to assist Washington in attacking the British posts on the Delaware, 225, 228; his foolish conduct, 403; his unsuitness for command, 412; his want of sagacity, 412; his blunders, 413; his intense alarm, 414; disregards the orders of Washington, 432. Putnam, Rufus, the engineer, viii. 293, ix. 110.

## Q.

Quakers, the early, described, i. 451; some arrive in Boston, 452; severities against them, 452, *et seq.*; four put to death, 455; their own conduct provoked the fatal issue, 458; in North Carolina, ii. 153; banished from Virginia, i. 231, ii. 201; yet they multiply, 202; their sufferings in Maryland, 237; in New Netherland, 300; the faith of Quakers, 326, *et seq.*; progress of intellectual freedom and political liberty in England, 327; advancement of science, 328; origin of Quakerism, 330; George Fox, 331; the inner light, 333, 337; the instinct of a Deity, 338; method of Descartes, 338; liberty of conscience, 339; emancipation from superstition, 340; the inner light, not the Bible, guides the Quaker, 342; their disinterested virtue and purity of life, 345; reject capital punishment, and the right of self-defence, 346; reject religious rites of all kinds, 347; refuse an oath, 347; condemn the theatre, and appear in sober attire, 347; eschew a paid ministry, 348; pay no tithes, 349; believe in human progress, 350; and in human essential equality, 352; everywhere exposed to persecution, 354; purchase West New Jersey, 355; civil constitution established there, 357; their controversy with the Duke of York, 358; decided in their favor, 360; their first legislative assembly, 360; the measures adopted, 360 (see *William Penn and George Fox*); opinions of Quakers concerning slavery, 401; Buckingham pretends to favor them, 434; Quaker colonies enumerated, 402; in Pennsylvania, their principles, iv. 141; jealous of the younger Penns, 141; wish to abolish proprietary rule, 176; negotiate with the Delawares, 231; a majority in the assembly, 254; oppose the Revolution, viii. 245, 274; disfranchised in Pennsylvania, ix. 171; refuse in any way to aid in carrying on the war for independence, 215; of Philadelphia will not fight, vii. 43; nor those of the province at large, 211; they disapprove of opposition to the measures of government, 211.

Quarter, none to be given to the "rebel congress," x. 151; refused at Wyoming, 138; refused to Baylor's regiment of horse, 152; refused at Cherry Valley, 153; refused to Colonel Hayne, 492; other instances, 327, 328, 439; refused to the regiment of Colonel Buford, 307; refused to the garrison of Fort Griswold, 500 (see *Barbarity*).

Quebec, founded by Champlain, i. 28; taken by the Kirks, 334; restored, 335; a Jesuit seminary founded, iii. 126; and hospital, 126; Ursuline convent, 127; expedition against it fails, 185; attack on, by Wolfe, iv. 326; Wolfe lands above the city, 333; battle on the Plains of Abraham, 334; the momentous victory of the English, 336; Quebec surrenders, 338; great exultation in the colonies, 338; attempt of the French to retake it, 359; the attempt fails, 359 (see *Canada*); expedition to, by way of Kennebec river, viii. 190; command given to Arnold, 190; names of the officers, 191; instructions by Washington, 191; the detachment enters the Kennebec, 191; lands at Fort Weston, in Augusta, 192; ascends the river to Norridgewock, 192; manner of travelling, 192; encounters great difficulties, 193; Colonel Enos, the second in command, deserts the enterprise, 193; want of food, 194; all suffer, and many die, 194; arrive on the Chaudière, 195; vanguard reaches Point Levi, opposite Quebec, 196; their coming known by the garrison, 196; preparations for defence, 196; the Americans cross the river, but are too weak to attack Quebec, 197; the garrison is re-enforced, 196; the Americans retire to Point aux Trembles, 198; assault on the city by Montgomery, 206, *et seq.* (see *Montgomery*); British ships of war and troops arrive, 424; the Americans retreat, 425 (see *Northern army*).

Queen's College, North Carolina, endowed, vi. 333.

Queen's County, Long Island, refuses to send delegates to the provincial congress, viii. 274; the recusants disarmed, 276.

Question at issue between Britain and America, viii. 122-129; antagonism between the numerous distinct representative governments of America and the central power of Britain, 123; solution attempted by James II., 123; after 1688, great inconvenience was experienced, but conflict was avoided, 123; George III. resolves on a new colonial system, 123; plan matured by Halifax, Bedford, and Charles Townshend, 123; modified by George Grenville's Whig proclivities, but still oppressive, 124; Grenville's theory, after his retirement, finds no support, 124; theory of Lord Chatham, 125; counter-theory of Rockingham, which prevails, 125; has Parliament absolute power over the colonies? the colonies deny this, because not represented in Parliament, 125; here is the question, and this discussion leads to ques-



- tions of Parliamentary reform at home, 125; the colonies taxed in conformity to Rockingham's theory, 126; discontent arising, all the taxes are repealed, except the tax on tea, 126; this tax is not burdensome; the trouble, the sting is in the preamble, 126, 127; the colonies cannot submit, 127; the East India Company, by direction from the king, send tea to America, 127; the colonists will not suffer it to be landed, 127; Parliament abrogate the charter of Massachusetts, 127; here is a claim of absolute power over life, liberty, and property in America, 128; the people resist: the king says, "Blows must decide," 128.
- Quincy, Josiah, his resolute utterance, vi. 102; is counsel for Captain Preston and the soldiers, 350, 373; was of opinion that the verdict of the jury was unjust, 348, 374; draws up the instructions of the town of Boston to its representatives; 363; another bold utterance of his, 425, 426; his brave speech in the great meeting at the Old South Church, 485, 486.
- Quincy, Josiah, junior, visits England, vii. 173; Warren's letter to him, 173; is denounced by Lord Hillsborough in Parliament, 178.
- Quesnai, Francis, and his school of political economists in France, v. 26.
- R.
- Raleigh, city of, on Roanoke Island, i. 104; modern city of that name, 111.
- Raleigh, Sir Walter, his zeal for discovery, i. 74; obtains a patent, 92; his vessels reach the shores of North Carolina, 93; sends a colony thither, 95; the settlers return to England, 102; Raleigh sends out a second colony, 103; the colonists all perish, 106; his repeated attempts all prove fruitless, 108; his character, 109; cruelty of his sentence, 110; sent by King James to Guiana, 110; his execution, 110; his memory gratefully cherished, 111.
- Rall, a Hessian colonel, at White Plains, ix. 182; leads an attack on Fort Washington, 185, 190; in command at Trenton, 216; his sense of security, 217; his bad habits, 217; scoffs at the idea of an attack, 226; his drunken revel while Washington is crossing the Delaware, 231; attack of the Americans, 233; Rall's mistakes, 234; he is mortally wounded, 234; surrender of his troops, 234.
- Ramsay, Colonel, at Monmouth, x. 131.
- Randolph County (see *Orange County*).
- Randolph, Edmund, of Virginia, viii. 378.
- Randolph, Edward, a special messenger of the Crown, arrives in Boston, ii. 111; his zeal against Massachusetts, 112, 122; comes from England with the writ of *quo warranto*, 124; his hostile language, 425, 428.
- Randolph, John, of Virginia, opposes the patriotic resolutions of that colony, v. 276.
- Randolph, Peyton, of Virginia, tries to moderate the fiery zeal of patriotism in that colony, v. 276; speaker of the Virginian Assembly, vii. 54, 84; a member of the first continental congress, 127, 131; president of the same, 127; directs the choice of deputies to a colony convention, 207\*; advises delay to some who were ripe for insurrection, 277; a member of the second continental congress, but attends as speaker the legislature of Virginia, 378, 384.
- Rasles, Sebastian, missionary to the Abenakis of Maine, iii. 195; at Mackinaw and Illinois, 195; again on the Kennebec, 196; his labors and success at Norridgewock, 333; attempts to capture him, 335, 336; slain, 337.
- Ravages of the British army in South Carolina, x. 306, 310, 328; in Virginia, 505; amount of property destroyed by them, 505.
- Rawdon, Lord (Francis Rawdon Hastings, afterwards Marquis of Hastings), a lieutenant at the battle of Bunker Hill, vii. 429; his bravery, 432; his extreme cruelty, x. 311, 313, 492; commands the British left wing at Camden, 324; is driven back by de Kalb, 323; Cornwallis retreating, the command devolves on him, 341; commands at the battle of Hobkirk's Hill, 486, 487; though victorious, is compelled to leave the field, 488; marches to the relief of Ninety-six, 490; retires to Orangeburgh, 491; sends the brave Colonel Hayne to the gallows, 492; in despair of the contest, sails for England, 492; is captured on the way thither, 492.
- Rawlings, colonel of a rifle regiment at Fort Washington, ix. 184, 190; is wounded, 192.
- Raymbault, Charles, reaches the Huron missions, iii. 129; among the Algonquins, 130; reaches the outlet of Lake Superior, 131; dies at Quebec, 132.
- Raynal, Abbé, his work on the history of the Two Indies, x. 448; its republican doctrines, 448; this book displeases the French government, and the author is compelled to flee, 449; its principles become widely diffused, 449.
- Rayneval, French minister, tries to conciliate Spain by the sacrifice of the American claims, x. 574; his discussion with Lord Shelburne, 576 (see *Gerard*).
- Razier, or De Rasieres (see *De Rasieres*).
- "Rebels," so called, blood of, first shed, vi. 183.
- Red men of the West roused to war against the English, v. 112; their barbarity, 116, 118, 119, *et seq.*
- Red river, a tributary of the Kentucky, vi. 299.
- Reed, Colonel James, of New Hampshire, marches to the support of Prescott in Charlestown, vii. 416; sent to re-enforce the Northern army, viii. 422; at the battle of Princeton, ix. 250.
- Reed, Joseph, of Philadelphia, vii. 43; wishes

- reconciliation with England, 44; president of the Pennsylvania convention, 211; opposes arming the province, 211; an enemy to active resistance to the encroachments of Britain, viii. 73; takes, in February, 1776, the oath of allegiance to George III., 315; a friend of Washington, 325; desires a compromise, 325; wishes to avoid a lee shore, 325; in favor of making concessions to England, 326; joins the army as adjutant-general, 444, 445; his despondency, 458; is sick of the contest, and disposed to a reconciliation, ix. 40; the proposal for a retreat from Long Island did not originate with him, 107; in a skirmish near Manhattanville, 126; resigns his commission in the army, 171, 172; retracts his resignation, 198; is sent on important business, 198; fails of the duty, 198; his letter of flattery to Lee, and denunciation of Washington, 205; Lee's reply, 205; deserts Washington in his time of greatest need, and obtains protection of the enemy, 229, and *note*; a letter from him, 230; he recovers courage, 239; never resumes his former post, 335; his disingenuousness, 335; his disrespect for Washington, 455; hostile to slavery, x. 359.
- Reed, William B., his biography of Joseph Reed, ix. 105, *note*; exposure of grave errors contained in that work, 105, *note* (see *Long Island*).
- Reform, the voice of, iv. 5; certainty of, 418; in Parliament proposed, x. 549; Pitt favors it, 549; Fox opposes it, 549.
- Reformation in England, i. 274; did not at the outset recognize the right of private judgment, 275; made the king a pope in his own dominions, 275; as opposed to popery, the great question of the age, iv. 277; Frederic of Prussia regarded as its champion, 279, 280, 290; from popery, its main principles, x. 74; its happy influences and results, 75.
- Regency bill, proposed by George III., v. 253; proceedings relating to it, 254, 255.
- Regicides, the, their fate after the restoration of the Stuart dynasty, ii. 34, *et seq.*
- "Regulating Act," for the province of Massachusetts is received, vii. 94; its provisions, 95, 96; Gage receives full power to enforce it, and may fire on the people at his discretion, 97; it changed the whole ground of controversy, 97; and brought the colonies at once into conflict with the mother country, 97; Massachusetts at once defeats the "regulating act," 104, 105.
- Regulators in North Carolina, vi. 185; their number, 397; who they were, and their purpose, 35, 185, 187, 382, 390; are misrepresented, 186; their peaceable behavior, 189; some of them commit acts of violence, 185, 382; their grievances, 390; appear in arms, 391, 392; march through Salisbury, 392; Governor Tryon's purpose of vengeance, 393; with an armed force he marches into their country, 394; a spirited encounter, 395; they are driven from the field, 395; seven prisoners are hanged by the governor's order, 396, 397; the regulators cross the Alleghanies into Tennessee, 398; and form a republic, 399; the successor of Tryon condemns the course of the royal governor towards them, 400; their settlement beyond the Alleghanies, the germ of the State of Tennessee, 400, 401, viii. 96, 284, 286, 290.
- Religion, existence of it among Indians denied, iii. 285; disenthralled from civil government, iv. 13; established by law in Virginia, ii. 200; religious liberty in Rhode Island, 65; religious contentions in Holland, 277; its establishment in France, subordinate to the Crown, vii. 28; its influence in Massachusetts, 184, 185.
- Remsen, of the New York provincial congress, viii. 439.
- Representation of America in Parliament shown to be a fallacy, v. 282, 290.
- Representation and legislation inseparable, viii. 128.
- Representative government, the earliest in America, i. 158; in Massachusetts, 366; in Carolina, ii. 168; opinion of French statesmen and writers on, viii. 362.
- "Reprisal," the American armed ship, carries Franklin to France, ix. 285; takes several British ships, 285, 298; cruises off the French coast, 298; is captured, 298.
- Republic, dawn of the new, iv. 432, *et seq.*
- Republicans less likely to speak ill of princes than men of rank, viii. 122.
- Republics, difference between ancient and modern ones, viii. 370, 371.
- Restoration of the Stuarts, ii. 23, *et seq.*
- Restrictions on American manufactures, iv. 63; on commerce (see *Commercial Restrictions*).
- Revenue, measures for raising a, iv. 34, 52 (see *Taxation*); from America, to be placed at the disposal of the king, vi. 77; Charles Townshend's famous bill for raising it, 84; exasperation at Boston on its passage, 96.
- Revenue acts (see *Duties and Taxation*); their enforcement deemed impracticable, vi. 128.
- Revere, Paul, sent express by the Boston patriots to New York and Philadelphia, vi. 487; goes by way of Charlestown to Lexington to give information of danger, vii. 289; rouses the people on the road, 290; is twice intercepted, 289, 290.
- Revolt of the colonies, its true date according to Hutchinson, vi. 41.
- Revolution imminent throughout Europe, viii. 364, 365.
- Revolution, near approach of, iv. 4; emanated from the people, vii. 366-374 (see *Independence*).
- Revolution of 1688, its immediate purpose, iii. 2; the offering of experience, 4; adapted to circumstances and to the spirit of the age, 5; the doctrine of passive obedience exploded, 6; triumph of the people over despotic power, 6; sovereignty of Parlia-

- ment established, 7; the commercial classes obtain the controlling power, 8; civil government determined to be a compact, 9; its political theory, 9; public opinion supreme, 10; leading characteristics of the revolution, 11; a free press guaranteed, 11; personal liberty secured, 12; influence of the revolution on Europe, 13; on New England, ii. 445, *et seq.*; on Carolina, iii. 14; the revolution secured not freedom but privilege, iii. 82.
- Revolution predicted, vi. 103.
- Rhett, Colonel William, repels the French invasion of South Carolina, iii. 211.
- Rhode Island, whence the name, ii. 275\*; the colony founded by Roger Williams, i. 380; grant made to Coddington and others, 392; obtains a charter, 425; democratic constitution, 426; denied admission to the New England confederacy, 422; obtains a liberal charter from Charles II., ii. 62; perfect liberty of conscience allowed, 63; to Roman Catholics as well as to others, 65, 66; an error on this point corrected, 65, 66; Rhode Island never a persecuting community, 67; population in 1675, 93; Indian war, 102; "Great Swamp Fight," 103; writ of *quo warranto* against the charter, 429; Andros dissolves the government, 429; on his deposition the people resume their liberties, 448; population in 1688, 450; effect of the English revolution, iii. 69; Rhode Island compared with Connecticut, 69; a paper-money colony, iv. 83; population in 1754, 128, 129; its spirit of liberty, v. 217, 218, 271, 286, 290; this spirit manifested in act, 291, 314; their stamp-officer compelled to resign, 314; the assembly direct all their officers to disregard the stamp act, 328; it is disregarded, 374; refuses to be bound by acts of the British Parliament, vi. 43; Charles Townshend inveighs against it, 75; resistance of the people to official insolence, 418; burning of the schooner "Gaspee," 419; consequent wrath of the British ministry, 419, 441; the authorities ask the advice of Samuel Adams on this case, 441; his courageous reply, 441, 443; efforts of the British authorities in the affair of the "Gaspee" disappointed, 451; the charter threatened, 451; the colony elects its committee of correspondence, 460; its assembly unanimously choose delegates to the general congress, vii. 65, 66; seizure of cannon at Newport, 183; measures taken to import military stores, 183; armed men hasten to the scene of conflict near Boston, 316; the colony agrees to furnish a force of fifteen hundred men, 316, 325; her troops in the army around Boston, viii. 43; the assembly directs the equipment of two armed vessels to protect the trade of the colony, 68; the delegate from Rhode Island proposes an American fleet, 114; she casts off allegiance to the king and makes herself an independent republic, 355, 356; the ministry had determined to infringe on its charter, 360; independence joyfully proclaimed, ix. 36; the island conquered by the British, 200; form of civil government as under the charter, 261; military and naval operations there, x. 146, *et seq.*; evacuated, 233, 301.
- Ribault, John, conducts a colony of Huguenots to Carolina, i. 61, 66, 68.
- Rice introduced into South Carolina, iii. 20.
- Richards, John, sent as agent of Massachusetts to England, ii. 123.
- Richardson, Ebenezer, of Boston, an informer, vi. 333; kills a poor German boy, 333, 334.
- Richmond, Virginia, founded, i. 144, 153; at first called Henrico, and why, 144; burned by Arnold, x. 497.
- Richmond, Duke of, in relation to the regency bill, v. 254, 255, vi. 5; opposes the Boston port bill, 518; wishes that the Americans may resist, vii. 43; opposes the proceedings of the ministers, 178; his motion in favor of America rejected, viii. 165; is willing to concede American independence, ix. 477, 478; his spirited reply to the Earl of Hillsborough, 482, 483; he moves in the House of Lords for the recognition of American independence, 494; proposes an entire change of measures, x. 246.
- Rider, Sir Dudley, advises the taxation of the colonies, iv. 56.
- Riedesel, Frederic Adolphus, Baron, commander of the Brunswick troops, viii. 258; arrives in Quebec, 265, 429; on Lake Champlain, ix. 157; is shocked at the employment of Indians in the British service, 322, 359; major-general under Burgoyne, 362; occupies Mount Independence on Lake Champlain, 367; in the battle of Hubbardton, 369; in the battle of Bemis's Heights, 409, 410, 415.
- Riflemen of America, viii. 62; of Pennsylvania, 64; described, 64; their alacrity, 64; their influence on European tactics, 65.
- Rigby, Alexander, purchases Lygonia, i. 429; his claim superseded, 430.
- Rigby, Richard, becomes a lord of trade, iv. 221; favors a tax on the colonies, 223, 230, 273, 292, 403, 442; leader of the Bedford party in the Commons, v. 296, 363; proposes an address to the king censuring America for her rebellious disposition, vi. 9; reproaches the ministers, 58; is made vice-treasurer of Ireland, 109; wishes to continue the oppressive measures against America, 232; despises the common people, 321; in the House of Commons justifies the war with America, viii. 163.
- Rights of man as proclaimed by Virginia, viii. 381-383.
- Rivington, James, his New York "Gazette" quotes Scripture for passive obedience, vii. 283; his printing office in New York rifled by Sears, viii. 275.
- Roanoke Island, colony of Raleigh settled there, i. 96; its extinction, 106.



- Roberdeau, Daniel, presides at a meeting of citizens of Philadelphia, viii. 386.
- Robertson, James, emigrates from North Carolina to Tennessee, vi. 381; his character, 381; a great benefactor to the early settlers, 381; a republic in Tennessee with Robertson at the head, 398, 399; in the Indian war of 1774, vii. 167, 168, 169; he and his garrison repulse the Indians, ix. 161.
- Robertson, William, the historian, his opinion on the strife between Britain and America, viii. 172.
- Roberval, his voyage to Canada, i. 22, *et seq.*; passes a year there, 24.
- Robinson, John, pastor of the Pilgrim church at Scrooby, i. 299; and at Leyden, 301; publishes an apology, 301; his parting counsel to the Mayflower Pilgrims, 306; his death, 321.
- Robinson, John, one of the commissioners of the customs, his attack on James Otis, vi. 310.
- Robinson, John, of Westford, has part in the Concord battle, vii. 302; and in the battle of Bunker Hill, 423.
- Robinson, Sir Thomas, made secretary of state for the colonies, iv. 160; rallies his party against the Great Commoner, 161; his imbecility, 164.
- Robinson, William, a Quaker, hanged at Boston, i. 456.
- Rochambeau, Count de, arrives in Newport with six thousand men, x. 375, 376; is displeased at not being re-enforced from France, and wishes to return to Europe, 447; is put under the command of Washington, 447, 503; meets Washington at Weatherfield, 503; or Hartford, 382; sets out on his march to Virginia, 382.
- Roche, Marquis de la, leaves a colony on the Isle of Sable, i. 25.
- Rocheblave commands at Kaskaskia, x. 196.
- Rochester, Mass., its response to the circular from Boston, vi. 439.
- Rochford, Earl of, made secretary of state, vi. 215; his incapacity, 215; opposes the repeal of the duty on tea, 277; reproaches Chatham, vii. 202; provokes France, viii. 102; his indiscretion, 102; says it is determined to burn Boston, 133; retires from office, 165.
- Rockingham, Marquis of (Charles Watson Wentworth), v. 247; first lord of the treasury in 1765, 301; his character, 301; friendly to America, 341, 365; but cannot admit that Parliament does not possess the power of taxation, 397; refuses to give place to Pitt in the ministry, — the only thing that could have averted the American revolution, 397; under his administration was founded the new Tory party of England, 418; a question of veracity between him and the king, 427; the chief of the great Whig families, vi. 22; insults Pitt, 22, 23; his friends unite with Grenville and Bedford against Pitt, 59; he and they will not join in any severe measures against America, 64; tries to form a coalition with Grenville and Bedford, 89; the effort fails, 91, 92; he distrusts Grenville and Temple, 92; cannot form a strong administration, 93; he is kind and liberal, but not able, 93; his speech, 325; opposes the Boston port bill, 518; with his friends, protests against the act for regulating the province of Massachusetts Bay, vii. 94; protests against the rash proceedings of the ministers, 178; but resists the demands of the continental congress, 192; he and Chatham differ, 192; he refuses to sanction the measures proposed by Lord North, 225, 226; defends American liberty as the bulwark of the British constitution, viii. 172; his friends in Parliament keep aloof, ix. 141; he advises to acknowledge American independence, 487, x. 530; becomes first lord of the treasury, 534; constructs a new ministry, 534; names of its members, 534; great results of this administration, 548; death of Rockingham, 548.
- Rockingham administration, its weakness after the repeal of the stamp act, vi. 4; their helpless condition, 10; their good and bad acts, 23, 24; their course ends, 23; the first, recognizes the freedom of the seas, x. 256.
- Rodney, Sir George, his character, x. 380, 440; in prison at Paris for debt, 380; commands an expedition to relieve Gibraltar, 381; defeats a Spanish squadron, 381; relieves Gibraltar and Minorca, 381; his operations in the West Indies, 381; comes to New York, and joins in the enterprise for obtaining West Point, 382, 383; in time of profound peace with Holland seizes St. Eustatius and captures two hundred Dutch ships, 438; a great rascal, 440; encounters the fleet of Count De Grasse near Guadaloupe, 544; a sanguinary battle, 545; he gains a great victory, 545.
- Rogers, Major Robert, commander of New England rangers, iv. 305; is sent from Montreal to take possession of the upper forts, 361; passes up Lakes Ontario and Erie, 361; meets with Pontiac, 362; takes possession of Detroit, 362.
- Rogers, Nathaniel, an abettor of Hutchinson's proceedings, his letters quoted, vi. 173, 251, 252.
- Rogers, Robert, burned by Indians, iii. 183.
- Rolfe, John, marries Pocahontas, i. 147; visits England with her, 147.
- Rolfe, Rev. Benjamin, of Haverhill, Mass., killed by Indians, iii. 215.
- Rome extended the benefit of fixed principles of law, iv. 7.
- "Romney," of fifty guns in Boston harbor, vi. 154, 200; impresses New England men, 154, 155.
- Rosalie, Fort, on the site of Natchez, iii. 204, 349.
- Rossbach, battle of, iv. 235.
- Ross, George, of Pennsylvania, moves in,



- Congress that Massachusetts be left to her own discretion, vi. 145.
- Rotch, Francis, owner of the tea-ship "Dartmouth," vi. 477; promises that the tea should be sent back to England, 479; is summoned before the committee of correspondence, 482; applies for a clearance and is denied, 483, 484.
- Rouerie, Marquis de la, commands a corps in Washington's army, ix. 393.
- Rousseau, Jean Jacques, predicts the decline of the great monarchies, iv. 437, 438; his philosophy, v. 29; his idea of the social compact, 30; teaches the sovereignty of the people, yet ignores the personal freedom of every man's thought, 30; his fiery eloquence, 31; a fugitive from France in England, 414.
- Rowe, John, of Boston, a prominent patriot in 1773, vi. 482.
- Rowlandson, Mary, her captivity, ii. 106.
- Roxbury settled, i. 358 \*; joins with Boston in resistance to British aggression, vi. 431, 438, 475.
- Royal governors, their rapacity, iv. 19; supported by armed grants, 19, 25; the office often bestowed on bad men, 20; frequent attempts to obtain for them a fixed salary, 32, 35, 54, 56, 62, 85, 93, 100; these attempts always abortive, 52, 86, 104; advise taxation of the colonies, 177, 178.
- Royal prerogative in France restrained, v. 20, 21.
- Royalists in America urge the ministry to arbitrary measures, v. 200, 224, 379; their intrigues in New York, vii. 208-210; in Boston, 68, 69, 121, 122; of South Carolina forsaken by the British, x. 491; their wretched condition, 491; of the country at large, no relief for them in the treaty of peace, and why, 555, 580, 586.
- Ruggles, Timothy, of Hardwick, presiding officer of the Congress of 1765, refuses to sign its declaration of rights, v. 346; his solitary vote for the use of superfluities, vi. 129; a mandamus councillor, is warned that he cannot return home alive, vii. 104.
- Rulhière, Claudius Carloman de, assists Pulaski to come to America, ix. 297.
- Rush, Benjamin, of Philadelphia, in favor of independence, viii. 446; gives the title of "Common-Sense" to Paine's pamphlet, 236; his speech in Congress on representation, ix. 54; speaks against the conference proposed by Lord Howe, 112; in correspondence with Charles Lee, 203, 207; supposed author of an article in the New Jersey "Gazette," 460; plots against Washington, 461; his letter to Patrick Henry, 461, 462.
- Russell, Duke of Bedford (see *Bedford*).
- Russia, trade opened with, through Archangel, i. 79; sends an expedition to North-West America, iii. 453; subsidized by England to check the power of Prussia, iv. 219; cannot be fully relied on, 277; alliance of Russia and Prussia, 434, 454; accession of Catharine II., 455; its wide extent and political importance, v. 8, 9; its growing power an occasion of alarm to Western Europe, vi. 269, 270; attention of, to the struggle between Britain and America, viii. 104; favors the United States, ix. 473, 497; refuses an alliance with England, x. 55; favors the United States, 55; wishes neutral commerce to be exempt from capture, 257; joins the armed neutrality, 265, 274, 278; the Russian declaration on that subject, 274; Russia invites the European powers to a league for the protection of neutral commerce, 427, 428.
- Russian camp, Gibbon's sarcastic query about visiting it, viii. 157.
- Russian troops, the king resolves to apply for them, vii. 348; George III. applies for them, viii. 149, *et seq.*; but cannot get them, 151, 153, 155.
- Russian vessels seized by Spain, x. 276; the consequences, 276.
- Rutherford, of North Carolina, destroys many Cherokee towns, ix. 163, x. 288.
- Rutledge, Arthur, an inflexible patriot, his shameful treatment, x. 329.
- Rutledge, Edward, of South Carolina, elected to the first continental congress, vii. 81; delegate in Congress, endeavors in vain to exclude colored men from the continental army, viii. 110; his motions in Congress, 279, 282, 315, 367; opposes the Declaration of Independence, 390; his ungracious words, 390; one of a committee to devise a plan for a confederation, 392; cavils at the idea of a permanent confederation, ix. 59, 51; his jealousy of New England, 51, 52; is in favor of procrastination, 112; is chosen one of a committee to meet Lord Howe, 112; the interview, 116, 117; his despondency, 131; member of the committee on spies, 135.
- Rutledge, John, of South Carolina, v. 293; a delegate to the first American Congress, 333; his patriotism, 343; elected to the first continental congress, vii. 81, 127; holds that allegiance is inalienable, 133; contends against the restriction of not exporting rice, 206; aids in forming a new government in South Carolina, viii. 313; is chosen president of that province, 348; his speech on accepting the office, 348; address of the legislature to him, 349; his speech at the close of the session, 350-352; his great abilities, 353; his activity in providing for the defence of Charleston, 394; will not suffer Sullivan's Island to be abandoned, 397; sends a supply of powder to Moultrie during the attack, 409; visits the garrison, 413; his feelings at meeting them, 413, x. 288, 290.
- Ryswick, peace of, iii. 192; its provisions, 192.

## S.

Sackville, Lord George, complains of the liberty enjoyed in the colonies, iv. 226; apologizes for Loudoun, 290; declines to command in America, 294; his disobedience to orders at the battle of Minden, 317, 318; his fall and disgrace, 318; under the Rockingham ministry is restored to office, v. 305, 373, 401, 436; favors American taxation, vi. 49.

Saco, a colony there, i. 330; tenure of land, 336; first court held there, 337.

Sacs and Foxes, Indian tribes, iii. 151, 224; where located, 242; enemies of the French, 346.

Sadducees in Boston, iii. 76, 77.

Sagadahoc, Popham's colony there, i. 268; province of Sagadahoc has a fort and garrison, ii. 406; Pemaquid, the fort, iii. 181.

St. Augustine, oldest town in the United States, founded, i. 69.

St. Clair, Arthur, in the attack on Three Rivers, viii. 429; at Trenton, ix. 246; his mistake, 246; he takes command at Ticonderoga, 361; expects to repulse the enemy, 366; hastily evacuates the fort, 366; amount of his force, 366; Burgoyne's army in close pursuit, 367; Saint Clair and his force reach Fort Edward, 370.

St. Clair, or Sinclair, Sir John, in Braddock's army, iv. 187.

St. Ignatius, a Huron village, destroyed by the Iroquois, iii. 139.

Saint John, a parish in Georgia, conforms to the resolutions of Congress, and sends food to Boston, 206, 207; it is represented in the second continental congress, vii. 207, 358.

St. John, Henry, Lord Bolingbroke, his character, iii. 219; plans the conquest of Canada, 220; his sanguine expectation, 221.

St. Joseph's, the fort at the mouth of that river surprised by the Indians, and the garrison massacred, v. 119.

St. Lawrence, gulf and river, discovered, i. 20, 21.

Saint Leger, Colonel Barry, his expedition against Fort Stanwix, ix. 377; his force chiefly composed of Indians, 377; proceeds from Montreal to Oswego, 378; arrives in the vicinity of Fort Stanwix, 378; strength of the fort, 378; severe conflict at Oriskany, 380; the Indians, frantic at their losses, rob the British officers, and hasten away, 381; Saint Leger makes a hurried retreat, 381.

Saint Luc, La Corne, endeavors to rouse the Indians to ruthless warfare against the Americans, vii. 365; arrested by Wooster in Canada, and sent out of the province, viii. 419; urges on the Indians to take up the hatchet against the Americans, ix. 322, 326.

St. Lussan meets an assembly of Indians at St. Mary's, and erects the standard of France, iii. 154.

St. Mary's, central station of the Huron mission, iii. 125.

St. Pierre, Gardeur de, commander at Le Boeuf, receives Washington, iv. 111.

Salem, settlement of, i. 339, 341; the first ministers, Skelton and Higginson, 345; voyage of the emigrants, 346; their numbers, 347; ordination of the first ministers, 348; the church constituted on the principle of religious liberty, 348; the ballot here used for the first time, 348; distress of the inhabitants, 358; choose Roger Williams their teacher, 369; lose land for their attachment to him, 373; ship-building in Salem, 415\* (see *Salem village*, and *Witchcraft delusion*).

Salem to be the capital of Massachusetts, vi. 178; seat of government of Massachusetts removed to it from Boston, vii. 34; determines to stop all trade with Britain and the West Indies, 38, 39; the legislature meet there, 61; their proceedings, 63, 64; the merchants and others of the place speak kind words to Boston, 67; unsuccessful visit of British troops to that place in quest of military stores, 252.

Salem village (now Danvers), the scene of the witchcraft delusion, iii. 84, *et seq.* (see *Witchcraft delusion*).

Salisbury, on the Merrimack, counsels an American union, vi. 440.

Salle, La (see *La Salle*).

Salmon Falls, village of, attacked by the Indians, iii. 182.

Saltonstall, Sir Richard, denounces the slave-trade, i. 174; determines to emigrate to New England, 352; settles at Watertown, i. 358\*; remonstrates against hereditary power, 385; in England, defends the Massachusetts colony, 405; condemns the severities there practised, 448.

Salzburg, in Germany, emigrants from, arrive in Georgia, iii. 425; introduce the culture of silk, 430.

Samoset, the Indian, welcomes the Pilgrims at Plymouth, i. 316.

Sandusky, the fort there taken by the Indians, v. 118.

Sandwich, Earl of, a lord of the admiralty, iv. 71, 87; dismissed from office, 87; becomes secretary of state, v. 147; a hater of America, at the head of the English post-office, vi. 109; thinks a small force will be sufficient to reduce the colonies, vii. 181; calls the Americans cowards, 181, 262; opposes Lord Chatham's bill for conciliation, 220; his tirade against Franklin, 220; berates the Americans as cowards, 262; is bent on coercion, 346; is for absolute authority over the colonies, viii. 360.

Sandys, George, agent for Virginia, i. 204.

Sandys, Sir Edwin, reforms abuses in the affairs of Virginia, i. 157; sends over many colonists, 157; his friendly interposition for the colony, 191; befriends the fishermen, 324.

Santilla river, Georgia, colony on its banks, iv. 242.

- Saratoga, convention of, violated by the British, x. 126.
- Sartine, minister of police, vii. 32; minister of marine to Louis XVI., 93; concurs in the views of Vergennes, viii. 341; advises war, 342.
- Saunders, Sir Charles, admiral of the fleet which convoyed Wolfe up the St. Lawrence, iv. 316, 324; with Wolfe, reconnoitres the shore, 327.
- Savages employed against the revolted colonists, x. 123, 151, 195, 284; Tryon, William Franklin, and other refugees, advise their employment, 222; their horrid barbarities, 137, 152, 489; praised for it by Lord George Germain, 138 (see *Indians*).
- Savannah founded, iii. 421; taken by the British, x. 285; siege of, by Lincoln and D'Estaing, 296; the effort fails, 297; evacuated by the British, 564.
- Saville, Sir George, the "spotless" representative of Yorkshire, vindicates the rights of the people, vi. 321, 322; wishes a repeal of the duty on tea, 360; wishes that Franklin may be heard at the bar of the House of Commons, vii. 218; thinks the Americans justifiable in resisting oppressive acts, 239, 240.
- Saxon emperors of Germany, their energy, x. 72.
- Saxon princes refuse to furnish soldiers for conquest of America, x. 94-96.
- Say and Seal, Lord, proposes to remove to America, i. 384; a proprietary of Connecticut, 395; befriends that colony, ii. 51.
- Sayle, William, governor of Carolina, ii. 138, 150; conducts a body of emigrants to Ashley river, 166.
- Sayre, Stephen, sent to the tower, viii. 145.
- Scammel, Alexander, in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 409.
- Scepticism in France in 1774, vii. 28, 29.
- Schenectady, massacre of its inhabitants by the Indians, iii. 182.
- Schlieffen, General, minister of Hesse, his negotiations with Faucitt, viii. 261, 262.
- Schuyler, Colonel Peter, remonstrates against Indian cruelties, iii. 216; takes five Iroquois sachems to England, 219.
- Schuyler, Philip, in the New York assembly, vii. 210; risks his vast estate in the cause of liberty, 250; elected to the second continental congress, 284; elected major-general, viii. 28; his character, 29; Montgomery's opinion of him, 28, 29; his report to Congress, 52; makes preparation for the invasion of Canada, 177; Washington urges him to proceed in it immediately, 180; he embarks for St. John's, 181; retreats to the Isle Aux Noix, 181; his health suffers greatly, 181, 182; his indecision and delay, 182; he returns to Ticonderoga, 182; forwards supplies to Montgomery, 183; complains of the Connecticut troops, 185; marches against Sir John Johnson, and takes him prisoner, 272; refuses the active command in Canada, 273, 432; sends a re-enforcement to Washington, ix. 200; his love of country, 338; Gates supplants him, 339; Schuyler's vindication of himself, to Congress, 342; is restored to his command, 342; his military capacity doubted, 342; want of personal courage, 372; the soldiers have no confidence in him, 372; his mistakes, 373; he retreats, 373; does not dispute the advance of Burgoyne, 373; applies to Washington for aid, 373; Washington encourages him, 375; removes the army to an island in Mohawk river, 376; expects Burgoyne at Albany, 376; is removed from command, 386.
- Scollay, John, of Boston, one of the selectmen, refuses to serve on the committee of correspondence, vi. 430.
- Scot, George, conducts an emigration from Scotland to New Jersey, ii. 409.
- Scotch-Irish emigration, iii. 371.
- Scotch Presbyterians, their settlement in Ireland, v. 64, 76; some of them remove to America, 76; in North Carolina, vi. 34; oppressions suffered by them, 35.
- Scotland, Presbyterians in, sufferings endured by them for religion's sake, ii. 410; great numbers of them emigrate to East New Jersey, 412; the leading minds are on the side of America and against the stamp act, v. 437, 438.
- Scots, insurrection of, in North Carolina, viii. 284 (see *Highlanders*).
- Scott, an officer of Virginia troops, ix. 230; at Germantown, 427.
- Scott, General, commands a division at Monmouth, x. 128.
- Scott, John Morin, a popular lawyer in New York, iv. 429, v. 224; the probable author of the patriotic article signed "Freeman," 284, *note*; one of the triumvirate of patriotic lawyers, vi. 141; loses his election, 249, vii. 78, 80, 329; in the assembly of that province, viii. 215; concurs with Jay in his policy, 274, 279, 439; brigadier in the American army, ix. 95, 97, 102, 107.
- Scottish brigade in Holland, its history, viii. 251.
- Screven, an American officer, killed in cold blood, x. 285.
- Sears, Isaac, a leader of the people in New York, v. 352, 355, 356, 377, 425; his patriotic utterances, vi. 366, 481; one of the principal Sons of Liberty at New York, vii. 40, 78, 80; for his patriotic efforts the mayor commits him to prison, 283; he is liberated by the people, 283; stops all vessels going to Quebec or Boston, 328; rifles the printing office of the Tory Rivington, viii. 275; goes to the camp in Cambridge, 275; his representations to Lee, 276; abuses the committee of New York and its convention, 281; Lee makes him his adjutant-general, 278; and gives him great power in New York, 282.
- Secker, Thomas, archbishop of Canterbury, iv. 379, 385, 426.
- Secretaries of state charged with the conduct of the external relations of Great Britain, iv. 17.



- Secretary of state for the southern department; his administration of colonial affairs, iv. 17, 18; Pelham, Duke of Newcastle, in this office, 18, 19; Russell, Duke of Bedford, succeeds him, 21.
- Selden, John, his answer to the question about resisting tyranny, vii. 202.
- Seminoles of Florida, iii. 251
- Seneca tribe of Indians, ii. 215, 415, iii. 163, 164, 177, 189, 194, 244; incite the more western tribes to take up arms against the English, v. 111; ambush laid by them near Niagara Falls, 132; the fearful result, 133; peace with them, 210, 211; take up the hatchet against the Americans, ix. 377, 379; their severe loss at Oriskany, 379; their yells of grief and rage, 382; under the British flag at Wyoming, x. 137; their fearful ravages and cruelties, 138.
- Separatists from the Church of England, i. 287, 238.
- Sequoah (or George Guess), a Cherokee, invents an alphabet, iii. 255.
- "Serapis" frigate taken by Paul Jones, x. 271.
- Sergeant, of New Jersey, in Congress, viii. 320.
- Servants in Virginia invited by the royal governor to rise against their masters, viii. 223; why they did not rise, 225.
- Servitude of white people in the colonies, i. 175; abolished in Virginia, 205; continues in Maryland, iii. 33.
- Sessions, Darius, deputy governor of Rhode Island, in the affair of the "Gaspee," vi. 441, 450.
- Settlements, their wide extension, v. 165.
- Settlement of the West, Hillsborough attempts to counteract, vi. 225.
- Seven years' war, its successes the triumph of Protestantism, v. 3; its effect on America, x. 86.
- Sevier, John, a "backwoods" colonel, x. 335; at the head of a regiment, 335; his undaunted valor at King's Mountain, 336-338.
- Sevier, Valentine, of East Tennessee, in the Indian war of 1774, vii. 167-169.
- Sewall, Jonathan, the early friend of John Adams, vii. 65; their political views separate them, 65.
- Sewall, Stephen, chief justice of Massachusetts, dies, iv. 378.
- "Sexty, Edward," a signature in "Boston Gazette" in 1772, used by Josiah Quincy, junior, vi. 348, 426, *note*.
- Shaftesbury, Earl of (Antony Ashley Cooper), ii. 124; one of the proprietaries of Carolina, 129; his character, 139, *et seq.*; errors concerning him corrected, 140; his political principles, 141; his virtues and vices, 142; wanting in delicacy, 143; his infidelity, 143; with John Locke frames a constitution for Carolina, 145; procures the acquittal of Culpepper, 161; Penn's acquaintance with him, ii. 376; one of the cabal, 434; his fall, 435; recovers power, and is again displaced, 436; courts popular favor, 437; his exile, 438; author of the declaration of indulgence, 435; fourth earl, one of the council for Georgia, iii. 420.
- Sharks devour multitudes of French escaped the carnage of a naval battle, x. 545.
- Sharp, Granville, opposed to war with America, and resigns office, vii. 343.
- Sharpe, Horatio, lieutenant-governor of Maryland, iv. 167, 178; made general of the military force in America, 168; his requisitions disregarded by the colonies, 175; meets Braddock at Alexandria, 177; his misgivings about the war, 235; recommends taxation of the colonies, 167, 177; apologizes for Loudoun's incapacity, 267; again recommends taxation, 307, 376; wishes to share in the contraband trade, 377.
- Shawanese Indians, their ferocity, vii. 166, 168; great battle with them at Point Pleasant, 168; they are defeated, 169; and sue for peace, 170; its humiliating terms, 170, 171.
- Shawnee Indians, where located, iii. 159, 240; their wanderings, 240, 252; for a time friendly to the English, iv. 77, 82, 94, 107, 108; make war on them, 169, 225; their horrible ferocity, 225; combine with other tribes to expel the English, v. 112; their attack on Fort Pitt, 128, 129; peace with them, 210, 221; they restore their captives, 222; take up arms against the Americans, ix. 160.
- Shawneetown, Indian council at, demand help from the English against the French, iv. 96, 97.
- Shee, colonel of a Pennsylvania regiment, ix. 98; retreats from Long Island, 103; resigns his commission, 171.
- Shelburne, Earl of (William Petty), first lord of trade, v. 108; vindicated from the aspersions of Walpole, 108, *note*; a man of ability, 134; marks out the boundaries of New England, 135; declines to take part in the scheme for taxing America, 136; retires from office, 147; the firm friend of Pitt, 147; refuses office under the Rockingham administration, 304; wishes the repeal of the stamp act, 369; proposes a repeal in the House of Lords, 402; secretary of state for the colonies under Pitt, vi. 21; and, as such, has the care of American affairs, 21; wishes the Mississippi valley to be the refuge of English liberty, 33; seeks to recover the affections of the colonies by moderation and prudence, 39, 40; his orders to American governors, 52; his caution and moderation, 53; his American policy, 53, 54; averse to sending bishops to America, 54; disapproves the billeting act, 55; tries to check speculators in American lands, 53; is beset with difficulties, 56; the king dislikes him, 21, 47, 55; his wise policy defeated, 59, 60; finds himself powerless, 63; favors Massachusetts, 70; the colonies taken from under his care, 109; endeavors to calm the exasperated spirit of England, 175; the king wishes to get rid



- of him, 175; he is removed from the ministry, 214; this induces the resignation of Chatham, 214; Shelburne esteems Lord North worthy of impeachment, 361; opposes the Boston port bill, 519; protests against the rash proceedings of the ministers, vii 178; speaks in favor of removing the troops from Boston, 202; charges Lord Mansfield with uttering gross falsehoods, 226; is greatly pleased with Jefferson's answer to Lord North's insidious propositions, 388; bears honorable testimony to the sincerity of Franklin, and protests against the war with America, viii. 163; Marquis of Lansdowne, x. 531; his character as a statesman, 532; condemns, in 1780, the Russian manifesto in defence of neutral rights, 428; mediates between the king and the Marquis of Rockingham, 534; a member of the Rockingham ministry, 535; is desirous of peace, 535; his letter to Franklin at Paris, 536; his generous feelings, 536; Franklin's reply, 540; the earl writes again to Franklin, 541; his instructions to Oswald, 541, 554; wishes the Penobscot or Kennebec to be the eastern boundary of New England, 541, 583; he becomes first lord of the treasury, 551; his noble qualities, 553; averse to a war with America, 554; accepts the American ultimatum, 556; his letters to Oswald, 557; consents, reluctantly, to the independence of America, 557; but cannot yield Gibraltar, 576; his discussion with Rayneval, the French minister, on that subject, 576; his generous feelings towards France, 577, 578; his final instructions to Strachey, 583; his exalted merit as a British statesman, 558.
- Shelburne ministry, of whom composed, x. 552; favorable to parliamentary reform, 549; their hesitation about the terms of peace, 586.
- Shelby, Evan, in the Indian war, vii. 167, 169; a patriotic church member, 195.
- Shelby, Isaac, of Kentucky, in the battle of Point Pleasant, vii. 169; colonel of backwoodsmen, x. 335; with Sevier and others, gains a glorious victory at King's Mountain, 336-338.
- Sheldon, Colonel, receives a letter from Major André, 380.
- Sherburne, Major Henry, of Rhode Island, taken prisoner at the Cedars, and his men butchered by the Indians, viii. 427.
- Sherman, Roger, elected representative of New Haven, v. 317; quoted in regard to American rights, vi. 166; denies the power of Parliament to make laws for America, vii. 106; is a member of the first continental congress, 132, 133; deduces allegiance from consent, 133; in Congress, viii. 314, 315, 317, 319; one of the committee to prepare a Declaration of Independence, 392; in Congress, ix. 55; his action in Congress, x. 173.
- Shipbuilding, commencement of, in New England, i. 415\*.
- Shirley, William, governor of Massachusetts, resolves on the capture of Louisburg, iii. 457; his plan of attack, 458, iv. 26; attends the Congress at Albany, 1748, 28; unites with Clinton in an appeal to the paramount power of Great Britain, 29; accuses Boston to the board of trade, 39; proposes the removal of the Acadians, 44; goes to England to prosecute his designs, 53, 54; principal adviser of the ministry against Massachusetts, 59; his proceedings at Paris, 72; his influence with the ministry, 114; returns from England, 1753, 114; and still plans for the royal prerogative, 114; his plan of union of the colonies, 172; objections to it, as given by Franklin, 172, 173; is bitterly opposed to the Albany plan, 174, *note*; invokes the power of Parliament, 174, 175; meets Braddock at Alexandria, 177; fails of taking Niagara 213; soothes the alarm felt in England at the growth and prosperity of the colonies, 214; thinks the colonies could not become independent, 214; placed at the head of the army in America, 221; advises a tax on the colonies, 52, 172, 178, 222; is superseded and recalled, 228.
- Shute Daniel, minister of Hingham, in Massachusetts, his election sermon in 1768, vi. 151.
- Silesia, reverses in, iv. 286.
- Silk-weavers of London exasperated against the Duke of Bedford, and why, v. 257; their riotous behavior, 258, 259.
- Silleri, Noël, establishes a colony of Algonquins near Quebec, iii. 127.
- Silliman, General, his combat with the enemy at Ridgefield, Connecticut. ix. 347.
- Simcoe, his advice to Cornwallis, ix. 245.
- Sinclair (see *St. Clair*).
- Sioux, first known to white men, iii. 131, 151 (see *Dahcotas*).
- Six Nations, treaties with them, iv. 29, 31, 103, 122; are present by their delegates at the Albany congress, 88, 122; their distrust of the English, 88, 122; their alliance sought by the French, 89, 169; they claim the Ohio valley, 96, 107; some of them aid the French, 209; neutrality of, 238, 243; the Oneidas take part with the French, 259; a body of warriors at Ticonderoga under Sir William Johnson, 302; with Bradstreet, at Fort Frontenac, 305; with Johnson, at Niagara, 321; a congress with, at Fort Stanwix, vi. 227; their warriors paid to secure their neutrality, vii. 118; notices of, 167, 280, 349, 365, 392; take up arms against the Americans, ix. 160; speech of Gates to their council, 359; they incline to be neutral, 377.
- Skeene, a British agent, taken prisoner, vii. 340, 341.
- Skelton, Samuel, one of the earliest ministers of Salem, i. 345.
- Skepticism applied to every object of human thought, v. 5; its tendency, revolution, 5; uncreative, viii. 366; ought to be rejected, 366.

Skinner, Cortland, of New Jersey, appointed a brigadier in the British service, ix. 320; enlists men for the army, 320.

Slavery, history of, i. 159; Indians made slaves, 16, 36; negro slavery, 65, 67; its early existence, 159; anciently in Egypt, Palestine, Greece, Rome, 160, 161; in the middle ages in England, Germany, and other European countries, 162, 163; in the contests between the Christians and Moors, all captives were enslaved, 164; negro slavery, its origin; not an invention of white men, 165; existed long before Columbus, 166; negro slaves introduced into Spain and Portugal, 166; natives of America made slaves, 167; by Columbus, 168; and by the Fathers of New England, 169; negro slaves introduced early into Hispaniola, 169; sanctioned by royal decrees, 170; mistaken benevolence of Las Casas, 170; the slave-trade never sanctioned by the Roman pontiff, 172; Sir John Hawkins the first English slave-trader, 172; earliest importation of Africans into New England, 173; denounced as a crime, 174; introduction of slavery into Virginia, 176; Indians made slaves, 402; provisions of law in Massachusetts concerning slavery, 418; the son of Philip sold as a slave, ii. 109; slaves in Virginia, 193; their treatment, 193; how regarded in law, 194; an aristocracy founded on slave property, 194; negro slaves introduced into New Netherland, 303; slavery in Pennsylvania, 401; William Penn a slave-holder, 401; slavery in South Carolina, iii. 20; in Maryland, 33; in Pennsylvania, 41; in New Jersey, 49; England becomes rich and powerful by the slave-trade, 233; slavery of Indians, 321, 363; South Sea company and the slave-trade, 401; slave-trade, how conducted, 402; sources of the supply, 403; solution of the problem of the slave-trade, 404; horrors of "the middle passage," 404, 405; great loss of life, 405; emancipation proposed in Boston, 408; and in Pennsylvania, 408; conversion did not enfranchise, 409; yet the rightfulness of slavery was never recognized by law, 409; color alone prevented emancipation, 410; England forced slavery upon the colonies, 411, 415; number of slaves imported, 411; slavery justified by public opinion, by national policy, and by able writers, 412, 413; "negroes are merchandise," was unquestioned law, 414; slavery resisted by the colonies, but enforced on them, 416; forbidden in Georgia, 426; permitted there, 448; great alarm in Virginia on account of the increase of the slave population, vi. 414; Massachusetts denounces the institution, 415; a slave is free on touching British soil, 415; the voice of Jefferson, of Patrick Henry, and of George Mason raised against it, 413-417; a wish to have it abolished, vii. 42, 75, 84, 271 b; in Virginia, England alone is responsible for it, viii. 225 (see *Negro Population*); contrary to

conscience and the divine law, x. 298, 370; abolished in France on all the estates of the crown, 345; in Oberyssel, one of the United Netherlands, 346; justified by Luther, and by Bossuet, 346; prevalent over one-half of Europe, 346; threatened from the first the existence of the American Union, 349; could not be abolished by Congress, 353; it gave rise to jealousy between the North and the South, 348; opinions of Jefferson on slavery, 356; his forebodings, 357; of Governor Morris, 349, 358; of John Jay, 358; of William Livingston, 358; of Robert R. Livingston, 358; of George Bryan, of Pennsylvania, 359, 360; of Joseph Reed, of Pennsylvania, 359; of Gordon the historian, 361; how far had it been removed in Virginia, 356; in Delaware, 357; in New York and New Jersey, 358; it remained a primary element in the social organization of South Carolina, 360; how disposed of by the treaty of 1782, 351.

Slaves, negro, trade in, beginning of, i. 169; not sanctioned by the Roman pontiff, 172; introduced into New England, 173, 174; and Virginia, 176; the negro in Virginia, ii. 193; in New Netherlands, 303; in Pennsylvania, 401; in the Carolinas, iii. 20; in New Jersey, 49; the traffic in slaves enriches England, 233, 412; great activity of the slave-trade, 402; extent of the slave coast, 402; slave-trade, how conducted, 403; sources of the supply, 403; solution of the problem, 403; the slave in Africa, 404; on the passage across the ocean, 405; great loss of life, 405; the number actually imported into the English colonies, 406, 411; their condition here, 406, 407; a marked progress, 408; the English colonies always opposed to the slave-trade, 410; Congress forbids the traffic, 411; number of slaves imported, 411, 414; number thrown into the Atlantic on the passage, 412; pecuniary returns to the merchants, 412; public opinion sanctioned the traffic, 412; as did the civil law, 413; and the national policy, 414; no more to be imported into Virginia, vii. 84; the continental congress inaugurate the abolition of the slave-trade, 148; the British ministry and the king give orders to Gage to excite them to cut their masters' throats, 222; Dunmore threatens to free and arm the slaves in Virginia, 276, 386; Dunmore would have them rise against their masters, viii. 223.

Slave-trade prohibited by Congress, viii. 321; in Virginia, might be attached to the soil and entailed, ix. 280; attempt to abolish slavery, 281; why the attempt failed, 281; slaves in Pennsylvania side with the British, 401; in South Carolina, proposal to make soldiers of them, x. 291, 292; contested by British officers, and sold, 292, 299; many perish from want, 294; many join the enemy, 294; many shipped to the West Indies, 299.

Slave-trade encouraged by England, iv. 62,

- 63, 146; eagerly pursued, v. 267; opposed by Virginia, vi. 71, 413, 414; the king forbids it to be obstructed, 413; upheld by the British government, x. 347; Chancellor Thurlow defends it, 347; could not be interdicted in the United States under the old confederation, 352.
- Slavonic race, extent of the, v. 8, 9.
- Sloughter, Henry, governor of New York, iii. 53; arrests Leisler, 54; procures his execution, 55.
- Smallwood, colonel of Maryland troops, his aspersions on the courage of Connecticut soldiers, ix. 123; quoted, 175, *note*; at White Plains, 181; brings a re-enforcement to Washington, 403; not to be found when most wanted, x. 322.
- Smith, Adam, his great ability, viii. 174; his noble sentiments in regard to the controversy with the colonies, 174, 175.
- Smith, James, visits the region of the Ohio, vi. 34.
- Smith, John, engages in the scheme of colonization, i. 118; arrives in Virginia, 124; excluded from the council, 125; his early life and character, 127, 128; his strange adventures, 127, 128; explores the interior of Virginia, 129; a captive among the Indians, 130; regarded by them with reverence, 130; conducted to Powhatan, 131; rescued from death by Pocahontas, 131; is released, and returns to Jamestown, 132; explores the Chesapeake, 133; ascends the Potomac to Georgetown, 134; his map of the country still extant, 134; is made president of Virginia, 134; his energetic administration, 134; returns to England, 138; ingratitude of the company in England, 138; his eminent services and extraordinary character, 139; examined touching Virginia affairs, 187; asserts the true policy of England, 269; explores the coasts of New England, 269; gives that name to the country, 270; his unsuccessful attempt to colonize it, 270; taken by pirates, 270; succeeds in forming a second Plymouth company, 271.
- Smith, John, of Boston, one of "the Sons of Liberty" in 1765, v. 310.
- Smith, Joshua Hett, implicated in the treason of Arnold, and how, x. 383; conductor of André on his return, 386.
- Smith, Lieutenant-Colonel, commands the expedition to Concord, vii. 238; his indecision, 304; his retreat, 305, *et seq.*; rapidity of the retreat, 309; his falsehoods, 318, 321.
- Smith, Samuel, lieutenant-colonel, commands at Fort Mifflin on Mud Island, ix. 422; is wounded, and leaves the fort, 433.
- Smith, Thomas, governor of South Carolina, iii. 14, 15.
- Smith, William, of New York, desires an American parliament, iv. 268, 428; his discreet course in a time of high excitement, v. 357; one of the triumvirate of patriotic lawyers, vi. 141; his letter quoted, 316; an advocate of union under the auspices of the British king, vii. 108.
- Smith, William, of New York, the historian, seconds the intrigues of Governor Tryon, viii. 215.
- Smyth, chief-justice of New Jersey, vi. 451.
- Smuggling carried on by the English, iii. 231, 402, 426, 435, 436; cause of a war with Spain, 438; practised at Boston, iv. 27; at New York, 85, 147.
- Society, ancient forms of, doomed to be broken, iv. 4; great changes in, 12, 13; every form of it contains the two elements of law and freedom, viii. 118, 119; for constitutional information votes money for sufferers in America, vii. 344.
- Sokokis, an Indian tribe, iii. 238.
- Soldiers billeted in private houses, iv. 236, 240.
- Somers, Lord John, Baron of Evesham, lord-keeper of the great seal, leader of the Whig party at the revolution, iii. 4; opposes the restoration of the charter to Massachusetts, 79.
- Somers, Sir George, wrecked on Bermuda, i. 137.
- "Sons of Liberty," the phrase first used, v. 240; universally adopted in America, 241; what they did in Boston, 310; a widespread and powerful organization, 440, 441; the organization dissolved, vi. 30, 35; of New York, this organization still in existence in 1774, vii. 40; they propose a general congress, 40; this their last achievement, 41.
- Sothel, Seth, acquires a proprietary right in Carolina, ii. 161; is governor of that province, 163; an infamous, worthless character, 163; is deposed in North Carolina, 164; chosen by the people governor of South Carolina, iii. 14.
- Soto (see *De Soto*).
- South, voices from the, vii. 49, *et seq.*
- South Carolina visited by Spaniards, i. 36; natives carried off as slaves, 36; the name how derived, 62; a colony of Huguenots arrive, i. 61, 66, 68; emigrants from England settle there, ii. 166; a free, representative government established, 168; the settlers resist the proprietaries, 168; hardships endured, 169; Charleston founded, 170; slavery coeval with the state, 170; arrival of Dutch emigrants, 171; emigrants from England and Scotland, 172, 173; Huguenot emigration, 174-183; struggle of the people with the proprietaries, 184-185; the people prevail, 187; population in 1688, ii. 450; character of the early settlers, iii. 13; factions in the colony, 14; Sothel governor, 14; Thomas Smith governor, 14; effect of the English revolution, 14; struggle again between the people and the proprietaries, 15; arbitrary conduct of the latter, 14, 15, 19; the constitution of Shaftesbury and Locke perishes, 14, 15, 19; emigration flows in from abroad, 17; the Huguenots, 17; High-Church faction, 18;



Church of England established by law, 18; cultivation of rice introduced from Madagascar, 20; the fur trade, 20; expedition against St. Augustine, 209; this involves the colony in debt, 209; invasion by the French, 211; the invaders repelled, 211; succor afforded to North Carolina against the Tuscaroras, 320; war with the Yamassees, 326; the people throw off the proprietary government, 328, 329; the colony becomes a royal province, 330; the proprietaries sell their rights to the crown, 331; paper money, 338; political dissatisfaction of, *iv.* 38; inclination towards union, 75; its first movement towards confederation, 88; joins in council with the northern colonies, 83; a company from South Carolina join Washington in his first campaign, 120; population in 1754, 123, 130; its political and social condition, 131, 132; favored by the parent state, 131; endeavors to hinder the importation of negro slaves, 422; expedition against the Cherokees, 423, *et seq.* (see *Cherokees*); discontent of the province toward England, 426; long strife with its royal governor on a question of privilege, *v.* 150; the assembly decides for a congress of the colonies, 293; its delegates arrive, 333; their names, 333; they act well their part, 343; complains of the arbitrary measures of the British government, *vi.* 14, 43; approves the doings of Massachusetts, 167, 235, 309; defects in the judicial system of South Carolina, 183; refuses compliance with the billeting act, 309; its social connection with England, 317; population in 1769, 317; slave-trade, 317; makes a liberal remittance to London in aid of the cause of liberty, 319; zealous in the cause, 336; wide discontent at the insults offered by the ministry, 411; affections of the province alienated from England, 410; governor infringes the rights of the assembly and dissolves them, 447; determined spirit of the province, 471; the tea refused, 488; the colony in a disordered state, 505; condition of, in 1774, *vii.* 51; its close connection with England, 51; warm affection for the mother country, 51; its numerous slaves hostages for loyalty, 51; its sympathy for Boston, 51; and patriotic spirit, 52; contributes promptly for the relief of Boston, 62, 73; elects delegates to a general congress, 81; opposition of her delegates to the prohibition of exporting rice, 147; general convention of the colony, 172; another convention, 205; adopts the recommendations of Congress, 206; firm spirit of the people, 251; they associate themselves for defence and raise a military force, 336; its condition in 1775, *viii.* 84; rash conduct of its governor, 84; news of the battle of Bunker Hill, 85; the patriot party, 85; the legislature inactive, 85; two distinct populations in the province, 85, 86; different in origin, in religion, in political affinities, 86; the planters on

the sea, gentlemen, connected with England, despise the rude settlers in the interior, recently from continental Europe, 86; struggle for superiority, 86; open hostilities, 87; danger from the savages, 87; the governor urges the ministry to employ force, 89; his arrest proposed, 89; Congress advise South Carolina to establish a government, 137; expedition planned against South Carolina, 158, 159; the convention of the province approves the proceedings of Congress, 345; opinions in the convention divided, 346; Sullivan's Island fortified, 346; paper money issued, 347; hesitation about instituting government, 347; the act of Parliament prohibiting American Congress is received, 347; a constitution of civil government is established, 347; its provisions, 347, 348; John Rutledge president, 348; his speech on accepting the office, 348; the government formally inaugurated, 348, 349; condition of the inhabitants, 349; courage of the planters, 350; the legislature firm for union with the other colonies, 350; the supreme court declares George III. to have abdicated the government, 352, 353; attack on Fort Moultrie repulsed and South Carolina saved, 404-412; welcomes the Declaration of Independence, *ix.* 36; war made on its western settlements by the Indians, 161; the Indians totally defeated, 161, 162; and sue for peace, 161, 162; form of civil government established by the legislature, not by the people, 261; great inequality of representation, 265; disposition of church property, 277; attempt to have a religion of the state, 277; South Carolina is silent as touching the rights of man, 282; its new constitution, *v.* 153, 154; invaded by British troops, 287; the seat of war, 290, *et seq.*; neutrality proposed, 293; the people disheartened and sick of the war, 292, 298, the paper money worthless, 298, 303; sufferings of the population, 299, 300; many disaffected, 302; opposition to British rule ceases, 306; the state supposed to be thoroughly subdued, 308; instances of British perfidy and cruelty, 300, 307, 310, 311, 312; Washington sends De Kalb with the Maryland division to their relief, 314; cruel treatment of the people by the British, 328; yet the people never conquered, 330, 332.

Southern campaign, *x.* 456, *et seq.*; as conducted by Greene, 485, *et seq.*; southern troops, their good conduct and good success, 496.

Southern department, including the colonies, entrusted to Pelham, Duke of Newcastle, *iv.* 18; to the Duke of Bedford, 21.

Southern Indians quiet, *iv.* 193 (see *Catawbas*, *Cherokees*, *Chickasaws*).

South Sea Company, financial dreams connected with it, *iii.* 401; the Assiento, 401; the slave-trade, 401; owe the king of Spain, 437.



Sovereignty of the states asserted in all parts of the country, 352.

Spain, her early love of adventure, i. 30; her conquests in the New World, 31; discovers Florida, 33; enters the Gulf of Mexico, 35; reaches the Mississippi river, 51; claims all North America, 60; discovers the Chesapeake, 60; exterminates the French colony in Florida, 70; extent of the Spanish dominion in North America, 73; colonial system of Spain, iii. 114; she becomes involved in the destiny of English America, 206; character of the Spanish people, 206; decline of Spanish wealth and power, 207; possessions of Spain in Europe, 207; war with England, 209; occupies Florida, 209; loses her European provinces, but retains her colonies, 229; Spanish jealousy of France, 347; Spanish commercial monopoly, 400; encroachments on it by English cupidity, 402, 436; Spain claims the whole territory of Georgia, 416; and threatens hostility in consequence, 432; convention with Spain, 437; is rejected by England and war declared, 438; Spanish invasion of Georgia, 445; her demands on England, iv. 401; the Family compact, 403; special convention between Spain and France, 404; England declares war against Spain, 432, 433; Spain loses many treasure ships, 438; loses Havana, 444; which England resigns for Florida, 451; treaty of peace signed, 452; her position and political relations in 1763, v. 14, *et seq.*; sunk to a fourth-rate power, 16; its natural advantages neutralized by unsound policy, 16, 17; its people poor and wretched, 16; its hatred of England, 17; surrender of Louisiana to her, 192; is eager for war with England, vi. 52; resolves not to pay the ransom for Manila, 53; hopes that England will master her colonies, 182; declines to interfere in the dispute, 237; sides against the colonies, 259; supports a restrictive system of trade, 259; fears England much, but fears America more, 260; resolves to recover New Orleans, 261; the design carried out with great cruelty, 292, *et seq.*; dispute with England respecting the Falkland Islands, 387; contributes a million of French livres to aid America, viii. 343; opens her ports to American ships, ix. 71; even to privateers, 71; not friendly to American independence, 71; indifferent to the American struggle, 290; the discoverer of the western world, 301; multiform origin of her people, 301; her great historical names, 302; great natural advantages, 302; want of a good government, 302; the church and the throne alike revered, 302; chivalry, 303; the Austrian dynasty, 303; the House of Bourbon, 303; the Family compact, 304; Grimaldi, prime minister, 304; ministry of Florida Blanca, 304; his character 304; his influence on the king, 306; reasons why Spain was opposed to American independence, 306, 307; Spain unpre-

pared for war, 307; ruined by monopoly, 307; without an efficient navy, 308; an American embassy not to appear at Madrid, 308, 309; Spanish court drawn towards France, 309; its fear of England, 310; desires the friendship of France, 310; Spain aids America secretly, 310; Spain will not join France in the American alliance, 503; Spain and France contrasted, 503; the French and Spanish mind contrasted, 504; no free thought in Spain, 504; her recent disasters and wasting power, x. 47; her foreign dependencies ill governed and scarcely held in subjection, 48; no sentiment of union between her and her dominions abroad, 48; encroachments of foreign nations, 48; illicit trade on the Spanish-American coast, 48; dangers attending her hold on her American provinces, 49; therefore averse to the American revolution, 50; fears what may ensue from its success, 158, 181; wishes that England may hold New York and other seaports, 182; wishes to maintain a firm hold on the Mississippi and its affluents, 183; this matter discussed between the French and Spanish ministers, 183; she intends to exclude the United States from the entire valley of the Mississippi, 186; wants Gibraltar, 186; Spanish policy wavers with regard to the American contest, 160; bad effect of this on France, 160; consequently the most favorable chances for the conduct of the war are thrown away, 162; frivolous measures of both France and Spain, 163; Spain tries diplomacy and it fails, 164, 165; she offers mediation and it is rejected, 165; frivolous conduct again and chicanery, 196; the Spanish designs on our western rivers utterly baffled, 194-201; Spain declares war against Great Britain, 246; imbroglio of Spain with Russia, 276; Spain repents of going to war with England, 441; wishes for peace, 442; opposed to the independence of the United States, and why, 442; intensely hates America as an independent power, 538; dreads the effect on her own colonies, 539; hopes to recover Gibraltar, 539; the only obstacle to peace, 574; fails in the attempt, 581.

Spaniards, their right of discovery, i. 30; their love of maritime adventure, 31; their numerous voyages to North America, 33, *et seq.*; undertake the conquest of Florida, 39; their sufferings, 39*b*; failure of the enterprise, 40, *et seq.*; under De Soto traverse Florida, Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, and Louisiana, 43-59; destroy the French settlement in Florida, 71; extent of the Spanish dominions in America, 73.

Spanish town of St. Louis, vi. 223.

Spencer, General, at Providence, ix. 412.

Spencer, Joseph, general of the Connecticut troops near Boston, vii. 325; at Roxbury, 405; elected brigadier-general, viii. 31; his dulness, ix. 118; driven back to White Plains, 180.

- Spencer, Oliver, of New Jersey, puts to flight a party of Waldeckers, ix. 251.
- Spencer, Thomas, his heroic death, ix. 379.
- Spotswood, governor of Virginia, ii. 453, iii. 23, 24, 29, 30, 107; the best in the series, 30; endeavors to check French influence over the west, 344.
- Stamp act, proposed, v. 88; the measure not Mr. Grenville's, 89, *note*; but Jenkinson's, 89, *note*; its authorship discussed, 151, 152; the responsibility on Grenville, 152; a stamp tax for America generally desired in England, 179; Richard Jackson advises Grenville against the measure, 181; Lord Hillsborough and the board of trade against it, 181; Grenville defers it for a year, 183; gives notice of his intention to bring it forward, 187; tries to procure the consent of the colonies, 189, 190; alarm in the colonies at the prospect, 194, *et seq.*; Franklin and other Americans in England remonstrate, 230, 231; the measure introduced, 233; arguments of Grenville and Townshend for it, 236, 239; great speech of Barré against it, 239-241; speech of Conway, 244; and of Yorke, 246; the stamp act passes, 247; stamp officers appointed, 250; great dissatisfaction with it in the colonies, 270-280, 285, *et seq.*; no hope of its repeal, 305, 306; the policy of employing Americans under it fails, 308; denounced in Boston, 309; stamp officers compelled to resign, 310, *et seq.*; the first of November, 352; the press bold in defying the stamp act, 353; in New York the people rise as one man against it, 355, 356; universal rejection of it in all the colonies, 358, *et seq.*; debates in Parliament about this act and kindred measures, 358; arguments against repeal, 369; the stamps burned at New York, 378; the act denounced by Pitt in Parliament and its repeal demanded, 391-395; repeal of the stamp act, 436; followed by great rejoicings in England and in America, 454, 457; its repeal celebrated in Boston, vi. 134; the rejoicing represented by Bernard as a fearful riot, 134; Grenville assumes the responsibility of the act, 353; expenses of the office exceeded the income, 434.
- Stamp tax proposed by Sir William Keith, iv. 58; by William Douglas, 58; the proposal rejected by Sir Robert Walpole, 85; proposed also by William Shirley, 223; by Horatio Sharpe, 167; by James Delaney, 180; and by many others, 100, 180.
- Standish, Miles, the military leader of the Pilgrims, i. 311, 316; saves the colony by his intrepid behavior, 319.
- Stanhope, a British officer, breaks his parole, viii. 67.
- Stanhope, Earl (Philip Stanhope), favors parliamentary reform, vi. 357, 361; protests against the rash proceedings of the ministry in 1774, vii. 178.
- Stanley, Hans, sent to Paris, iv. 396, 398, 402; furnishes important information, 404, *note*; his speech against the colonies, vi. 231.
- Stanwix, Fort, strength of its garrison, ix. 378; besieged by St. Leger, 378; delivered, 380, 381.
- Stanwix, General, iv. 256, 305.
- Star chamber, its severe measures, i. 409.
- Stark, John, of New Hampshire, a captive among the Indians, iv. 93; a lieutenant in the army of Johnson, 206; his combat with a superior French force, 251; in the expedition against Ticonderoga, 298; his sound judgment, 301; leads a regiment to the scene of conflict near Boston, vii. 314; stationed at Chelsea, 315; marches to support Prescott at Bunker Hill, 416, 419; his calm courage, 419; completes the line of defence to the Mystic, 419; bids his men reserve their fire, 424; his gallant conduct, 424, 430; sent with re-enforcements to Canada, viii. 422; joins Washington on the Delaware, ix. 223; crosses with him, 230; his gallant behavior at Trenton, 233; to pay the troops, he pledges his own fortune, 241; in the battle of Princeton, 250; is slighted by Congress, 335; retires to his farm, 336; with a brigade of militia marches to oppose Baum, 384; battle of Bennington, 385; death of Baum, and surrender of his troops, 385; Breymann comes up, a new conflict ensues, Breymann retreats, 385; a brilliant victory, 386; obstructs the retreat of Burgoyne, 419; appointed to go on a winter expedition to Canada, 462.
- Staten Island, Lord Howe arrives there, ix. 38; British troops retreat to that place, 356; Sullivan's raid there, 390.
- Stephen, Adam, his brave words, vii. 250; commands a division in Washington's army, ix. 396; his "unofficer-like conduct," 397; leads a division at the battle of Germantown, 424, 427; court-martial, 397, *note*.
- Stephens, William, an eminent shipwright, i. 415 \*.
- Stephenson, Marmaduke, a Quaker, hanged at Boston, i. 456.
- Sterling, colonel of a Highland regiment in the capture of Fort Washington, ix. 191, 193.
- Steuben, Baron Frederic William Augustus, a Prussian officer, ix. 469; falsely assumes high rank, 469; elected major-general, 469; and inspector-general, 469; at Monmouth, x. 131, *note*; commands the American troops in Virginia, 497; joins Lafayette, 499; his further operations, 504, 505.
- Stevens, commands a regiment of Virginians at Brandywine, ix. 398; joins Gates near Camden, x. 319; his brigade of militia driven from the field, 322.
- Stevens, Samuel, governor of Carolina, ii. 151; dies, 156.
- Stewart, colonel of a Pennsylvania regiment at Brandywine, ix. 398; commands a regiment at Monmouth, x. 131.
- Stewart, Lieutenant-Colonel (British), of the Guards, killed at Guilford Court-house, x. 478.

- Stirling, Earl of (William Alexander), enters the army as colonel of the battalion of New Jersey, viii. 72; places Governor Franklin under arrest, 245; brigadier in the battle of Long Island, ix. 88, 89; his heroic conduct, 92, 93; is compelled to surrender, 94; is exchanged, 187; with Washington at the Hightlands, 187; commands a detachment at Princeton, 201; with Washington at the crossing of the Delaware, 230; a Hessian regiment surrender to him at Trenton, ix. 234; is worsted in the engagement near Scotch Plains, 356; commands a division, as major-general, on the Brandywine, 396, 397; at Germantown, 424; averse to an attack on the British force, x. 128; his firm stand at Monmouth, 132.
- Stockbridge Indians, their friendship courted by Congress, vii. 280; in the army near Boston, viii. 43, 44.
- Stone, deputy of Lord Baltimore, in Maryland, is displaced, i. 259; resumes his authority, 260; is defeated, and narrowly escapes death, 262.
- Stone, Samuel, of Hartford, i. 399; chaplain in the Pequod war, 399.
- Stone, Thomas, delegate in Congress from Maryland, ix. 56.
- Stony Point, abandoned by the Americans, x. 226; retaken by Wayne, 228.
- Stormont, Viscount (D. W. Murray), his interview with the king of France, viii. 163; and with Vergennes, 164; protests against aid furnished by France to America, ix. 286; reply of Vergennes, 286; his remonstrances have little effect, 287; his violent language, 297; his arrogant reply to Franklin and Deane, 313; his character, x. 426; his arrogant language towards the Dutch, 426, 430, 431, 435, 438.
- Stoughton, William, agent in England for Massachusetts, ii. 112; returns without success, 122; one of the judges at the trials for witchcraft, iii. 75, 88; lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts, 83, 97.
- Strafford, Earl of, his advice to Charles I., ii. 3; his attainder and execution, 5.
- Strickland Plain, battle of, between the Dutch and Indians, ii. 293, *note*.
- Stuart, Charles Edward, the young Pretender, iii. 451; invades England, 451.
- Stuart, Henry, a British agent, retires from Charleston to St. Augustine, viii. 87; obeys the order of Gage to employ Indians against Carolina, 88; inflames the savages against the Americans, ix. 160, 161.
- Stuart, James, a prisoner among the Cherokee Indians, iv. 355, 356.
- Stuart, John, British agent to negotiate with the Southern Indians, vi. 225; meets the chiefs in council, 226; his treaty with the Cherokees, 227.
- Stuart, John, Earl of Bute (see *Bute*).
- Stuart family, its vices and misfortunes, iii. 1; benefits arising therefrom to the English colonies, 2.
- Stuarts, their colonial policy, i. 187, 194, 212, 219, 409; their restoration, ii. 1, 30; their spirit of revenge, 32, 34; their crimes, 410; their despotic sway, 438; their overthrow, 444; their misfortunes, iii. 1; their monuments in the New World, 1.
- Strachey, Henry, sent to Paris to assist Oswald in the negotiation for peace, x. 583; his instructions, 583; takes part in the negotiation, 584, 586.
- Stuyvesant, Peter, governor of New Netherland, ii. 293; negotiates with Connecticut, 295; leads an expedition to the conquest of New Sweden, 297; rebuked for maladministration, 300; refuses the demands of the people, 307; his visit to Boston, 310; surrenders New Netherland to an English squadron, 314.
- Subserviency of an English politician, ix. 75.
- Suffolk County, in Massachusetts, a convention of its towns assembles at Stoughton, vii. 109; reassembles at Dedham in September, 1774, 122; its brave resolutions, 123; these resolutions approved by Congress, 134.
- Suffolk, Earl of (Howard), becomes secretary of state for the colonies, vi. 389; is determined to reduce the Americans to obedience, vii. 202; writes for Russian troops to be employed in America, viii. 149, 150; his instructions to Faucitt, 255; urges expedition, 265, ix. 314; justifies the employment of Indians, 365.
- Suffrage, universal, in Virginia, i. 231, ii. 188; the practice ceases, 195.
- Sullivan, John, of New Hampshire, a member of the continental congress, vii. 184; with a party dismantles the fort at Portsmouth, 184; elected brigadier-general, viii. 31; his character, 31; sent to fortify Portsmouth, 113; sent with re-enforcements to Canada, 422; the command of the northern army devolves on him, 429; his vanity, 429; he retreats from Sorel, 431; halts at Isle aux Noix, 432; arrives at Crown Point, 433; is superseded by Gates, 432; commands on Long Island, ix. 83; is superseded by Putnam, 85; is taken prisoner, 92; is exchanged for Prescott, 108; proposes to Lord Howe to visit Philadelphia as a go-between, 108; his reception in Congress, 110; John Adams's contempt for him, 110; mistakes the offers of Lord Howe, 111; Lord Howe disavows the message brought by Sullivan, 117; Sullivan brings to Washington Lee's division, 223; is with him in crossing the Delaware, 230; leads part of the force, 232, 233; his disrespect to Washington, 337; stationed at Princeton, 351; avoids an attack, 352; his ill-conducted expedition to Staten Island, 390; his delay in joining Washington, 390, 393; disobeys the orders of Washington, 396; his blunder, 397; the consequences, 397, 398; commands a division at the battle of Germantown, 424; joins in the intrigues of the Conway cabal, 456; his absurd advice, 460; commands on Rhode Island, x. 147; his indiscretion and



- inefficiency, 148; censures D'Estaing, and recalls the censure, 148; withdraws to the mainland, 149; disappointment of the people, 149; his invasion of the Indian country, 230; his slow and careless march, 232.
- Sumner, General, of North Carolina, at battle of Eutaw, x. 493.
- Sumpter, Thomas, Colonel, of South Carolina, leader of a patriot force, x. 312; his methods to obtain arms, 313; surprises and destroys a British force, 313; a further success, 314; Andrew Jackson is with him, 314; captures a convoy, 320; his carelessness, 324; his great loss in consequence, 325; greatly harasses the British, 330; intercepts British supplies, 343; defeats Tarleton, 343; is wounded, 343; general, 485; takes Orangeburgh, 489.
- Sunbury, in Georgia, its surrender demanded, x. 284; occupied by the British, 286.
- Superior, Lake, first known by white men, iii. 131; missionaries sent thither, 131; first visited by traders, 146; a mission begun on its shores, 150.
- Supremacy of Parliament, what it meant in 1688, x. 37; in its exaggerated form an instrument of despotism, 38; and subversive of individual right, 38.
- Surrender of Charleston, x. 305; surrender of Cornwallis, 522; the news reaches Congress, 523; it reaches France, 524; and England, 524; how the news was received, 524; Fox rejoices at it, 524.
- Susquehanna tribe at war with Maryland, ii. 215.
- Sweden takes part in American colonization, ii. 284; a company formed for this purpose, 284; a colony settles on the Delaware, 286; the colony extends to the neighborhood of Philadelphia, 287; the colony subdued by the Dutch from New Netherland, 297; favors the American cause, and stands for the liberty of the seas, x. 55, 264; is a party to the armed neutrality, 274, 281, 429.
- Swiss, in North Carolina, iii. 24; on the Savannah, 417; mercenary troops, viii. 254.
- Switzerland, the forerunner and friend of American liberty, x. 57.
- Sydney, Algernon, ii. 349, 366; his execution, 439.
- Synod of 1637 in Massachusetts, i. 390; of 1648, 443; the "Reforming Synod" of 1679, ii. 121; desired, iii. 391; refused, 391.
- T.
- Talbot, Silas, has command of a fire-brig, ix. 125.
- Talon, intendant of New France, iii. 153; his great designs, 154; promotes the discovery of the Mississippi, 156.
- Tar and feathers used in Boston, vi. 313, 493; applied by British officers on an inoffensive citizen, vii. 256.
- Tarleton, Bannastre, Colonel, partisan British officer, x. 306; destroys the detachment of Colonel Buford, 307; receives high praise for this massacre, 307; commits great ravages, 319; puts Sumpter to flight, 325; his cruel advice, 327; his merciless conduct, 342; attacks Sumpter, but is totally defeated, 343; is sent to attack Morgan, 461; attacks him at the Cowpens, 463; but suffers a thorough defeat, 464; his remarkable activity in Virginia, 504, 505; spares Jefferson's property, 505; his great ravages, 508; barely escapes capture, 518.
- Taxation and representation not to be separated, iii. 10, viii. 128; taxation of the colonies recommended, 383; Sir Robert Walpole averse to it, 383; taxation first resorted to, 385; of the colonies proposed, iv. 32, 33; by Clinton and Shirley, 32; by Lord Mansfield, 32; by Shirley, 52, 172, 178, 222; by Colden, 54, 57; by Keith, 58; by Douglas, 58; by Clinton, 62; by many others, 100, 115, 167; by the board of trade, 100; taxation determined on, 101, 171, 180, 223, 239; advised by the royal governors, 177, 178, 380; by Braddock, 178; by men in office generally, 178; by Gage, 221, 222; by Dinwiddie, 167, 178, 222; the board of trade mature the system, 379 (see *Poll tax*, *Stamp tax*); not to be effected by the royal prerogative, v. 80; but by Parliament, 80; the first proposal of the measure in that body, 88; the colonies will not yield to the king's requisitions for a revenue, 153; therefore Parliament must impose the tax, 154; the supposed necessity of it, 152, *et seq.*; the right to do it not controverted in Parliament, 187; the system openly inaugurated, 187, 188; alarm in the colonies, 194, *et seq.*; Adams, Otis, Thacher, Livingston, 196-200; Hutchinson opposes the measure, 206-209; Franklin and other Americans in England remonstrate, 230, 231; speeches for and against it, 236, *et seq.*; great speech of Barré, 240; petitions against the measure not heard, 244, 246; the stamp tax passes, 247; receives the royal assent, 247, 248; legitimate results of such an act, 269; general dissatisfaction in the colonies, 270-280, 285, *et seq.* (see *Stamp Act*); Pitt in Parliament denies its competency to tax America, 383-387, 391-395; taxation and representation go together, 344, 348, 385, 387, 403, 443, 447; inconsistent with civil liberty, vi. 5; the plan due to the advice of Bernard, 41; no distinction between internal and external taxation, 48, 74; Charles Townshend determined on taxing America, 48, 58, 76, 84; his revenue bills pass, 84; the Americans deny the right of Parliament to tax them, 41, 51, 121, 123, 126, 145, 146, 149, 151, 166, 193, 205, 234, 247, 280, 353; they resist, but in a passive form, 98, 103, 129, 132, 150, 153, 204, 272, 308, 311; the revenue acts repealed, except the duty on tea, 276, 351; why was this duty retained? 277, 278; this partial repeal declared unsatisfactory, 290, 312, 318; American taxa-



- tion the wish of the king, and he was chiefly responsible for it, 353; the taxation of America a losing concern, 434; the right to tax the colonies denied, 470.
- Taxation inseparable from representation, viii. 128.
- "Taxation no Tyranny," an abusive pamphlet written by Johnson in behalf of the ministry, vii. 258-260.
- Taxes, exclusive right of the colonial legislatures to levy them, iv. 19; heavy self-imposed taxes in Massachusetts and Connecticut, 292, 293.
- Taxing America, plans for, iv. 100, 116, 340, 370, 379, 414, 439, 440, 454; the right to do this denied, 447.
- Taylor, Jeremy, compared with Roger Williams, i. 376; his opinion of Anabaptists, 432.
- Tea, a duty laid on it by Parliament, vi. 84; produces only a paltry sum, 274, 276; yet the ministry refuse to have it repealed, 277; this reserve was to please the king, 277; a consignment of tea sent back from Boston, 311; advance in the price, 329; the women renounce the use of it, 333; Lord Chatham recommends the repeal of the duty, 351; Thomas Pownall recommends it, 353; Parliament refuse, 353; the repeal again urged and refused, 360; again urged and refused, 519-523; trade between America and England is open in every thing but tea, 366; shipped to America by the East India Company, 470; resolutions of Philadelphia against it, 470; the tea consignees give up their office, 471; the Boston tea party, 472-487; the tea thrown overboard, 486, 487; the tea ship sent back from New York, 525; thrown overboard at Boston, not to be paid for, vii. 36, 62, 63, 83; Lord North offers to repeal the duty, 225; this duty the original cause of the dispute, 226; tax on, levied by Townshend, and supported by Lord North, viii. 126; shipped to America by the East India Company, 127.
- Telfair, Edward, and others, in Savannah, obtain possession of the king's magazine, vii. 337.
- Temple, Earl (see *Grenville, Earl Temple*).
- Temple, Earl (Richard Grenville), brother of George Grenville, and brother-in-law of Pitt, v. 141, 146, 247, 257, 258, might have been first lord of the treasury, 262; refuses the office, 262; interview with Pitt, 267; he justifies the stamp act, 297; and again refuses office, 297; advocates taxation in America, 402, 403; he and other peers protest against the repeal of the stamp act, 453; is invited by Pitt to take office under him, but refuses, vi. 20.
- Temple, John, one of the commissioners of 'customs, vi. 154, *note*, 157; Bernard and Hutchinson wish him removed from office, 249; his letters quoted, 249; in England, 403; discovers that all the oppressive measures of England were prompted by some of the Americans, 435; denies the charge of purloining those letters, 491; his duel with William Whately, 492.
- Temporary expedients to carry on the war, x. 401, 405, *et seq.*
- Ten Broeck, Abraham, his motion in the New York assembly, vii. 210.
- Ten Broeck, General, in the battle of Bemis's Heights, ix. 416.
- Tennent, Rev. William, viii. 87.
- Tennessee settled, iv. 243; the whole region left to be inhabited by wild beasts, v. 166; origin of, vi. 377, *et seq.*; trappers and emigrants, 380; its settlement begun, 381; the republic on the Watanga, 398, 399, 401 (see *Regulators*); Eastern, faithful to the patriot cause, ix. 160, 164; their struggle against the Indians, 161; name their district Washington, 164.
- Ternay, Admiral De, arrives at Newport with a French squadron, x. 376.
- Texas claimed as part of Louisiana, iii. 171, 353.
- Thacher, Oxenbridge, iv. 379, 415.
- Thacher, Oxenbridge, of Boston, his sentiments in regard to the taxation of the colonies, v. 206, 269; his patriotic words from his deathbed, 285.
- Thanksgiving Day, manifestations of popular feeling on it, vi. 408.
- Thayer, Colonel Ebenezer, of Braintree, vii. 109; commands a Rhode Island company in the expedition against Quebec, viii. 191.
- Thayer, Major Simeon, commands at Fort Mifflin, below Philadelphia, ix. 433; his able defence, 434; "an officer of the highest merit," 435; evacuates the fort, 435.
- Theocracy in Massachusetts, i. 362\*; justified by impending dangers, 363.
- Theories of government must give place to analysis, viii. 118.
- Thirteen Colonies, the Old, iv. 127, *et seq.*; population in 1754, white, 128; black, 129, 130; social and political condition of each, 130, *et seq.*
- Thirty years' war drove multitudes to America, x. 83.
- Thomas, John, of Kingston, commands the American forces at Roxbury, vii. 321; elected brigadier-general, viii. 31; commands the right wing of the American army around Boston, 43; commands the working party on Dorchester Heights, 294; raised to the rank of major-general, 423; takes command of the northern army, 424; finds the army weak and in bad condition, 424; is compelled to order a retreat, 425; dies at Sorel of small-pox, 429.
- Thompson, William, colonel of a Pennsylvania regiment in 1775, viii. 64; sent as brigadier with re-enforcements to Canada, 421; makes an unsuccessful attempt on Three Rivers, and is taken prisoner, 429, 430.
- Thomson, Charles, of Philadelphia, vii. 43, 44; secretary of Congress, 127; a Burgess of Philadelphia, 141.
- Thomson, Colonel William, of Orangeburg, in South Carolina, a man of rare worth,

- viii. 402; assists in the defence of Charleston, 402, 405.
- Thorne, Robert, proposes a north-east passage to India, i. 76.
- Three Rivers, in Canada, unsuccessful attack on by the Americans, viii. 429.
- Thurlow, Edward, afterwards Lord Thurlow, solicitor-general, his bad character, vi. 358; his hatred of America, 358; his opinion touching the burning of the "Gaspee," 441; he finds treason in the conduct of some Americans, 523; his legal opinion in favor of despotism, vii. 58; his memory dear to Canadian Catholics, 158; he is for pursuing vigorous measures towards the colonies, 223; thinks the provincial congress of Massachusetts guilty of treason, 281; his unrelenting proceedings against Horne Tooke, 344; denounces a bill to terminate the slave-trade, x. 347; a colleague of Lord North, 530; a defender of the conservative party, 531; Lord Chancellor during the Rockingham ministry, 534; bears Shelburne malice, 534.
- Thury, Jesuit missionary to Penobscot Indians, iii. 181; stimulates them to atrocious acts, 187.
- Ticonderoga, Fort Carillon built there by the French, iv. 212, 238, 251, 260; a large army led against it by Abercrombie, 299; the place described, 299; valor of Montcalm, 300, *et seq.*; incapacity and cowardice of Abercrombie, 302, 303; great carnage, 303; shameful retreat, 304; Fort Carillon abandoned by the French, 323; plan for seizing it, vii. 271*a*, 280, 338; the enterprise undertaken, 339; and crowned with complete success, 340; condition of the army at that post, viii. 52; preparations made there for the invasion of Canada, 177; cannon brought from Ticonderoga to Cambridge, 217; distress of its garrison, ix. 157, 158; supposed to be nearly impregnable, 342; Saint Clair takes command of that post, 361; finds the fort untenable, 361; hastily evacuates it, 366; the fort occupied by the army of Burgoyne, 367; ample stores found there, 367; general alarm from its loss, 373, 374.
- Tilghman, in the action near Manhattanville, ix. 127.
- Tillotson, Archbishop, a friend to Massachusetts, iii. 79.
- Tobacco, first cultivated in Virginia, i. 151; used as currency, 151, 229; given in exchange for wives, 157; taxes paid in it, 189; Virginia supplies with it the British market, 194; the king demands a monopoly of it, 196; debts paid in it, 202; restrictions on its culture and sale, 219; tobacco the circulating medium, iii. 28.
- Toleration first asserted by Roger Williams, i. 376; a zeal for, made a pretence for undermining liberty, 437, 438; of religious opinion and inquiry, how far allowed by the revolution of 1688, iii. 5.
- Tonti, Henri, de, lieutenant to La Salle, iii. 163; with him penetrates the Illinois country, 165; driven thence by the Iroquois, 167; rejoins La Salle, 167; descends the Mississippi in search of him, 174; again descends that river, 195, 203.
- Tonyn, governor of East Florida, is impatient for an attack on Georgia, viii. 400; will raise the Indians to attack South Carolina, 401.
- Tooke, John Horne, persecuted by the English government, vii. 344.
- Tories of Massachusetts, their address to Hutchinson, vii. 46, 47; Daniel Leonard, 62; Tories of Boston endeavor to persuade the citizens to pay for the tea thrown overboard, and to paralyze the spirit of the country, 63, 68; they are disposed to absolute submission, 68; at a town meeting they exert their utmost strength, but are utterly defeated, 69; Tories abound in New York, 208-216; some Tories in Massachusetts, 230; Daniel Leonard, of Taunton, 231; his utterances, 231; on Long Island disarmed, viii. 276; their inhumanity, x. 300, 310, 328, 332, 458.
- Torrington, Viscount, votes against taxing America, v. 413.
- Tory party of England, the new, founded by the Rockingham Whigs, v. 418; its platform, 418, 419; takes possession of the cabinet, vi. 327.
- Towns and cities of England, life in the, v. 50.
- Townshend, Charles, a member of the board of trade, iv. 54, 62, 92; bent on sustaining extended limits in America, 100; defends the application of severe measures to the colonies, 171; retires from office, 220; disagrees with Pitt, 248; his connection with the heir-apparent, 248; secretary of war to George III., 391; resigns this office, 453; his able speech in favor of the treaty of Paris, 453; first lord of trade, v. 79; power assumed by him, 79; his colleagues in council, 80; his purpose and policy for the colonies, 81; rules the House of Commons, 82; his plan of a standing army for the colonies, 83, 86, 88; his scheme for taxing America, 87; retires from the cabinet, 94; declines office under the triumvirate ministry, 103; favors taxing the colonies, 155, 230; is proposed for secretary of state, 256; is again proposed for that office, 303; proposes to deprive America of its charters, vi. 9; condemns "the madness and distractions" of America, 10; becomes chancellor of the exchequer, 20, 21; courts the favor of Grenville and Bedford, 45; his headstrong conduct and arbitrary spirit, 45; his political schemes, 46, 47; sets his colleagues at defiance, and usurps the lead in government, 47, *et seq.*; undertakes to raise a revenue from America, 48; browbeats the ministry, 49; is thrice denounced by Chatham as "incurable," 57; his overbearing conduct towards America, 45, 58, 63; triumphs over Lord Chatham, 60, 61; his character and great abilities, 62; his supremacy in the administration, 63, *et*

- seq.*; his overweening self-confidence, 74; his American policy, 74; his answer to Trecothick, 74; his speech in Parliament on American affairs, 75; he inveighs against Massachusetts and other colonies, 75; holds the right of taxation as indubitable, 76; proposes port duties on wine, oil, fruits, glass, paper, colors, and especially on tea, 76, 77; carries a bill for disfranchising New York, 76, 81; his sudden illness and death, 98; his character, 98, 99; "famed alike for incomparable talents and extreme instability," 98; always feared, never trusted, 98; his fatal bequest to his country, 101; plan of, viii. 123; his colonial system, 125, 126.
- Townshend, George, iv. 170; commands a brigade in Wolfe's army, 324; receives the capitulation of Quebec, of which he claims the credit, 339; visits Boston, 339; returns to England, 340.
- Townshend, Thomas, home secretary in the Shelburne administration, x. 552; his sentiments regarding the peace, 587.
- Trade and plantations, board of commissioners for regulation of, iv. 17; their want of power, 17, 18 (see *Board of Trade*); acts of trade resisted at Boston, 414, *et seq.*; evasions of these acts habitually permitted, 339.
- Trade, American, new regulations of Mr. Grenville, v. 183, 184; illicit, 157, 158; with Great Britain suspended, vi. 272; illicit trade of the Americans, 72 (see *Non-importation*).
- Transportation of white servants, i. 177.
- Transylvania, part of Kentucky, its settlement, vii. 366; its civil constitution and laws, 368, 369; perfect religious freedom, 369 (see *Kentucky*); its inhabitants concur with the people of the United Colonies, viii. 376.
- Treason, accusations of, against the leading patriots of Boston, vi. 251, 252, 257.
- Treat, Robert, governor of Connecticut, declines to surrender the charter, ii. 430; resumes his functions as governor, iii. 66.
- Treaties with foreign powers, committee of Congress for the preparation of, viii. 393.
- Treaty of peace, terms proposed by Lord Shelburne, x. 541; terms insisted on by Franklin, 555; preliminary negotiations, 574, *et seq.*; the treaty signed, 591; character of the treaty, 591; advantages to England derived from it, 591; reflections on the event, 592.
- Trecothick, alderman, a merchant of London, v. 364; examined before the House of Commons, 424, 427.
- Trecothick, Barlow, member of Parliament, waits upon Townshend, and is repulsed, vi. 74; continues his efforts in behalf of America, 239, 273; moves for the repeal of the duty on tea, 360; again advises the remission of that duty, 458.
- Trenton, battle of, Colonel Rall has command there, with a Hessian brigade, ix. 216; Washington determines to attack the enemy, 218; his numbers, 223, *note*; his watchword, 224; his preparations, 223, 224; fancied security of the enemy, 217, 225; the American cause regarded by many as hopeless, 226, 227; Washington crosses the Delaware, 230, 231; state of the weather, 231; sufferings of the troops, 232; names of the officers, 230; the Americans enter Trenton, and find the enemy unprepared, 232, 233; after a short conflict, Rall is killed, and nearly one thousand Hessians are prisoners, 234; effect of the victory, 235.
- Triumvirate ministry,—Grenville, Egremont, and Halifax, v. 96; their difficulties, 103, 104; laughed at, 104; their resolution to tax America, 107, 109; their weakness, 139.
- Triumvirate of Presbyterian lawyers in New York, vi. 141.
- Trumbull, Colonel Joseph, son of Governor Trumbull, commissary-general of the American army, ix. 102, 107.
- Trumbull, Jonathan, lieutenant-governor of Connecticut, his upright character, vi. 83; foresees a separation of the colonies from the mother country, 84, 103; governor, his patriotic letter, 331; convenes the legislature after the combat at Concord, vii. 315, viii. 41; his message to Washington, 41; wishes to keep back a portion of the new levies for the defence of the colony, 69; apologizes to Washington for the desertion of Connecticut soldiers, 219, ix. 57; sends troops to Washington, 79; exhorts them to be brave, 79; his opinion of the offer of Lord Howe to grant pardons, 117, 118; his firm patriotism in the darkest hour of the revolution, 200; his patriotism, x. 503.
- Tryon, royal governor of North Carolina, a savage at heart, vi. 68, 85; marches a body of troops into the Cherokee country, 86; his interview with the Cherokee chiefs, 86; his violent spirit, 189, 190; favors oppressors, 190, 382; assembles an armed force, 190; his gross injustice, 383; considered at the colonial office the ablest of the royal governors, 384; is intimidated, 391; marches against the "Regulators," 394; his unjustifiable demands, 395; battle of the Alamance, 395; execution of prisoners on his bare order, 396, 397; is gratified at the spectacle, 397; leaves the province and becomes governor of New York, 397; his conduct severely denounced by his successor, Josiah Martin, 400, *note*.
- Tryon, William, royal governor of New York, his information touching the colonies, vii. 71; professes a desire to assist the patriots, 209; his reception at New York, viii. 33; his disappointment, 33; endeavors to detach that colony from the Union, 215; his conspiracy against Washington, 441; on Staten Island, ix. 82; his letter approving the employment of Indians, 326; his expedition to Danbury, 346; burns the village, 347; makes a hasty retreat, 347.
- Tryon County (see *Mohawk Valley*, and *Herkimer*).



- Tubby-hook, ix. 166, 185, 189.
- Tucker, John, minister in Newbury, Mass., a sermon of his read by Lord Chatham, vi. 440.
- Tucker, Josiah, dean of Gloucester, his book advocating free-trade and the independence of America, vi. 514, 515; a writer on political economy, thinks Great Britain would lose nothing by the independence of America, viii. 175; advises England to let America be independent, ix. 74.
- Tucker, Samuel, of New Jersey, submits to the king, ix. 199.
- Tupper, Major Benjamin, his attack on the British guard at Boston light-house, viii. 49.
- Turgot, Robert James, Abbé, his prediction, in 1750, of the future greatness of America, iv. 65; his excellent character, v. 27; the friend of liberty and of human nature, 27; condemns the tyranny of the British government, vi. 168, 169; foresees the independence of America, 370, 371; minister of finance, vii. 90; his high character, 90, 91; he plans reform, and in it has the countenance of the king, 92; his conservatism, 92; his plans of reform, viii. 335; the king of France requires his written opinion on American affairs, 335; he foretells the independence of the English colonies, 336; and a total change in the relations of Europe and America, 336; American independence will break up the colonial system and introduce liberty of trade, 337; France and Spain will cease to have dependent colonies, 337; the independence of all colonies is best for the mother country, 338; the Americans not to be aided with money, 339; neither France nor Spain is ready for war, 339, 340; peace is the policy for both, 340; Turgot the friend of both king and people, 341; intrigues of his enemies, 341; his advice is not followed, 342; Maurepas misrepresents him to the king, 341, 363; he is dismissed, 363; in him the French monarchy lost its firmest support, 363.
- Turner, Captain William, his successful attack on the Indians at Turner's Falls, ii. 107.
- Tuscarora tribe, iii. 245; make war upon the people of North Carolina, 320; their cruelty, 320, 321; defeated, 321; abandon their homes and join the confederacy of the Iroquois, 322; their alliance sought, iv. 345, 347.
- Twelve united colonies of America, vii. 391.
- Twiller, Wouter Van (see *Van Twiller*).
- "Two-penny Act" in Virginia, v. 172.
- Tyler, Royal, one of the governor's council, vi. 345.
- U.
- Uchees, Indian tribe, iii. 247, 248; estimated population, 253; war with the colony, 326, 328.
- Ultimatum, American, in the negotiation at Paris, x. 555.
- Unbelief, foolish pride of, viii. 365.
- Uncas, the Mohegan chief, i. 399, 423; puts Miantonomoh to death, 424.
- Underhill, John, captain in the Pequod war, i. 399; commander of Dutch troops in an Indian war, ii. 292.
- Union, tendency towards, iv. 74, 75; proposal from New York, 75; plan of union proposed by Franklin at Albany, 122, 123; plan proposed by Halifax, 165, 166; plan proposed by Shirley, 172; of the colonies proposed by Otis of Massachusetts, v. 279; the proposal received with hesitation, 292, 293; South Carolina decides for it, 294; proposed as the means of security, vi. 6, 12; union of all parts of the British empire under an equal and uniform direction, proposed by Otis, 118; of the colonies proposed, 308, 316; strongly desired in Boston, 196, 363; incipient measures taken, 454, 455; with England desired by leading men in New York, 208, 209, 211; the people are for union with the other colonies, 216.
- Union, town of, in Connecticut, compel a mandamus councillor of Massachusetts to resign his commission, vii. 105.
- United colonies (see *Colonies*, and *America*).
- United colonies of New England, i. 420.
- United provinces (see *Holland*).
- United States, their prosperous condition, i. 1; compared with the nations of Europe, 1; their declaration of independence, viii. 462, *et seq.* (see *America*, and *Declaration of Independence*).
- Unity of the human race, iv. 5, 6; progress everywhere, 7, 8; Calvinism teaches this, 154; of the material universe, viii. 117; and of the intelligent universe, 117.
- Universal suffrage in Virginia, i. 231; abolished, ii. 207.
- Unskilful conduct of the Massachusetts expedition to the Penobscot, x. 233.
- Ursuline convent at Quebec, iii. 27.
- Usher, John, lieutenant-governor of New Hampshire, iii. 82.
- Utrecht, peace of, iii. 226 (see *Peace of Utrecht*); favorable to liberty, v. 85; its provisions touching the fisheries, 211; it recognized the rights of neutral flags, 256.
- V.
- Van Cortlandt, in the New York convention, ix. 33.
- Van Rensselaer, Kiliaen, obtains a grant of land near Albany, ii. 281\*; extent of this grant, 281\*.
- Van Twiller, Wouter, governor of New Netherland, ii. 282\*.
- Van Wart, Isaac, assists in the capture of André, 387; his reward, 395.
- Vane, Henry, arrives in Boston, i. 383; his character, 383; governor of Massachusetts, 384; an unwise choice, 384; sustains Ann



- Hutchinson, 388; returns to England, 390; aids in procuring a charter for Rhode Island, 425, 427; a friend of Massachusetts, 443; leader of the moderate Independents, ii. 11; his pure and upright character, 36, 37; his trial and execution, 38, 40.
- Varney, Lord, his venality, vii. 175.
- Varnum, brigadier from Rhode Island, proposes to enlist emancipated slaves, ix. 468.
- Vasquez de Ayllon, Lucas, sends ships to South Carolina for slaves, i. 36; his unsuccessful attempt to conquer it, 37.
- Vassal, William, a "busy and factious spirit," i. 438; endeavors the overthrow of the charter, 438.
- Vaudreuil, Marquis de, governor of Canada, iii. 211, 216, 218, 222, 333, iv. 184; despairs of the safety of Fort Duquesne, 186; takes measures for the succor of Crown Point, 209; holds a congress of Indians at Montreal, 259, 266; at Quebec, 334, 337; surrenders Montreal, 360.
- Vaughan, Colonel William, takes one of the batteries of Louisburg, iii. 460; general, takes Fort Clinton, ix. 413; burns Kingston, 414.
- Venango, destroyed by Indians, v. 123.
- Vergennes, Count de, predicts the independence of British America, iv. 461; minister of foreign affairs of Louis XVI., his character and previous history, vii. 89, 90; his views of the controversy between Great Britain and her colonies, 190, 251, 264; his sagacity, 284; his opinions touching the struggle and its probable consequences, 351, 352; his opinion of the answer of Virginia to Lord North's proposals, 388; his opinion of the probable result of Bunker Hill battle, viii. 100; proposes to send an emissary to America, 103; his message to the Americans, 103; is amazed at the folly of the British ministers, 104; sees that the king of England has no retreat, 134; his wariness, 146; finds it difficult to believe that the British ministers are seeking to obtain foreign troops, 147; foresees American independence and its consequences, 164; his policy with regard to the American struggle, 329, 330; considerations submitted by him to the king, 331; the issue involves grave consequences to France and Spain, 331; danger of war with England, 332; that power may make peace with her colonies, and then attack France, 332; to guard against this, aid should be extended to the Americans, 333; but secretly, 334; France should be prepared for war, 335; his advice to the king in council, ix. 61, 62; admits Silas Deane to an interview and promises arms to the United States, 63; his representations to the king of the aspect of public affairs, 64; the danger to France of attack from England, 65; she will be bound by no treaties, 65; advantages to France of such a war, 66; of a friendly connection with America, 67; probable neutrality of other European powers, 67; advises a war with England, 68; the king does not adopt the policy recommended, 69; reply of Vergennes to Stormont's protest, 285; his secret interview with the American commissioners, 288; permits warlike stores to be sent to the United States, and American privateers to refit in French harbors, 298-300; regards England as an enemy, 299; his adroit evasions of English remonstrances, 300; fixes the time for France and Spain to go to war with England, 311; his delight on hearing of Burgoyne's surrender, 479; his character, x. 44; seeks the co-operation of Spain in a war with England, 165, 182, 185, *et seq.*; undervalues American energy, 183; yields to Spain all she required, 189; is averse to an attempt on Ireland, 251, 253; is willing to make concessions to England, 442; would leave to England Canada and the territory west and north-west of the Ohio, 442; is offended with John Adams for his republican ideas, 443; his opinion of Necker as a statesman, 444; his complaints about a loan, 446; complains of Adams, 452; his interview with Grenville, the agent of Fox, 542, 543; he thinks Grenville's credentials insufficient, 546; he is anxious for peace, 559, 581; explains his system, 582; wishes to exclude the United States from the great lakes, 582; his sentiments concerning the boundaries and fisheries, 582, 588.
- Vermont settled, iii. 370; part of it claimed by France, iv. 74; part of it granted by N. Hampshire, 74; settlements made there, v. 165; annexed to New York, 214, 215; oppressions of the people there, 291, 292; resists the jurisdiction of New York, vi. 507; rising of the men of, vii. 338; they cross Lake Champlain and capture Ticonderoga, 339, 340 (see *New Hampshire Grants*); wishes to join the confederacy, viii. 10; New York disallows it, 108; the name first given to the state, ix. 360; the convention meets, 360, 368; independence of the state declared, 360; Congress refuses to admit it to the Union, 361; the new constitution formed, 368; its provisions, 368, 369; slavery forbidden, 369; no imprisonment for debt, 369; aid sought from New Hampshire and Massachusetts, 369; it is obtained, 384, battle of Hubbardton, 369, 370; denied admission to the Union, and why, x. 352.
- Vernon, Admiral Edward, takes Porto Bello, iii. 440; fails in an attack on Carthage, 441.
- Verrazzani, John, visits the coast of North Carolina, i. 17; of New England, 18.
- Veto power ceases in England, iii. 7.
- Villeré, a leading man in the republic of New Orleans, vi. 293; his tragical fate, 294.
- Villiers, de, admits Washington to a capitulation, iv. 121; intercepts supplies for Oswego, 237.
- Vincennes, slain in the war against the Chickasas, iii. 367.

Vincennes, settled by emigrants from Canada, iii. 346; its population in 1768, vi. 224; the British ministry command them to leave their homes; they disregard the command, 412; taken by the Americans, x. 196; retaken by the British, 197; recovered by the Americans, 200.

"Vindex" [Samuel Adams] in Boston Gazette, quoted, vi. 247, 341.

Vineland, the name given to a portion of New England, i. 5.

Vines, Richard, settles at Saco, i. 330; leaves Maine, 430.

Virginia, the name first imposed, i. 95; first charter, 120; a code of laws for it made by King James, 122; embarkation of the first colony, 124; a site selected for settlement, 125; dissensions among the colonists, 125; distress of the colony, 126, 132; arrival of a re-enforcement, 133; unreasonable expectations of the London company, 135; Smith's administration, 134, 135; a new charter and enlargement of the company, 136; civil privileges denied to the emigrants, 137; Lord De la Ware governor for life, 137; dissolute character of the colonists, 138; their sufferings, — "the starving time," 139; great mortality, 140; the survivors take passage for Newfoundland, are met by Lord De la Ware in the river and return, 140; martial law introduced, 143; new emigrants arrive, 144; private property in land allowed, 144; a third patent, 145; improvement under it, 146; Pocahontas, 146, 147; Argall, Gates, Dale, 148, 149; tobacco cultivated, 151; severity of Argall, 152; dismal state of the colony, 152; its real life begins under Yeardeley, 153; first colonial assembly in the New World, 154; the Episcopal Church established by law, 155; many abuses reformed, 157; women sent over from England, 157; paid for in tobacco, 157; a representative government and trial by jury granted to the colonists, 158; slavery introduced, 176; Puritanism disallowed, 178; culture of silk and of the vine unsuccessful, 179; culture of cotton succeeds, 179; condition of the aborigines, 180; massacre by the Indians, 182; succor from England, 184; Indian war, 184; *quo warranto* against the Virginia company in London, 189; commissioners sent to, 189; spirit of liberty among the Virginians, 190; the Virginia company dissolved, 192; the colonists retain their liberties, 193; beneficent administration of Yeardeley, 154, 195; more emigrants arrive, 196; the colonists elect their governor, 196-198; the representative government continues, 199, 201; scale of debts altered, 202; Berkeley's administration, 203; quiet restored, 204; adheres to the royal cause, even after the execution of Charles, 205, 210; Puritans in the colony, 206; Parliament asserts its authority, 211; intolerant proceedings against Puritan ministers, 207; a second Indian war and massacre, 208;

prosperity of the colony, 210; numbers of the colonists, 210; partisans of Charles I. resort to Virginia, 210; commercial policy of England revised, 212, *et seq.*; submits to the Long Parliament and gains a virtual independence, 223; now as free as New England, 224; a declaration of popular sovereignty, 227; the rights of, respected under the protectorate, 225; prosperity of, 229; it enjoys free-trade, 230; religious liberty except for Quakers, 231; universal suffrage granted, 231; population in 1660, 232; the genial climate, 233; beauty of the scenery, 233; happiness of the people, 234; remonstrances against the charter of Maryland, 245; suffers from the selfishness of Sir William Berkeley, her agent, ii. 69; Virginians settle North Carolina, 135; character of the early settlers, 188; their independent spirit, 188; biennial election of legislators, 189; early tendency towards aristocracy, 190; a continuation of English society, 190; church established by law, 190, 200; great lack of education, 191; common schools unknown, 192; a degraded caste of white servants, 192; negro slaves, 193; their severe treatment, 193; an aristocracy founded on slave property, 194; absence of town government, 194; retrograde movement in Virginia on the restoration of monarchy in England, 195; the sovereignty of the people ceases, and the aristocracy becomes dominant, 196; gains the ascendancy in the legislature, 197; navigation act in Virginia, 198; its oppressive influence, 199; intolerance in religion, 200; the Quakers persecuted, 201; the royal officers independent of the people, 203; the judges not responsible, 204; arbitrary taxation, 204; the legislature assumes indefinite continuance of power, 205; excessive compensation of its members, 206; inequality of taxation, 207; universal suffrage abolished, 207, 208; and liberty taken away, 207, 208; Virginia granted to Culpepper and Arlington, 209; the colony remonstrates, 210; condition and character of the people, 212; discontent of the masses, 214; Indian war, 215; insurrection led by Nathaniel Bacon, 217, *et seq.*; a new assembly elected, 219; demands a redress of grievances, 220, 221; the insurrection suppressed, 229, *et seq.*; changed to a proprietary government, with Lord Culpepper as governor for life, 245; his avaricious conduct and arbitrary administration, 247; extreme distress of the people, 248; Culpepper returns to England, 249; some of Monmouth's followers sent to Virginia, 250; kidnapped men and boys, 251; the printing-press excluded, 252; liberty prostrate, 253; the authority of the king questioned, 254; the people contend for freedom, 255; population in 1688, 450; its general character, 452; how affected by the revolution of 1688, iii. 25; college of William and Mary founded, 25; oppressions of Governor Nicholson, 26; the church on the side of

liberty, 27; neglect of commerce, 28; tobacco the staple commodity, 28; the colony enjoys seventy years of peace, 29; toleration in religion not allowed, 32; the settlements extend westward, 370; no paper money in Virginia alone of all the colonies, 388, 396; its commerce in the hands of strangers, 396; treaty with the Six Nations, 455, 456; spirit of freedom there, iv. 38, 39, 113; claims all the land west of her borders to the Mississippi, 94; the Indians in 1752 desire her to build a fort on the present site of Pittsburgh, 94; population in 1754, 129, 130; political and social condition, 133, 134; the Church of England established by law, 134; no free schools, 134; slavery, 135; relations with England, 135; Madison and Jefferson in their boyhood, 136; Virginia to colonize the Great Western Valley, 167, 168; Indians confine the settlers to the east of the Blue Ridge, 224; sends a strong force against Fort Duquesne, 308; Virginia opposes the slave-trade, 421; its frontiers ravaged in Pontiac's war, v. 124; its strife with its clergy, 171, *et seq.*; loyal to England, but protests against parliamentary taxation, 223; the assembly adopt patriotic resolutions, 275-277; Virginia gives the signal of resistance for the continent, 278; spirit of resistance to the stamp act, 426; opposes the slave-trade, vi. 71; approves the measures of Massachusetts, 146; denies the power of the British Parliament to tax America, 146; prepares a petition to the king, a memorial to the House of Lords, and a remonstrance to the House of Commons, 146; Botetourt appointed governor, 177; limits of the colony curtailed, 226; and enlarged, 228; Botetourt reports favorably of the disposition of the colony, 229; meeting of the legislature, 279; the session opened by Lord Botetourt, 279; it meets the declaration of Parliament by a direct negative, and claims for itself the sole right of taxing Virginia, 280; warns the king of danger, and sends a circular to the other colonies, 280; makes a non-importation covenant, 281; and resolves to buy no more slaves, 281; Governor Botetourt promises a partial repeal of the revenue acts, 315; Virginia desires an entire repeal, 315; chooses representatives to a congress, 316; resists a proposed restriction of her western boundary, 378; her settlements continually extend westward, 379; the Earl of Dunmore becomes governor, 384; the legislature protest against the slave-trade, 413; but the king will not allow it to be in any way obstructed, 413; alarm at the increase of the negro population, 414; the legislature propose intercolonial committees, 454, 455; in 1774, the extension of the province greatly desired, vii. 52; meeting of the assembly, 52; its leading men, 52; sympathy with Boston, 52; a fast appointed, 52; the assembly dissolved, 54; meeting of the members: they

advise a continental congress, 54; they call a convention of the province, and inaugurate the revolution, 54; a fast strictly kept, 57; contributes liberally to the relief of Boston, 74; meets in convention, 83; high spirit and great energy of that meeting, 84; it forbids the slave-trade, 84; takes part strongly with Massachusetts, 85; condemns the conduct of General Gage, 85; opposes the extension by the Quebec act of the boundaries of Canada to the Mississippi, 161; rapacity of Governor Dunmore, 161, 162; the Indian war in Western Virginia and Kentucky, 164, *et seq.*; great battle at Point Pleasant, 168; victory of the Virginia troops, 169; they cross the Ohio river, 169; the Indians sue for peace, 170; celebrated speech of Logan, 170; the Virginia forces nullify the boundary established by the Quebec act, 171; Presbyterians of South-western Virginia, their patriotic resolutions, 195, 196; patriotic spirit of the dwellers in the Valley of the Shenandoah, 250; conservative character of Virginia, 271 *c.*; the people reluctant to sunder their connection with Britain, 271 *d.*; are unprepared for war and open to attack, 271 *d.*; the convention meets, 272; its earnest debate, 273; the Fairfax resolves introduced, 272; Patrick Henry sustains them in a bold speech, 273, 274; they are adopted 275; measures for defence, 275; Dunmore seizes the powder of the colony, 275, 276; threatens to free and arm the slaves and to lay Williamsburgh in ashes, 276, 277; the people ready to rise, 276; but are induced to forbear, 277; news from Lexington arrives, 334; great excitement and military rising, 334; Patrick Henry's bold conduct is approved by the people, 335; Dunmore convenes the assembly, 384; last use of the king's veto power on the acts of the assembly, 385; reply of the house of burgesses to Lord North's insidious proposals, 386, 387; the reply written by Jefferson, 386; Shelburne praises the document, 388; arrogance and rashness of the governor, Lord Dunmore, viii. 78, 79; he virtually abdicates the government, 79; the royal authority at an end, 79; a convention at Richmond becomes the supreme government, 80; its vigorous measures, 80; committee of safety chosen and delegates to Congress, 81; bills of credit issued, 82; taxation suspended, 82; the convention affirm their loyalty to George III., 82; Virginia bars the doors of Congress against Kentucky, 109; the ministry determine to recover the province, 158; violent proceedings of Dunmore, 220, *et seq.*; first resistance of Virginia to British troops, 221; Dunmore's foray at the Great Bridge, 222; he invites slaves to rise against their masters, 223; state of the colored population, 223; not Virginia, but England, responsible for slavery in that province, 225; why the slaves did not generally rise, 225; many people join the British standard, 226; the



convention give up the shores of the Chesapeake to waste and solitude, 246; raises more troops, 246; demands the opening of the ports, 247; house of burgesses dissolves itself, and thus annihilates the last vestige of regal authority, 373; the convention assembles, 373; the population, whence derived, 374; historical notices, 374; extent of territory claimed, 374; whence sprung the spirit of the revolution now in progress, 375; Virginia unanimous and resolute, 375; the Lee family and the Cary family, 375; purpose of the convention, 375, 376; its character, 377; a resolution adopted instructing the Virginia delegates in Congress to propose to that body a declaration of independence, 378; this resolution received out of doors with high satisfaction, 378; adopts a declaration of the rights of man, 381, *et seq.*; its principal features, 381; the end of government, 381; distinction of powers, 382; the right of suffrage, 382; freedom of the press, 382; the militia, 382; freedom of religion, 383; the declaration founded on immutable truth, 383; state constitution formed, 434; it made no attempt at social reforms, 435; parallel with the English constitution, 435; distribution of power, 436; acknowledges the territorial rights of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and the Carolinas, 436; organization of the government, 437; progress of the war, ix. 35; Dunmore infests the tide-waters, 35; independence proclaimed, 36; claims the immense territory north-west of the Ohio, 55, 56; this claim disputed in Congress, 56; constitution of civil government adopted, 262; disposition of the glebe lands of the Church of England, 277; separation of church and state effected after a brief struggle, 278; entails abolished by the energy of Jefferson, 280; an attempt to abolish slavery, 281; why the attempt failed, 281; invaded by a pillaging expedition, x. 223; the legislature confiscates the property of British subjects, 223; a bill for establishing religious freedom, 224; a regiment of Virginia troops massacred in South Carolina by Tarleton, 307; Virginia in part for slavery, in part against it, 354; the Virginia declaration of rights assumes the wrong of slavery, 355; how far was slavery interdicted, 356; sentiments of her leading statesmen respecting slavery, 356; offers a bounty to white men to enlist, 356; prohibits the introduction of more slaves, 356; sends troops to the relief of South Carolina, 315; asserts the sovereignty of the individual states, and protests against the assumption of power by Congress, 400; proposes to relinquish some of her rights for the sake of union, 419; her magnanimity, 480; invaded by Arnold, 497; by Cornwallis, 484, 499; ravages of the British troops, 505; amount of property destroyed, 505; military operations there ending in the surrender of Cornwallis, 497, *et seq.*; Virginia re-

fuses to Congress the power of taxation, 572.

Virginia Dare, first English child born in America, i. 105.

Virtual representation of America in England, a fallacy, v. 282, 290.

Voltaire, influence of his writings, v. 22; the prince of scoffers, 22; complaisant to those in power, 22; his contempt of the people, 23; competent to destroy, not to reform, 23; on the progress of human liberty, vi. 83; his high reputation, ix. 483; represented the France of his day, 483; his advocacy of toleration, 483; not the teacher, yet the friend, of America, 483, 484; his interview with Franklin, 484; his admiration of Lafayette, 484; Voltaire and Franklin at the French Academy, 499.

Vose, Major, burns Boston light-house, viii. 48.

Vries, De (see *De Vries*).

## W.

Wabash river, the Americans obtain possession of the country on its banks, x. 199, *et seq.*

Waddel, of North Carolina, commands a body of militia sent against the regulators, vi. 393, 396.

Wadsworth, Joseph, secretes and secures the charter of Connecticut, ii. 430.

Wadsworth, William, captain of the train-bands at Hartford, iii. 67; disconcerts the attempt of Governor Fletcher of New York, 68.

Wainwright, Simon, of Haverhill, slain by Indians, iii. 215; courageous conduct of his wife, 215.

Walcott, lieutenant-colonel of the British army, is sent by General Howe to negotiate with Washington, ix. 329.

Waldeck, Prince of, his eagerness to supply troops to George III., viii. 256; the regiment is furnished, 267; collects recruits for England, ix. 313.

Waldeckers at White Plains, ix. 178; under Donop at Princeton, 243; put to flight by New Jersey militia, 251.

Waldenses in New Netherland, ii. 301.

Waldron, Richard, of Cocheco, tortured to death by Indians, iii. 180.

Walford, Thomas, at Charlestown, i. 341.

Walker, Admiral Sir Hovenden, commands a fleet for the reduction of Canada, iii. 221; his dilatory proceedings, 221; his incompetency, 223; the expedition fails, 224.

Walker, Henderson, governor of North Carolina, iii. 20.

Walker, Thomas, commissioner of Virginia, to a congress of the Six Nations, vi. 227; the Anglo-Canadian, at Montreal, vii. 280.

Walpole, Horace, quoted, v. 87, 89, *note*, 99, *note*; earl of Orford, his *Memoirs* quoted, vi. 88.

Walpole, Horatio, iv. 48, 63.



- Walpole, Sir Robert. iv. 18; rejects the proposal of a stamp tax on the colonies, 85; doubts the wisdom of taxing the colonies, v. 182; prime minister of England, his character, iii. 324; his pacific policy, 325; indifference to the encroachments of the French, 345; averse to taxation of the colonies, 383; opposes a war with Spain, 438.
- Wanton, governor of Rhode Island, inclined to the royal side, vii. 316.
- War of 1756, the underlying causes, iv. 277; it involved the great question of modern times, 277; sufferings and sorrows of this war, 455; number of the dead in arms, 455; results of the peace, 456; diffusion of the English tongue, 456.
- War which followed the accession of King William III., its causes, iii. 175, 176; plans for conducting hostilities, 177; horrors of this war, 179, *et seq.*; war of the Spanish succession, 206; its causes, 207, 208; war between France and Spain, 353; war for trade, 400; war of the Austrian succession, 449.
- War foreseen by Joseph Hawley of Massachusetts, vii. 102, 125, 152.
- War expenses of the United States, estimate of, x. 568, 569.
- War in New Jersey, x. 127, *et seq.* 372; in Rhode Island, 147; in the "backwoods," 193, *et seq.*; in the Northern department, 222, *et seq.*; in Europe, 240, *et seq.*; in the Southern states, 283, *et seq.*, 560; in South Carolina, 300, *et seq.*; on the ocean, 423, *et seq.*; at the South, 456, *et seq.*; in Virginia, 497, *et seq.*; England tired of the war, 523, 531, *et seq.*
- Wars, Indian, how conducted, iii. 281.
- Ward, Artemus, one of the council of Massachusetts, vi. 152; of Shrewsbury, appointed major-general of the Massachusetts forces, vii. 228; unfit for the command, 321, 322, 380; commands at Cambridge, 405; dreads defeat, 405; his inactivity on the day of Bunker Hill, 416; elected major-general by the Continental Congress, viii. 26; commands the American centre, 43, 61.
- Ward, Rev. Nathaniel, a code of laws prepared by him, i. 416\*; its provisions, 417, *et seq.*
- Warham, Rev. John, arrives at Nantasket, i. 358.
- Warner, of Hampshire County, his resignation as mandamus councillor, vii. 111.
- Warner, Seth, shares in the enterprise of taking Ticonderoga, vii. 339; takes Crown Point, 340; elected lieutenant-colonel of the Green Mountain Boys, viii. 177; compels the retreat of Carleton, 187; his regiment in the battle of Hubbardton, ix. 369; in the battle of Bennington, 385.
- Warren, Admiral Sir Peter, co-operates in the attack on Louisburg, iii. 459, 461; captures a French fleet, 463.
- Warren, James, representative from Plymouth, vi. 7; the idea of committees of correspondence did not originate with him, 429, *note*; he concurred in it, 429; his despondency, 438; speaker of the new house of representatives, viii. 48; desires from Congress a declaration of independence, 136.
- Warren, Joseph, of Boston, utters the new war cry, "Freedom and Equality," v. 441, 442; a member of the committee of correspondence, his all-controlling love of liberty, vi. 430; concurs with Samuel Adams, 196, 430, 431; one of the committee to prevent the tea from being landed, 473; at the great meeting in the Old South Church, 478, vii. 35, 36; reports "a solemn league and covenant" to suspend commercial intercourse with England, 60; entertains Putnam, 101; gives direction to a convention for the county of Suffolk, 109; report to the Suffolk county convention, 122; patriotic resolutions drafted by him, 123; his fearless bearing before Gage, 124; his sound judgment, 124, 125; one of the committee of safety, 154; his letter to Josiah Quincy, then in England, 173; his courage, 229; his oration on the Boston massacre, 253, *et seq.*; he is confident of success, 279; the British ministry, by instructions to Gage, except him from pardon, 284; sends a message to Adams and Hancock at Lexington, 288, 289; assists in the pursuit of the British, 308; announces that war is begun, 341\*; desires that Ward may be superseded by a more competent general, 389; names Washington as his successor, 389; fights as a volunteer at Bunker Hill, 417, 418; he falls, the last in the trenches, 433; his exalted character, 433; his memory honored, 434.
- Warwick, R. I., and Samuel Gorton, i. 419.
- Washington, George, comes into notice, iii. 467; his early history, 468; his destiny, 468; sent by Dinwiddie to remonstrate against French encroachment, iv. 108; foresees the destiny of the spot where Pittsburgh now stands, 109; his interview with the French commander at Le Boeuf, 111; made a lieutenant-colonel, and ordered to the Forks of Ohio, 116; his advance solicited by the Indians, 117; goes in a dark night to the Indian camp, 118; his first combat with the French, 118, 119; compelled to fall back upon Fort Necessity, 120; obliged to capitulate, 121; joins Braddock, 185; his description of that general, 185; his extraordinary courage and heroism, 190; his hairbreadth escapes, 190; the praises lavished on him, 190; made colonel, and charged with frontier defence, 223; visits Boston, 224; highly praised by Dinwiddie, 235; neglected by the British commander-in-chief, 236; his self-sacrificing spirit, 225; commands two Virginia regiments sent against Fort Duquesne, 308; in command of the advance brigade, 310; the fort is taken, 311; honors paid to Washington, 313; his marriage, 314; retires to private life, 314; his opposition to the stamp act, v. 327, 328; his patriotic utterances, vi. 272, 273; his scheme for

non-importation adopted by Virginia, 281; his examination of the Ohio Valley, 379; his eulogium on Franklin, 439; member of the House of Burgesses of Virginia, vii. 52; subscribes for the relief of suffering Boston, 74; favors decisive measures, 85; wishes to march to the relief of Boston, 85; a member of the first continental congress, 127; rejects the idea of independence, but condemns the regulating act, 144, 145; Patrick Henry's opinion of him, 153; chosen commander of a military organization, 207; presides at a convention of Fairfax County, which adopted very decided resolutions, 74; these resolutions, under the sanction of his name, adopted by the colony of Virginia, 272; his good advice to those who were ripe for insurrection, 277; a member of the second continental congress, 353; his patriotic decision, joined with modest regard for the opinions of others, 375, 376; is nominated for commander-in-chief, 390; unanimously elected, 393; his exalted character, 393-400; of Southern origin, yet the true representative of his country, 398; religious character, 398; his purity of motive, 399; was by necessity the first of men, 399; used power only for the public good, 400; never did any man so command universal confidence, 400; saw the difficulties before him, yet cheerfully accepted the station, 401; refusing all pay, he entered on the duty, 401, 402; Congress unanimously pledged to him its support, and invested him with full powers, 402; his appointment greatly united the people, and strengthened the cause, 403; his farewell to Congress, viii. 31; his departure from Philadelphia, 31; his reception at New York, 32, 33; address of the provincial congress of New York to him, 33; his answer, 34; assumes the command of the army at Cambridge, 40; his popularity, 41; his answer to Governor Trumbull, 41; visits the posts of the army, 41, 42; introduces reforms, 45; misjudges the Massachusetts people, 49; his report to Congress on the state of the army, 51; his multifarious duties, 60; his position, 60; his want of money, powder, and arms, 61; his efforts to obtain powder, 61; relies on the spirit of the country, 62; remonstrates with Gage on the ill treatment of his American prisoners, 66; maintains that the people are the true source of power, 66; his lenity to British officers in his hands, 67; closely invests Boston, 67; offers battle to Gage, 67; the challenge not accepted, 67; rejects the plan of an expedition against Nova Scotia, 68; directs an invasion of Canada, 68; his policy with respect to coast defence, 69; his difficulties and wants, 69; his great fortitude, 70; is fully convinced of the necessity of independence, 108; complains that Congress neglect to provide for his army, 111; Congress send a committee to the camp, 111; his indignation at the burning of Falmouth, 113; urges the im-

mediate occupation of Canada, 180; his instructions to Arnold relative to his expedition to Quebec, 191; his address to the Canadians, 191; his army at Cambridge greatly need supplies, 217; complains to Governor Trumbull of the desertion of Connecticut soldiers, 219; enlists a new army, and continues the siege of Boston, 219; his ceaseless vigilance, 219; his indignation at the proceedings of Dunmore in Virginia, 224, 225, 232; allows free negroes to enlist in his army, 233; is sadly in want of money, 233; and in want of suitable implements of war, 234; yet Congress are impatient that he accomplishes so little, 234*a*; submits to a council of war the question of an assault on Boston, 234*a*; the officers advise against it, 234*b*; he would have been glad to resign his commission, but duty forbade, 234*b*; his mind now fully made up for independence, 235; destitute condition of his army, 291; he calls out militia, 291; plans an attack on Boston, 292; takes possession of Dorchester Heights, 293; his skilful preparations, 293; his movements unperceived by the enemy, 294; is ready for an attack, 297; the enemy fear to attack him, 297; takes possession of Nook's Hill, 302; this compels a precipitate retreat of the British, 302; his army enters Boston, 303; receives a hearty welcome, 303; orders troops to New York, 303; he attends the Thursday lecture, 304; address to him of the Massachusetts legislature, 304; Congress vote him a commemorative medal, 304; he complains to Congress of the policy of short enlistments, 315; at New York, 356; is fully for independence, 384; his army greatly weakened by detachments sent to re-enforce the northern army, 421, 422; is left with a small force, 422; and in great want, 422; amount of his force in June, 1776, 440, 450; Tryon's conspiracy against him, 441; Washington's trust in Providence, 442; will not hold intercourse with Lord Howe as a private person, ix. 39, 41, 42; will not accept pardon, 42; proposes an exchange of prisoners, 45; Gates claims to be his equal, 58; Washington's public spirit, 59; is surrounded by incompetent generals, 78, 334; Congress too ready to take affairs out of his hands, 78, 334; few men on whom he can rely, 78, 79; force at his command in August, 1776, 80; repairs to Long Island, 89; his anguish at the slaughter of brave men, 94; his sleepless vigilance and activity, 98, 99, 101, 104; his soldiers confide in him, 99; perceives the danger of his troops, and determines on a retreat, 101; the proposal unanimously approved, 103; the retreat effected without loss, 103, 104; Washington the last to leave Brooklyn, 104; his wonderful power of secrecy, 107; the retreat his own measure, 107; he represents to Congress the condition of his army, 109, 110; tells them the city of New York must be abandoned, 110; is overruled in opinion

by his officers, 113; he explains to Congress why New York cannot be defended, 114, 115; his able argument, 114, 115; Congress yields, 115, 116; he is fired on by the Hessians, 118; removes his stores and artillery, 119; landing of British troops, 119; shameful flight of the Americans, 119; Washington's example of courage, 120; is exposed to death or capture, 119, 120; his perfect self-possession, 122; did not lose his temper, 124; takes a strong position at Harlem Heights, 128, 165; condemns the practice of trusting to militia, 137; his representations to Congress on the subject disregarded, 138; his trust in the people, 138; his renewed expostulations with Congress about an efficient army, 173; British ships ascend the Hudson, 174; British troops land at Frog's Neck, 175; his communications threatened, 175; takes measures to secure them, 175; evacuates New York Island, 175; holds a council of war, 176; secures his rear at White Plains, 179; Howe does not venture to attack him, 180, 183; strengthens his position, 183; sees the danger of Fort Washington, and wishes to have it evacuated, 185; his instructions to Greene, 186; Greene disregards his intentions, 188; Congress interferes with his movements, 188; a great disaster in consequence, 190-193; his instructions to Lee, 186; Lee disregards them, 187, 196, 197, 203, 206; examines the Highlands, and determines to fortify them, 187; is not seconded by his generals, 187; his great grief at this, 188, 193; crosses the Hudson into New Jersey, 187; his army melts away, 195; he crosses the Passaic, 196; at Newark, 196; at Brunswick, 198; at Princeton and Trenton, 201; retreats beyond the Delaware, 202; he does not despair, 198, 201; his daily orders to Lee to join him are disregarded, 194, 198, 200, 202, 204; Lee misrepresents and denounces Washington, 205, 207, 209; Washington sees one of Lee's letters, 206; his difficulties, 217; his fortitude in meeting them, 217; his trust in God, 218; he resolves on a bold stroke, 218; often blamed, 218, *note*; vindicated, 218, *note*; secures all the boats, 202, 219; proposes a reform in the army, 219, *et seq.*; asks for power to enlist men, 220; his army on the eve of dissolution, 220, 221; remonstrates with Congress, 220-222; proposes an army of the United States, 223; preparations for crossing the Delaware, 223; amount of his force, 223, *note*; his watchword, 224; crosses the Delaware in a night of terrible severity, 231; attack on the Hessians at Trenton, 232, 233; his horse is wounded, 234; surrender of the Hessians, 234; the Americans lose not one man, 235; effect of the victory, 235; Washington's feelings at this great success, 234; Congress confer on him power to enlist an army, 238; they do not make him a dictator, 238; he again crosses the Delaware, and takes post at Trenton,

240; the eastern regiments agree to remain with him, 240; to pay the troops he pledges his own fortune, 241; his letter on New Year's Day, 1777, 242; concentrates his forces at Trenton, 243; his night march to Princeton, 246, 247; his plan of operations for delivering New Jersey, 240, 246; arrives at Princeton, 247; battle of Princeton, 248, 249; exposes himself to great danger, 249; his complete success, 249, 250; encamps at Morristown, 252; his proclamation to all who had accepted British protection, 253; confidence reposed in him by his army and the people, 255; jealousy of him in Congress, 255; weakness of his army, 334; advises a draft, 334; relies on New England militia, 335; surrounded by unworthy officers, 337; Congress enlarges his powers, 338; helplessness of Congress, 338; his opinion of Mount Independence, opposite Ticonderoga, 340; his unselfish zeal and untiring patriotism, 343; bears unjust reproach with meekness and dignity, 344; advances to Middlebrook, 351; his immovable fortitude at Middlebrook saves his country, 352; by his calm self-possession he utterly baffles a powerful enemy, 352-354; advances to Quibbletown, 355; retires to Middlebrook, 356; his watchfulness over the northern department, 374; sends re-enforcements and generals to the northern army, 374; writes to New England for re-enforcements for that army, 374; writes to encourage Schuyler, 375; predicts that the success of Burgoyne will be but temporary, 375; writes to the council of New York, 375; is slighted and neglected by Congress, 388; his effective force in August, 1777, 393; marches through Philadelphia, 393; reaches Wilmington, 393; disappoints a plan of the enemy, 394; prepares to dispute the passage of the Brandywine, 395; his orders to Sullivan are disobeyed, 396; rout of the right wing, 397; checks the retreat of the fugitives, 398; the final encounter, 399; calls on Putnam and Gates for re-enforcements, 403; frustrates the purpose of Howe, 404; determines to attack Howe at Germantown, 423, 424; his plan of attack, 424; the attack fails, 428; Washington's personal prowess and danger, 428; the retreat well conducted, 428; why victory was lost, 428; encamps at Whitemarsh, 453; no serious action ensues, 454; Howe fears to attack him, 454; the Conway cabal, 454, *et seq.*; Washington goes into winter quarters at Valley Forge, 458; condition of his army, 458; sufferings of the troops, 458, 459; his reply to the Pennsylvania remonstrance, 459, 460; his remonstrance to Congress, 461; is unwilling to seize provisions or clothing, 461; suffers exquisite pain from the efforts of concealed enemies, 463; his noble letter to the historian Gordon, 463; his calm dignity overawes his enemies, 464; Conway and others exonerate him, 464; the majority of Con-



- gress his friends, 465; sad condition of his army from the neglect of Congress, 465; advises drafts from the militia, 468; Congress jealous of him and of the army, 470; endeavors to allay the existing jealousy, 471; speaks warmly in praise of the army, 471; will be content with no terms from England short of independence, 498; at the battle of Monmouth, x. 129, *et seq.*: thinks Charleston not defensible, 303; his opinion slighted by Congress, 316; his views on slavery, 358; meets Rochambeau at Hartford, 382, 386; at Wethersfield, 503; visits West Point, 389; his great influence, 403; favors a confederation of the states, 408, 409; perceives the defects of the existing confederation, 422; his picture of the distresses of the country, 414, 418, 425; wants a stronger government, 414, 415; marches with the combined American and French army to the Chesapeake, 513; excellent spirit of the army, 513; thoroughly outmanœuvres Clinton, 513; with Rochambeau visits home at Mount Vernon, 516; visits the French fleet, 516; siege of Yorktown, 518, *et seq.*; surrender of Cornwallis, 522; his opinion of Greene, 457; his encomium on the younger Laurens, 565; his immense popularity, 460.
- Washington, Captain William, at the battle of Trenton, ix. 230; is wounded there, 233; is sent to the aid of Gates in South Carolina, x. 316; commands a body of mounted riflemen, 461, 463; of cavalry, 476, 478; at the battle of Hobkirk's Hill, 487; at Eutaw Springs, 493; is taken prisoner, 494.
- Washington on the Delaware, ix. 231.
- Washington, a district so named, ix. 164.
- Washington, John, commands a body of Virginians against the Indians, ii. 215.
- Watauga, Republic of, in Eastern Tennessee, vi. 398-401 (see *Orange County, Regulators*).
- Watauga republicans in Tennessee, assist Virginia in the Indian war, vii. 167.
- Watauga and Holstein, the people on those rivers adhere to the United Colonies, viii. 376.
- Waterbury, Colonel, of Stamford in Connecticut, viii. 276, 277; his naval operations on Lake Champlain, ix. 152, 155.
- Waterman, Nathaniel, of Boston, his visit to the *Romney* frigate, vi. 155.
- Watertown settled, i. 353\*; incorporated 359\*; provincial congress there, vii. 323.
- Watson, George, of Plymouth, a mandamus councillor, resigns his commission, vii. 105.
- Wayne Anthony, his early military ardor, iv. 308; of Pennsylvania, sent to re-enforce the army in Canada, viii. 422; his gallantry at Three Rivers, 429, 430; commands at Ticonderoga, ix. 157, 200; burns to go to the assistance of "poor Washington" in Jersey, 200; commands the left wing at the battle of Brandywine, 398; his encounter with Donop, 401; his rash confidence, 402; commands a division at the battle of Germantown; 424; his impetuous attack, 425; he is separated from Sullivan, 425; is compelled to retreat, 427; disparages Washington, 456; his rashness at Green Springs, x. 508; too eager for a fight, 508; rescued from destruction by the prompt action of Lafayette, 508; defeats the British and Indians in Georgia, 563; rescues that state from the hands of the British, 563.
- Weas, Indian tribe, friendly to the English, iv. 79, 80.
- Webb, Colonel, of Connecticut, at White Plains, ix. 181; is with Washington in the battle of Trenton, 230.
- Webb, General, sails for New York, iv. 235; his neglect of duty, and cowardice, 237, 240; his pusillanimity 261, 264, 266.
- Webster, Lieutenant-Colonel, commands the British right wing at Camden, x. 321, 322; repulses an American force at Charlotte, N.C., 334; commands the British left at Guilford, 477; receives a mortal wound there, 478.
- Webster, Pelatiah, his pamphlet, x. 424.
- Wemyss, Major, defeated by Sumpter, x. 343, his ferocious cruelty, 343; is kindly treated by his captors, 343.
- Wentworth, Benning, governor of New Hampshire, grants land in Vermont, iv. 74; complains of the spirit of liberty, 268.
- Wentworth, John, governor of New Hampshire, his sentiments on the controversy between Britain and America, vi. 154, *note*; 212 *note*.
- West, explorations of the, vi. 297-302; its colonization one of Franklin's great objects, 377; Washington there, 379; Daniel Boone, and others, 380, *et seq.*; its resistance to British domination, 411, 412; emigration rapidly extending thither, 505, 506.
- West, Benjamin, the painter, his early military ardor, iv. 308.
- West, Valley of the, possession taken of it, iv. 74, 81, 88, 89, 97, 101, 126, 167, 311, 361.
- "Western army" of backwoodsmen, under Campbell, Shelby, &c., x. 336, 338.
- Western lands to be formed into new states, x. 413.
- West Point, a plan for its surrender by Arnold, x. 384; its fortifications described, 385; what they contained, 385; Washington visits it, 389.
- Wederburn, Alexander, afterwards Earl of Rosslyn and lord chancellor, contents in Parliament for the right of binding the colonies in all cases whatsoever, v. 417, 440; ridicules the Rockingham ministry, vi. 10; declaims against the Grafton ministry, 232; in alliance with Burke, 357, 362; inveighs against Lord Hillsborough and his policy 362; and against Lord North, 389; becomes solicitor-general, 393; his report concerning the burning of the "Gaspee," 441; is counsel before the privy council for Hutchinson and Oliver, 492, 494; his philippic against Franklin, 495; his gross misstatements and blank



- falsehoods, 496, 497; contrasted with Franklin, 499; he finds treason in the conduct of some of the American patriots, 523; the king's representation of him, 499; his legal opinion in favor of despotism, vii. 58; his memory dear to Canadian Catholics, 158; he defends the policy pursued by the ministry, vii. 224; thinks the provincial congress of Massachusetts guilty of treason, 284; replies to Fox in Parliament, ix. 146.
- Weedon, commands a brigade at the battle of Brandywine, ix. 398.
- Welles, Henry, of Boston, a "Son of Liberty" in 1765, v. 310.
- Wentworth, Thomas, Earl of Strafford (see *Strafford, Earl of*).
- Wesley, John, the preacher to the poor, vii. 260; misapprehends the controversy of Britain and her colonies, 260, 261; blames the Americans, and defends the ministry, 261; protests against attempting to reduce America by force of arms, 345.
- Wesley, John and Charles, in Georgia, iii. 428; they fail there of success and return, 429.
- West, Francis, governor of Virginia, i. 196; admiral of New England, 326.
- West, John, deputy-secretary of New England under Andros, ii. 425; his rapacity, 426.
- West, Joseph, agent for the proprietaries of Carolina, ii. 166; favors the people, 184.
- West, Thomas, often called Lord De la War, or Delaware. See *Delaware, Lord*.
- Westbrook, Colonel, leads an expedition to Norridgewock, iii. 335, 336.
- Westchester County in New York, the inhabitants equally divided, viii. 274.
- Western continent, its existence imagined in early times, i. 6.
- Western Wilderness described, v. 110; how far occupied by the English, 110; inadequately garrisoned, 110.
- Western World, the youth and power of the human race to be there renewed, v. 269.
- Western Valley, population of in 1765, 338, 340.
- Westminster elects Tories to Parliament in 1774, vii. 175.
- Weston, Thomas, his plantation at Weymouth, i. 318.
- Wethersfield in Connecticut sends a strong force to the scene of conflict near Boston, vii. 316.
- Weyman's "New York Gazette" quoted, v. 86, 88, 109, 116, 117, 120, 123, 171, 307.
- Weymouth, George, ascends St. George's river in Maine, i. 115; kidnaps five of the natives, i. 115.
- Weymouth, Lord, succeeds Conway in the ministry, vi. 109, 326; desires war with Spain, 387; resigns his place in the ministry, 388; opposes the repeal of the revenue acts, 277; becomes secretary of state, viii. 165.
- Weymouth, Town of, Weston's colony there, i. 318; Gorge's unsuccessful effort there, 326; the settlement revived, 338.
- Whale fishery conceded to New England by Mr Grenville, and why, v. 184, 185.
- Whalley, Edward, a regicide, comes to America, ii. 34; fruitless search made for him, 35.
- Whately, Thomas, joint secretary of the treasury, v. 105; his correspondence with Hutchinson and others, vi. 69, 150, 155-157, 161, 250, 253, *note*, 305, *note*, 307, 313, 435; these letters communicated to Grenville, 435.
- Whately, William, the banker, brother of Thomas, vi. 491; his duel with John Temple, 492.
- Wheelock, Eleazer, president of Dartmouth College, vii. 279.
- Wheelwright, John, sustains Mrs. Hutchinson, i. 388; his fast-day sermon, 388; threatens an appeal to England, 389; exiled, 391; founds Exeter, 392; sentence of exile rescinded, 431.
- Whig aristocracy in England, decline of its power, iv. 163; their past services, 163; leading men among them, 163, 164; imbecility of the Newcastle administration, 164, 165; end of that administration, 247; the Whig party, led by Newcastle, loses power, 247; the Whig aristocracy cannot govern England, 248; nor conquer Canada, 260-270; they compel Pitt to resign office, 408, 409; they are themselves driven from office, 437; rupture with the king, 447.
- Whig party in England, the old, its downfall, vi. 23; it was divided, and thus lost its ascendancy, vi. 356, 357; it fought alike against the prerogative and against the people, 357; not friendly to reform, 357; what became of it, x. 552.
- Whigs, old, led by Edmund Burke, Lord Mansfield, and others, found the new Tory party of England, v. 418.
- Whipple, William, delegate in Congress from New Hampshire, viii. 438.
- Whitaker, Alexander, the apostle of Virginia, i. 144.
- Whitcomb, Colonel Asa, of Lancaster, in Massachusetts, part of his regiment in the battle of Bunker Hill, not there himself, vii. 418.
- White, Rev. John, of Dorchester, England, i. 339; suggests the permanent settlement of New England, 339.
- Whitefield, George, in Georgia, iii. 429; founds the orphan house at Savannah, 429; pleads in favor of slavery, 448.
- White Plains, battle of, ix. 178, *et seq.*
- Whitgift, John, archbishop of Canterbury, i. 288; cruelly oppresses the Puritans, 288; hates them, 294; dies, 296.
- Whiting, Nathan, of New Haven, conducts the retreat of Colonel Williams's regiment, iv. 210.
- Whiting, Samuel, agent of Connecticut in England, iii. 66.
- Wickliffe, John, his teaching and his translation of the New Testament led the way to American freedom, ii. 456.
- Wigglesworth, on Lake Champlain, ix. 155.

- Wilford, Thomas, a leader of the insurrection against Berkeley, ii. 230.
- Wilkes, John, promises support to Pitt, iv. 275; inflames the public mind, 446; arrested on a general warrant, and the cause, v. 104, 105; set at liberty, 105; the king procures his expulsion from Parliament, vi. 148; four times elected as representative of Middlesex, and four times expelled, 275; in Parliament vindicates America, vii. 225; with the alderman, as lord mayor, he complains to the king of the arbitrary proceedings of ministers, 282; lord mayor of London, his disrespect for George III., viii. 144; says it is impossible to conquer America, ix. 142.
- Wilkins, the British commandant in Illinois, vi. 224; his venality, 225.
- Wilkinson, James, the bearer of a message from Gates to Lee, ix. 209; a sycophant and a babler, 455; is made a brigadier by Congress, 455.
- Willard, John, accused of witchcraft, convicted, and executed, iii. 91.
- Willard, of Lancaster, Massachusetts, a mandamus councillor, resigns his commission, vii. 105; his answer to Gage's inquiry about Prescott, 411.
- Willard, Samuel, minister of the Old South Church, Boston, his sermon, ii. 432.
- Willard, Simon, settles in Concord, i. 382.
- Willett, Colonel Marinus of New York, commands at St. John's, Canada, viii. 201; lieutenant-colonel, makes a successful sortie from Fort Stanwix, ix. 379, 380.
- William III., his character, iii. 3; his ruling passion, 4, 207; his death, 208; his policy triumphant, 227; false to the liberty of the seas, 230.
- William and Mary College founded, iii. 25.
- Williams, Colonel James, of Ninety Six, S. C., avoids capture, x. 306; his persevering loyalty to freedom, 330; routs a superior British force, 331; commands a regiment of mounted men in the battle of King's Mountain, 336, 337; is killed there, 339.
- Williams, David, one of the captors of André, x. 387; his reward, 395.
- Williams, Ephraim, colonel, makes a bequest to found a free school, iv. 209; sent to relieve Fort Edward, 210; falls into an ambuscade and is slain, 210.
- Williams, Eunice, of Deerfield, killed by the Indians, iii. 213.
- Williams, John, of Deerfield, Mass., a captive among the Indians, iii. 213; piety of his wife, and her death, 213; his daughter remains among the Mohawks, 214.
- Williams, Jonathan, moderator of an immense meeting at the Old South Church in Boston, iv. 478.
- Williams, Otho Holland, lieutenant of a Maryland company in the army near Boston, viii. 64; at Fort Washington, ix. 190; is wounded 192; his thoughtless advice, x. 322; renders good service at Guilford court-house, 472, 473; his gallant conduct at Eutaw Springs, 493.
- Williams, Roger, arrives in Boston, i. 361; his earlier history, 361\*; goes to Plymouth, 362; settles at Salem, 369; complaints against him, 369; will hold no communion with the Church of England, 369; is for restraining the power of magistrates to civil affairs, 370; controversy on the subject, 370; the breach widened, 373; he appeals to the people against the magistrates, 374; asserts the doctrine of intellectual and religious freedom, 375; compared with Jeremy Taylor, 376; is banished the jurisdiction, 377; retires among the Indians, 378; the founder of Rhode Island, 380; his magnanimity, 381; persuades the Narragansetts not to unite with the Pequods, 398; goes to England, 425; obtains a charter for Rhode Island, 425; welcomed on his return, 426; again goes to England and procures a new charter, 427.
- Williams, William, of Lebanon in Connecticut, his patriotic words, vi. 166, 167.
- Williams of Hatfield, a mandamus councillor, is compelled to ask forgiveness, vii. 103, 111.
- Williamsburg in Virginia, gunpowder seized at, vii. 275; Dunmore threatens to lay it in ashes, 277.
- Williamson repels the Cherokees, and destroys their towns, ix. 162.
- Willing, Thomas, president of the convention of Pennsylvania, vii. 82; delegate to Congress, 333; thwarts every step tending to independence, 382; of Philadelphia, opposes the idea of independence, viii. 72, 315.
- Willoughby, Francis, deputy governor of Massachusetts, counsels resistance to the king's demands, ii. 88; dies, 92.
- Willoughby, Sir Hugh, attempts a north-east passage to China, i. 78; his whole company perish, 78.
- Will's Creek, now Cumberland, Md., iv. 76; road over the mountains here opened, 106; on Braddock's march, 185.
- Wilmington, in North Carolina, sends a handsome donation to Boston in 1774, vii. 73.
- Wilson, James, delegate from Pennsylvania to the continental congress, vii. 333; delegate in Congress, viii. 233, 315; is opposed to independence, 242, 320; his failure, 313; he favors opening the ports of the united colonies, 313; opposes a preamble involving independence, 369; opposes the Declaration of Independence, 390, 391; being now authorized by his constituents, he argues in favor of independence, 456; thinks slaves ought to be taxed, ix. 52; in debate, 53, 56.
- Wilson, John, first minister of Boston, i. 359; visits England, 361; visits Plymouth, 364; harangues the people from a tree on election day, 389; chaplain in the Pequod war, 401; his death, ii. 92.
- Wilson, Jonathan, captain of the Bedford minute-men at Concord, vii. 209; he is slain, 305.

- Windham, in Connecticut, sends provisions to Boston in 1774, vii. 73.
- Wingfield, Edward Maria, aids in the colonization of Virginia, i. 118; president of Virginia, 125; deposed, 127.
- Winnebagoes, iii. 243.
- Winslow, Edward, his account of the departure of the Pilgrims from Holland, i. 307; agent in England for Massachusetts, 442.
- Winslow, General John, of Marshfield, superintends the removal of the Acadians, iv. 202.
- Winslow, Josiah, his successful winter campaign against the Narragansetts, ii. 105.
- Winston Major, at King's Mountain, x. 337.
- Winthrop, Fitz-John, goes to England as agent of Connecticut, iii. 67; governor of that colony, 68.
- Winthrop, John, the elder, chosen governor of Massachusetts, i. 353; his character, 355; his self-denial, 358\*; visits Plymouth, 364; again chosen governor, 389; left out of office, 433; his impeachment, trial, and triumphant acquittal, 436; is weary of banishing heretics, 449.
- Winthrop, John, the younger, i. 395; his tolerant spirit, 449, 453; his exalted character, ii. 52-54; obtains a charter for Connecticut, 54; fourteen years her governor, 55; accompanies the English squadron to the conquest of New Netherland, 314.
- Wisconsin traversed by Jesuit missionaries, iii. 155, 157; visited by Hennepin, 166; and by Le Sueur, 294.
- Wise, John, minister of Ipswich, Mass., advises resistance to arbitrary taxation, ii. 427.
- Witchcraft, law against, in Massachusetts, i. 418; first and last trial for in Pennsylvania, ii. 391.
- Witchcraft delusion in Massachusetts, iii. 73; a belief in it general, 73; how to be accounted for, 73; the Goodwin children, 75; the devils well skilled in languages, 76; Cotton Mather's sermon, 77; its influence, 78; appears in Salem village, 84; the responsibility rests on a very few people, 88; advice of the ministers, 89; executions, 88, 90, *et seq.*; no mercy shown, 94; favor shown to friends and to accusers, 94; Cotton Mather's "Wonders of the Invisible World," 95; the minister and people of Andover remonstrate against the witch trials, 95, 96; acquittal of accused persons, 96; witchcraft in Boston, 97; Robert Calef, 97; the delusion over, 98; the common mind vindicated, 99.
- Witherspoon, John, of New Jersey, a staunch patriot, vii. 83; president of the college at Princeton, viii. 442; his great character, 442; member of the provincial congress of New Jersey, 442; as a member of the continental congress, argues for independence, 457; in Congress, ix. 52, 53; opposes the conference proposed by Lord Howe, 112; teaches Madison the great lesson of perfect liberty of conscience, 278; a member of Congress, proposes to vest in that body the power to regulate commerce, x. 419.
- Woburn, in that town Adams and Hancock take refuge, vii. 292; a Woburn man slain at Lexington, 294; men from Woburn join in pursuit of the British, 305.
- Wolcott, Oliver, in Congress, viii. 315.
- Wolfe, General James, sent to America as second in command to Amherst, ii. 294; his success at Louisburg, 295; appointed to command on the St. Lawrence, 316; ascends that river, 324, 325; amount of his force, 324; lands on the Isle of Orleans, 325; offers battle and is repulsed, 328, 329; his poor health, 330; his despondency, 331; lands on the north shore, 333; the battle on the Plains of Abraham, 335; death of Wolfe, 336.
- Woodford, William, colonel of a Virginia regiment at Hampton, viii. 221; he repels the enemy, 222; he routs the British at Great Bridge, 226, 227; commands a brigade at Germantown, ix. 427.
- Woodhull, Nathaniel, president of the New York convention, ix. 33, 34; is a brigadier-general on Long Island, 85; after being captured, is mercilessly slain by a Tory officer, 100.
- Wollaston, Mount, plantation at, i. 338, 341.
- Women sent from England to Virginia for wives as a commercial speculation, i. 157; the price paid in tobacco, 157.
- Woods, Major Henry, in Prescott's regiment, in the redoubt on Breed's Hill, vii. 423.
- Woolman, John, of New Jersey, iv. 142, 143; a Quaker, opposed to slavery, his great benevolence, 142, *et seq.*
- Woolwich, in Maine, its response to the Boston circular, vi. 439.
- Wooster, David, of Connecticut, elected brigadier-general, viii. 31; his character, 31; joins Montgomery at St. John's, Canada, 187; left by him in command at Montreal, 201; after the fall of Montgomery, he has chief command in Canada, 415; applies for re-enforcements and supplies, 416; he is re-enforced, 416; his character as commander, 419; brave, but not sufficiently prudent, 419; takes command of the troops around Quebec, 420; his batteries are light, and do no harm, 420; he is superseded in the command by Thomas, 423; his brave conduct at Ridgefield, Connecticut, ix. 347; is mortally wounded there, 347.
- Worcester County, in Massachusetts, has a county congress; it disclaims the jurisdiction of Parliament, vii. 109; the militia rise in a mass and march towards Boston, vii. 120; the court interrupted, 122; a committee of the county remonstrate with Gage, 154; its military organization, 137; Worcester men under Brown and Whitcomb fought on Bunker Hill, 418.
- Worcester in Massachusetts, the people prepare armed resistance to British troops if sent among them, vii. 103; a great meeting there, 104.
- Worthington of Springfield, resigns his commission as mandamus councillor, vii. 103, 111.



- Wright, Sir James, governor of Georgia, supports the views of the British ministry, vi. 68; infringes the privileges of the assembly, 409; is for conciliation, viii. 83; is made prisoner by the people, but escapes, 245, 246.
- "Writs of Assistance," their legality doubted, iv. 378; trial before Chief Justice Hutchinson, 414, *et seq.*; argument of James Otis against them, 415, 416; the effect, 417, 418; the beginning of the revolution, 414, 418; not warranted by law, vi. 72; opinion of the English attorney and solicitor-general of England to this effect, 72, *note*; they are legalized by act of Parliament, 84.
- Wesselinx, William, proposes a Dutch West India company, ii. 261; and a Swedish West India company, 284.
- Wurtemberg, Duke of, offers to furnish recruits for the British army, ix. 318; his inability to supply them, 318; the treaty fails, 475.
- Wyandots, or Huron Iroquois, where located, iii. 243, 244; visited by Gist, iv. 77; at Carlisle, 108; combine with other Indians to expel the English in Pontiac's war, v. 112, 116; attack Fort Pitt, 129.
- Wyatt, Sir Francis, governor of Virginia, i. 158, 178; retires from office, 195; reappointed governor, 202.
- Wyly, Samuel, cruel treatment of, x. 310.
- Wyllys, Samuel, of Connecticut, with others, plans the capture of Ticonderoga, vii. 338.
- Wyoming, Valley of, settled, v. 165, vi. 238, 506.
- Wythe, George, tries to moderate the patriotic zeal of Virginia, v. 276; delegate to Congress from Virginia, addresses the assembly of New Jersey, viii. 215; one of a committee on enlisting colored men, 233; in favor of independence, 242, 315; his excellent character, 314; an important resolution offered by him, 314, 319; the resolution carried, 320; assists in framing the constitution of Virginia, 436, ix. 59.
- Y.**
- Yamassee tribe of Indians, iii. 251; make war on the English settlements, 326; cruelties practised by them, 327; defeated and driven into Florida, 328, 422.
- Yarmouth, Lady, mistress of George II., iv. 98; the ministers dependent on her goodwill, 98, 246; Pitt waits on her, 247.
- Yeamans, Sir John, governor of North Carolina, ii. 137; a landgrave, 168; introduces negro slaves into South Carolina, 170; a sordid calculator, 184.
- Yeardley, Sir George, governor of Virginia, i. 153; his beneficent administration, 154; his second administration, 195; his death, 196.
- Yellow Creek, in Virginia, murders of Indians by whites committed there, vii. 165.
- York, in Maine, attacked by Indians, iii. 186.
- Yorke, Charles, on the side of prerogative, iv. 230, 373.
- Yorke, Charles, resigns office. v. 168; his equivocal position, 168; though a Whig, speaks against the claim of privilege, 169; desires office, but is slighted by Grenville, 171; his elaborate speech in favor of taxing America, 246; attorney-general under the Rockingham administration, 301; insists on the right to tax America, 365; refuses the position of lord-chancellor, vi. 324; dies by his own hand, 325.
- Yorke, Philip, iv. 33 (see *Hardwicke, Earl of*).
- Yorke, Sir Joseph, British minister at the Hague, viii. 26, 101; his opinion of Charles Lee, 26; thinks George III. may obtain troops from Germany, 148; ambassador of England at the Hague, ix. 292; his haughty, insulting language, 293, 296, *note*; is present at the embarkation of German troops for America, 317; his opinion of General Charles Lee, 331; British minister to the Dutch republic, x. 430, 431; his interview with the stadtholder, 435; leaves the Hague, 438.
- Yorktown, Virginia, description of, x. 511; occupied by Cornwallis, 511; its fortifications, 517; the place invested by the combined French and American army, 518; progress of the siege, 518, *et seq.*; the outworks taken, 519, 520; the surrender, 522; amount and quality of the force surrendered, 522; the American force employed in the siege, 523; the French force, 523; the news reaches England and France, 524; effect in each country, 524.
- Young, Thomas, at the meeting in the Old South Church, Boston, vi. 478; proposes to throw the tea overboard, 478; addresses the meeting, 485.
- Z.**
- Zealand unites with Holland in demanding freedom, ii. 258.
- Zenger, John Peter, prints a paper in defence of popular liberty, iii. 393; imprisoned, 393; acquitted, 393.
- Zinzendorf, Count, among the Indians, vii. 166.
- Zubly, delegate in Congress from Georgia, denounces a republic, viii. 141; flees to the royal standard, 141.























